KASHMĪR UNDER THE SULTĀNS

BY

MOHIBBUL HASAN

Reader in History, Aligarh Muslim University;
Formerly Lecturer in Islamic History and
Culture, University of Calcutta.

IRAN SOCIETY
159-b, Dharamtala Street
CALCUTTA
1959
Copyright Reserved by the Author
TO

THE MEMORY OF MY FATHER
Adequate attention has been paid by scholars to ancient and early medieval Kashmir. But the period from the fourteenth century onwards has not yet been the subject of any comprehensive study. The contributions of Newall, Kaul, and Kāk are very sketchy, and are based on slender evidence. The chapter on Kashmir in the Cambridge History of India has more detail, but is based mainly on the Mughal sources, and concentrates only on political events. A more recent work is Šūfī's Kashīr, a history of Kashmir from the ancient times to the present day. The scope of his work is so wide that it was not possible for him to utilise all original authorities. The few chapters that he has devoted to Kashmir under the Sultans are brief, uncritical, and lacking in historical perspective.

In the present study I have attempted to reconstruct the history of Kashmir from the foundation of the Sultanate till its conquest by Akbar. I have described not only the political events, but also the administrative institutions, the social and economic life, and the cultural activities of the period. I have based the account on the original sources; but unfortunately, in the case of Kashmir of this period, shrewd observers like Abū'l-Fażl, Ibn Batṭūta, and Hiuen Tsiang are sadly wanting; and consequently there is a great paucity of details concerning the administrative system and the social and economic conditions. The extant Kashmir chronicles are not only unconcerned with social and economic problems, they sometimes even ignore important political happenings. Such of the Šūfī works as exist are largely naive tales of miracles performed by the saint and his disciples; and it is with difficulty that one can pick out from them some telling fact relevant to historical investigation.

It remains for me to express my gratitude to Mr. M. K. Kidwāi, formerly Chief Secretary to the Jammu and Kashmir Government, who not only provided me with research facilities, but also played host to me during my visit to Kashmir in 1952. I am also greatly obliged to Mr. Asadu'llāh Kāzmī, formerly Director of Research and Publication,
Jammu and Kashmir Government, and to Professor Hasan Shāh of Srinagar for their constant and helpful interest in this work.

I am under deep obligation to various scholars who assisted me in a number of ways: to Dr. B. C. Sen and Dr. K. M. Ashraf for reading the manuscript and giving valuable suggestions; to Dr. A. B. M. Ḥabibullāh for directing my attention to the need for a monograph on this period and for offering useful advice; to Dr. P. B. Chakravartī for translating the Sanskrit chronicles of Jonarāja, Srīvara, Prājyabhaṭṭa, and Śuka into English for me; to Dr. Munību’r-Rahmān who, in spite of his manifold activities, undertook the painful task of reading my proofs; to Dr. Maqbul Ahmad for drawing my attention to the Arab geographical works which contain brief references to Kashmir; to Father V. Courtois for placing the valuable Gottwald Collection, St. Xavier’s College, Calcutta, at my disposal; to Professors A. Rashid and Nūru’l-Hasan for obtaining for my use photostat copies of manuscripts from England; to Dr. Ṭāhir Rizvī for his help in the preparation of the maps; to Mr. Arshad ‘Alī Bēg for assisting me in the compilation of the Index; and to Mr. Robert Vincent for seeing the book through the press.

I should also like to thank Messrs. B. S. Kesavan and Y. M. Mulay of the National Library, Calcutta; P. C. Bose of the Calcutta University Library; S. Chaudhri of the Asiatic Society Library, Calcutta; S. Bāshīru’d-Dīn and Muṣaffar ‘Alī of the Lytton Library, Aligarh Muslim University; and John Irwin of the Victoria and Albert Museum, London, for their unfailing help and kindness. Finally, I am much indebted to the Council of the Iran Society and its Secretary, Dr. M. Ishāque, for undertaking the publication of this work; and to the authorities of the University of Calcutta for a generous grant which enabled me to obtain photostat copies of manuscripts from libraries abroad, and to visit Kashmir in order to collect materials for this work.
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Chapter</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Preface</td>
<td>vii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abbreviations Used in Citing References to Sources</td>
<td>xi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Note on Transliteration</td>
<td>xiii</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I. Sources</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II. The Geography of Kashmir</td>
<td>17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III. The Foundation of the Sultanate</td>
<td>27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IV. Sultan Shamsu’d-Dîn and his Successors</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V. Zainu’l-‘Abidîn the Great</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VI. Dynastic Troubles and Rebellions</td>
<td>96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VII. Mirzâ Ḥaidar Dughlat and his Conquest of Kashmir</td>
<td>125</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>VIII. End of the Shâh Mîr Dynasty and the Chak Ascendancy</td>
<td>145</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>IX. Yûsuf Shâh and Akbar</td>
<td>162</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X. Fall of the Sultanate</td>
<td>182</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XI. The Administrative System</td>
<td>194</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XII. Social and Economic Conditions</td>
<td>218</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIII. Cultural Activities</td>
<td>253</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>XIV. Conclusion</td>
<td>273</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Appendixes</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A. The Nürbakhshiya Sect of Kashmir</td>
<td>283</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B. Currency, Coinage, Weights and Measures</td>
<td>289</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C. The Chronology and Genealogy of the Sultanâns of Kashmir</td>
<td>295</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D. Bibliography</td>
<td>301</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Index</td>
<td>313</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Illustration Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Coloured Tiles from the Tomb of Madanī. Srī Partāp Museum, Srinagar. Photograph by the Curator of the Museum</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā, Srinagar. Photograph by Dr. V. S. Naravani, Allahabad University</td>
<td>facing page 64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jāmi‘ Masjid, Srinagar. Photograph by Information Department, Srinagar</td>
<td>facing page 64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inscription (dated 847 A.H.) on a stone slab to commemorate the founding of Zainalank. Photograph by the Directorate of Records, Srinagar</td>
<td>facing page 94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Horseman in low relief. Photograph by the University Museum, Philadelphia, U.S.A.</td>
<td>facing page 266</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Section of the doorway of Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā. Photograph by Dr. V. S. Naravani, Allahabad University</td>
<td>facing page 268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Section of the ceiling of Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā, Photograph by Dr. V. S. Naravani, Allahabad University</td>
<td>facing page 268</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tomb of Zainu'l-ʿAbidin’s mother. Photograph by Information Department, Srinagar</td>
<td>facing page 270</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gate of the Mosque of Madanī. Photograph by Information Department, Srinagar</td>
<td>facing page 270</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

## MAPS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Map Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Showing principal places mentioned in the text</td>
<td>facing page 192</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Kingdom of the Sultāns of Kashmir</td>
<td>facing page 276</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
ABBREVIATIONS USED IN CITING REFERENCES
TO SOURCES

A.A. : Abū'ī Fazl, Ā'īn-i-Akbarī.
A.N. : —— Akbar-nāma.
B.S. : Bahāristān-i-Shāhī Author not known. Quoted from the
     India Office and British Museum MSS.
Briggs : Briggs, J., History of the rise of the Mahomedan power in
     India, till the year 1612.
B.M. : British Museum.
Elliot : Elliot & Dawson, History of India as told by its own
     Historians.
Firishta : Firishta, Ta'rikh-i-Firishta.
Hasan : Ḥasan b. ‘Alī, Ta’rikh-i-Hasan
I.A. : Indian Antiquary.
I.O. : India Office.
J.I.H. : Journal of Indian History.
Jonar : Jonarāja, Rājatarangini, tr. by J. C. Dutt into English as
     Kings of Kashmīra. Also quoted from the Calcutta and Bombay
     editions of the Sanskrit texts.
Munich MS. : Ta'rikh-i-Kashmīr. Author not Known. K. Hof-Und
     Staatsbibliothek, Muenchen.
M.T. : Badā‘ūnī, Muntakhabu’t-Tawārīkh.
Nasīb : Baba Nasīb, Taṣkira-i-Mashā‘ikh-i-Kashmīr.
Prāj. : Prājyabhaṭṭa, Rājavali-patākā, tr. by J. C. Dutt into English
     as Kings of Kashmīra. Also quoted from the Calcutta and
     Bombay editions of the Sanskrit texts.
R.P.D.: Research and Publication Department Library, Srinagar.
S.A.: Sayyid 'Alī, Ta'īkh-i-Kashmir.
Śriv.: Śrīvāra, Jaina Rājataraṅgiṇī, tr. by J. C. Dutt into English as Kings of Kashmir. Also quoted from the Calcutta and Bombay editions of the Sanskrit texts.
Śuka: Śuka, Rājataraṅgiṇī, tr. by J. C. Dutt into English as Kings of Kashmir. Also quoted from the Calcutta and Bombay editions of the Sanskrit texts.
Stein: Kalhana, Rājataraṅgiṇī, tr. by M. A. Stein.
T.A.: Niẓāmu’d-Dīn, Tabaqāt-i-Akbarī.
T.R.: Mīrzā Ḥaidar, Ta’īkh-i-Rashīdī, tr. by Ross and Elias. Also quoted from the A.S.B. manuscript.

1 For details see the chapter on Sources and Appendix D containing the Bibliography.
NOTE ON TRANSLITERATION

The system of transliteration followed is, with slight modifications, that adopted by the Royal Asiatic Society.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Arabic letter</th>
<th>Latin equivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ت</td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>س</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>چ</td>
<td>ch as in church</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ح</td>
<td>h</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>خ</td>
<td>kh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>د</td>
<td>z</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ز</td>
<td>z</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ش</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ص</td>
<td>sh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ض</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ط</td>
<td>z</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ظ</td>
<td>t</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ع</td>
<td>gh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>خ</td>
<td>h where h in a final position represents the ‘silent h’, it is not transliterated, and the preceding vowel is written a.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Names of places are transliterated in their Persian form. Muslims bearing Hindu names are generally transliterated in the same manner. But т in Бат should be pronounced as in the English word talk.
Coloured Tiles from the Tomb of Madanî
Dated 848|1444. Sri Partāp Museum, Srinagar.

Frontispiece
CHAPTER 1

SOURCES

BEFORE attempting a survey of the extant sources for the Sultanate period of Kashmir history, it is necessary to mention those contemporary authorities which have perished, for they were utilised by the later writers. The early Shāh Mīr period appears to have been devoid of all historical writings; and it was only from the reign of Sultan Zainu'l-Ābidīn, which was characterised by great literary and artistic activity, that chronicles both in Sanskrit and in Persian began to be composed. Thus, Notthosoma Pandit described the life and achievements of Zainu'l-Ābidīn in Kashmirī and called his work Jainacarita, and Bodhabhāṭṭa wrote a play in Kashmirī on the same theme. Similarly Mullā Ṭḥām and Mullā Nādirī, the Sultan's court poets, completed their histories of Kashmir in Persian. But unfortunately none of these chronicles is extant. Nor is there any trace of the histories composed by Qāzī Ibrāhīm in the second reign of Sultan Fath Shāh and by Mullā Ḥasan Qārī in the time of the Chaks. However, these accounts and those by Mullā Ṭḥām and Nādirī were utilised extensively by Ḥaidar Malik, Ḥasan b. ‘Alī, Muḥammad A'ẓam and other chroniclers.

We may divide the extant sources into five classes:—

(1) Contemporary Sanskrit. These consist of the four chronicles of Jonaraja, Śrīvara, Prājjyabhaṭṭa and Śuka and another work

1. Śrīv., Bk. i, chap. v, Nos. 37 sq.; Munich, f. 72b.
2. These works have been referred to in all the Persian histories of Kashmir. T.H., i, f. 152a, also refers to other works like the Ta'rikh-i-Qāzī Hamīd and Muntakhabu't-Tawārikh by Ḥasan Bēg.
3. Qārī's chronicle is no longer extant. Crawford, Bibliotheca Lindesiana, wrongly considers MS. No. 518 to be Qārī's work. Actually it is A'ẓam's Waqīyat-i-Kashmir, and Qārī's name has been mentioned in the MS. (f. 4b) only as an authority. Storey, on the other hand, makes the mistake of regarding it as Ḥasan b. ‘Alī's chronicle.
commonly known as Kṣemendra’s *Lokaprakāśa*. (2) Contemporary Persian. These may be further sub-divided into (a) Kashmir Chronicles (b) General Histories of India (c) Mughal Histories (d) Central Asian Histories (e) Histories of the Delhi Sultanate (f) Biographies of Saints. (3) Later Persian Works (4) Kashmirī Literature and Folklore (5) European Accounts (6) Archaeological Evidence.

1. CONTEMPORARY SANSKRIT AUTHORITIES

Kalhana in his *Rājatarāṅgini* described the history of Kashmir from the earliest times to 1149-50. Jonarāja, two hundred years after him, continued the narrative down to the reign of Zainu’l-Ībīdīn and called it, like Kalhana, *Rājatarāṅgini*. He was a scholar of Sanskrit and was attached to the court of Zainu’l-Ībīdīn, but he wrote his work under the orders of Śīryabhaṭṭa, the superintendent of the courts of justice. He was, according to Stein, a man of “considerable attainments though apparently without much originality.”

Jonarāja’s *Rājatarāṅgini* is the earliest extant and most important source for the history of Kashmir from 1150 to about 1459. It gives a brief but useful account of the social and political condition of Kashmir from 1150 to the accession of Shāh Mīr, and thus helps us to understand the circumstances which led to the establishment of the Sultanate. It describes the reigns of the early Sultāns in a rather sketchy manner, passing over some of the important events like Riṅchana’s conversion to Islam and the arrival of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī in Kashmir. However, the period from 1389 to 1459, during most of which the author himself lived, is treated in some detail. But being a courtier of Sultān Zainu’l-Ībīdīn, Jonarāja is inclined to exaggerate the virtues of his master and gloss over his failings. For the same reason he is prejudiced in favour of Sikandar, the Sultān’s father, and places all the blame for the misfortunes of the latter’s reign upon his minister Sūhabhaṭṭa, whose faults he greatly magnifies. His topography is on the whole reliable. He also records the dates of the accession and death of each ruler correctly though he rarely mentions the dates of important events within each reign, a defect that is common to all the chronicles of Kashmir.

1 Jonar. (Bo. ed.), No. 11. 2. Stein, ii, 373.
Jonarāja died in 1459; but after him his pupil Śrīvara continued the narrative from where he had left off, and called it Jaina-Rājatarangini. Śrīvara was, like Jonarāja, attached to the court of Zainu’l-ʿAbidīn, and after the latter’s death served Ḥasan Shāh and Muḥammad Shāh. Besides being the author of this chronicle, he translated Yūsuf u Zulaikhā from Persian into Sanskrit and named it Kathā-Kautaka. In addition to being a scholar, a poet and a historian, he was also a musician, and was in charge of a section of the music department in the reign of Ḥasan Shāh.

Śrīvara’s Rājatarangini gives a detailed account of the remaining years of Zainu’l-ʿAbidīn’s reign from 1459 to 1470 and of the reigns of his successors till the accession of Fath Shāh in 1486. His work is, however, inferior to that of Jonarāja; and, as Stein observes, he “is a slavish imitator of Kalhana, not above reproducing whole verses from his predecessor. His text looks, in great portion, more like a cento from the Rājatarangini, than an original composition.” At the same time, since he wrote his chronicle partly, as he himself says, “to free myself from my endless obligations to him (Zainu’l-ʿAbidīn), and partly because I am attracted by his merits,” he is, like Jonarāja, inclined to exalt the virtues of Zainu’l-ʿAbidīn and minimize his failings. But in spite of these defects, his work is very valuable, for it is the only contemporary source for the period it covers, and has, therefore, been drawn upon liberally by the later Persian chroniclers.

After the death of Śrīvara, Prājyabhaṭṭa composed his Rājavalipatākā, describing the history of the period from 1486 to 1512. This work is much inferior to Śrīvara’s. Its topography is very defective, and the chronology is incomplete. The history of the twenty-six years is described only in sixty-four ślokas and in a confused manner. The important events connected with the struggle for the throne between Muḥammad Shāh and Fath Shāh are left out.

The last chronicle was written by Śuka Pandit, a pupil of Prājyabhaṭṭa, who named his work Rājatarangini after that of Kalhana, and dealt with the period from 1517 to 1596. His work is not as useful as those of Jonarāja and Śrīvara. His topography is incorrect;

1. 1.Shīfī, Kashīr, i, 167.
2. Śrīv., p. 231.
4. Śrīv., p. 99.
he supplies few dates, and the sequence of events is sometimes wrongly
given. The second invasion and conquest of Kashmir by Mirzā ʿHaidar
are barely mentioned. The struggle for power between ʿIdī Raina and
Daulat Chak is not referred to, while the history of the Chaks and the
Mughal conquest of Kashmir is described very briefly.

The Lokaprakāśa seems to have been written by a number of
persons including Kṣemendra (d. 1066), who wrote only a portion of it.1
The mention of Shāh Jahān in Book ii suggests that some parts were
written as late as the seventeenth century.2 It has been suggested by
Buhler that it is a Kośa;3 but actually it is a kind of a note-book in
which all kinds of things have been collected together.4 The work
appears to be both a Kośa and a practical handbook dealing with the
various aspects of life and administration in Kashmir.5 The language
of the book is corrupt; its Sanskrit being mixed up with Persian and
Kashmirī words.

The Lokaprakāśa consists of four parts. In the first part the author
gives the names of the four principal castes along with those of sixty
sub-castes, and the titles of government officers and ministers.6 The
second part, which contains bills of exchange, bonds, commercial con-
tracts, official orders and so forth, is the biggest and most important of
all.7 It has, however, no connection with Kṣemendra, and appears to
have been written in the time of the Sultāns and in the seventeenth
century. The third part does not deal with any single subject as is the case
with the first and second parts, but consists of a hotchpotch of things. It
gives a list of synonyms of different varieties of fishes, birds and mice,
and of salt, gold ornaments and gold coins. It also contains verses from
the Mahābhārata and satires on prostitutes and monks.8 The fourth
part begins with a satire on the Kāyasthas, that is writers and physicians,
and on Brahmans who had become Muslims. It also gives a list of
the districts of Kashmir.9

Thus the Lokaprakāśa contains useful material for the study of the
social life and administration of Kashmir. Its only drawback is that
it is difficult to know exactly when the different sections were written.

1. Indische Studien, xviii, 298, 300. 2. Ibid., 337, 341.
3. Ibid., 292. 4. Ibid., 292-3. 5. Stein, ii, 376.
6. Indische Studien, xviii, 302 sqq. 7. Ibid., 342 sqq.
8. Ibid., 348 sqq. 9. Ibid., 369 sqq.
Professor A. Weber has published the extracts of the work in *Indische Studien*, XVIII, pp. 289-412, and it is this that I have utilised.

2. CONTEMPORARY PERSIAN AUTHORITIES

(a) Kashmir Chronicles

With the exception of Sayyid 'Ali's *Ta'rīkh-i Kashmir*, which was written in the reign of Yūsuf Shāh, all the extant Persian chronicles of Kashmir were composed after the Mughal conquest of the country. In spite of this they are very important and must be regarded as original sources, because their authors had passed their childhood and youth in the times of the later Shāh Mīrs and the Chaks, and wrote either from personal observation or utilised the accounts of earlier authorities which are not known to exist.

The *Ta'rīkh-i-Kashmir* by Sayyid 'Ali is a history of Kashmir to the time of Yūsuf Shāh. The author was a Baihaqī Sayyid, and was related to the Shāh Mīr family through his mother who was the sister of Sultān Nāzuk Shāh. His father's name was Sayyid Muḥammad, who served Mīrzā Ḥaidar in his wars in Kashmir. Sayyid 'Ali also appears to have been in the service of Mīrzā Ḥaidar, and took part in the last campaign which led to the latter's death.

The manuscripts of Sayyid 'Ali's *Ta'rīkh* are very rare, but I have utilized the copy which has recently been acquired by the Research and Publication Department, Srinagar. Unhappily, however, the manuscript is defective at the beginning, and so it is difficult to say from which period the work began with the history of Kashmir. The existing manuscript abruptly commences with the arrival in Srinagar in the reign of Shihābu'd-Dīn of Sayyid Tāju'd-Dīn, who was sent by Sayyid 'Ali Hamadānī to find out if the conditions were favourable for him to visit Kashmir. It then gives the most fantastic account of the exploits of Sayyid Ḥasan, the son of Sayyid Tāju'd-Dīn, who had entered the service of Shihābu'd-Dīn. He is said to have conquered not only Delhi, Āgra,

---

1. *Sūfî*, i, p. xi, says that the work was written in Muḥammad Shāh's first reign, but this is incorrect, for it gives the names of Muḥammad Shāh's successors and of all the Chak rulers up to Yūsuf Shāh. The MS. does not bear any date of its composition, but from the absence of the names of Sayyid Mubārak and Lohar Shāh it appears that it was completed early in 1579 during Yūsuf Shāh's first reign, which lasted for about two months.
and Lahore, but also Persia, Badakhshān, Kābul, and many other places outside India. The work next describes the part played by Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī and his son Sayyid Muḥammad in spreading Islam in the Valley, and their relations with Qutbu’d-Dīn and Sikandar respectively. It also throws light on the policy of Sikandar towards his non-Muslim subjects, but it does not refer to the political events of his reign. However, the history of Zainu’l-‘Abidīn and Hasan Shāh is described in some detail, although Ḥādīr Shāh’s reign and the civil war between Muḥammad Shāh and Faṭḥ Shāh is dismissed only in a few lines. But perhaps the most valuable portion of the book is that which deals with Mīrzā Ḥādīr’s career in Kashmīr, for the author relates the events on the basis of personal observation. As regards the Chak period, with the exception of the controversy over the execution of Yūsuf ʿAindar which is briefly given, it is practically passed over. The remaining part, covering over one-third of the book, contains biographical sketches of the Sūfīs and Rishīs who flourished during the Sultanate period. The work is thus valuable for the religious history of the period. For the political history it is important because it is the earliest Persian chronicle of Kashmīr known to exist, and is based on Qāẓī Ibrāhīm’s Ta’rikh-i-Kashmīr and other works which are lost. But its chief merit is due to the fact that it contains an eye-witness account of Mīrzā Ḥādīr’s rule in Kashmīr and the manner of his death. The work is not of much value from the point of view of chronology and topography.

The Ta’rikh-i-Kashmīr by an anonymous writer is a history of Kashmīr from the earliest times to the reign of Shamsu’d-Dīn II. Based on the Sanskrit chronicles and earlier Persian accounts, it is one of the earliest extant histories of Kashmīr in Persian, being written in 1590 and not in 1629 as mentioned in the catalogue by Aumer. The work does not give any chronology except for the reigns of Muḥammad Shāh and Faṭḥ Shāh, and for Mīrzā Ḥādīr’s first invasion of Kashmīr. It also does not mention the arrival of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī in the Valley, although it was such an important event in the country’s social and religious history. Moreover, the account of the period following Ḥādīr Shāh’s death is very confused and unreliable. Nevertheless, the work is a useful source, for it describes those events in detail which have been omitted by the Bahāristān-i Shāhī, Ḥādīr Malik’s Ta’rikh, and other Persian chronicles. I have consulted the MS. belonging to the
K. Hof—und Staatsbibliothek in Muenchen. No other copy of the work, so far as I know, is extant.

The Bahāristān-i-Shāhī by an unknown writer is really a history of Kashmir from the accession of Rińchana to 1614, the pre-Islamic period being dismissed only in a few pages. Nothing is known of the author except that he was a Shi'ite, and was probably in the service of the Baihaqi Sayyids for he describes their careers in greater detail than other chroniclers do, and is almost fulsome in his adulation of their piety, courage, and generosity. The sources for his history are the Sanskrit chronicles of Jonaraja and Śrīvara as well as the Persian accounts of Mullā Ahmed, Mullā Nādirī, Qāżī Ibrāhīm, and Hasan Qārī. For the later Shāh Mīr and the Chak periods he wrote from personal experience or on the basis of information he gathered from the older people.

The Bahāristān-i-Shāhī is written in an ornate and verbose style. It gives occasionally the Laukika dates along with the Hijra dates. The history of the Shāh Mīrs up to the reign of Hasan Shāh is briefly narrated, and important events like the revolt in Lohara against Qutbu'd-Din, the Regency of Queen Sūra and the civil war during the reign of Zainu'l-Ābidin are omitted. Sultan Haidar Shāh is dismissed in a few lines, while there is no mention of the political events of Hasan Shāh's reign. The period from Muḥammad Shāh onwards is, however, treated in detail. The history of the Mughal conquest of Kashmir is also exhaustively given, and is a useful supplement to and check upon the Mughal accounts. Moreover, this is the only work which relates in detail the life of Yūsuf Shāh and Ya'qūb Shāh in exile and the manner of their death. Thus, in spite of its defects, the Bahāristān-i-Shāhī is a very important source.

The Ta'rikh-i-Kashmir by Hasan b. 'Alī Kashmirī is a short history of Kashmir from the earliest times to 1616, written at the request of Jalālu'd-Din Malik Muḥammad Nāji, who was anxious to preserve a record of the achievements of his ancestors. Hasan b. 'Alī's sources are the same as those of the author of the Bahāristān. His account also suffers from the same limitations as does the Bahāristān. In addition he omits altogether the history of the later Shāh Mīrs and the Chaks.

1. He is evidently Haidar Malik's grandfather. In Haidar Malik's chronicle he is styled as Kamālu'd-Dīn. But in the present work (f. 3a) he is called Jalālu'd-Dīn. This is probably due to a mistake of the copyist.
and makes only a casual reference to Ya'qūb Shāh's submission to Akbar. He, however, gives a detailed history of the Sultanate period up to the end of Ḥasan Shāh's reign; and it is for this period that his history is valuable.

The most well-known Persian history of Kashmir is that of Ḥaider Malik, the son of Ḥasan Malik of Chādura, which was the family's hereditary seat. He descended from Rāmacandra, the commander-in-chief of Sūhadeva, and his family played an important part during the Sultanate period. He himself served Yūsuf Khān Chak, the son of Ḥusain Shāh, for twenty-four years, and accompanied him in his exile to India after the Mughal conquest of Kashmir. He fought side by side with Yūsuf Khān, who was employed by Akbar to crush the refractory chiefs. When Jahāngīr became emperor he granted Yūsuf Khān a jāgīr in Bengal and sent him with Quṭbu'd-Dīn to suppress Shēr Afgan. After the latter was killed, Ḥaider Malik gave protection in his own house to Shēr Afgan's wife Miḥru'n-Nisā', the future Nūr Jahān. When Yūsuf Khān died Ḥaider Malik entered the service of Jahāngīr, who conferred upon him the titles of Chaghatāy and Ra'īsū'l-Mulk.

Ḥaider Malik began writing his Ta'rikh-i-Kashmīr in 1618 and completed it in 1030/1620-21. A study of this work, of the Bahārīstān-i-Shāhī, and of Hasan b. 'Alī's chronicle shows that their authors obtained information from the same sources. But in addition, Ḥaider Malik records many of the old traditions preserved in his own family. So far as the Chak period is concerned Ḥaider Malik was himself a witness to many events, being a young man at the time, though he does not mention the part he played in them. He writes in a simple lucid style; his topography is correct, though his chronology is not reliable. Just as the author of the Bahārīstān exalts the achievements of the Baihaqi Sayyids, so does Ḥaider Malik eulogise the wisdom and courage of his grandfather, Malik Muhammad Nājī. He was a Shi'ite, but he writes dispassionately and freely criticises Ya'qūb Shāh for his intolerant policy towards the Sunnis. His account of the reign of the Chak Sultāns, particularly of their attempts to repel the Mughal invasion, is detailed and valuable. Unfortunately he does not describe the life of Yūsuf Shāh and Ya'qūb Shāh in captivity or of their last days.

Of the three manuscripts of Ḥaider Malik's Ta'rikh that I have consulted, the India Office copy gives the most detailed account of the
Shāh Mīr and Chak dynasties. The copy in the Research and Publication Department, Srinagar, is only an abridgement, while the copy in the Bibliotheque Nationale, Paris, is an abridged redaction, and sometimes differs in chronology and factual details from the other manuscripts.

(b) General Histories of India

The Ṭabaqāt-i-Akbari by Nizāmu’Dīn1 contains a section dealing with the history of Kashmir from the earliest times to its conquest by Akbar. Nizāmu’Dīn based his account on two sources: The Ta’rikh-i-Rashidi by Mīrzā Ḥaidar and the Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir. But who is the author of the latter work, he does not say. Moreover, since his account of Kashmir forms part of his general history of the provinces of the Mughal Empire, it is not detailed. His chronology is also defective and it is not always possible to identify the names of persons and places mentioned in his work.

The Ta’rikh-i-Firishta by MuḥammadQSīm Hindu Shāh Astrābdī known as Firishta also contains a chapter on Kashmir. But it mostly follows the Ṭabaqāt-i-Akbari, and has little new information to offer. The description of the agriculture, religion and buildings of Kashmir is based on the Ta’rikh-i-Rashidi.

The Muntakhabu’t-Tawārikh by ‘Abdu’l-Qādir Badā’unī does not deal separately with Kashmir, but refers to it in connection with the account of Akbar’s reign. The work furnishes useful information about Akbar’s relations with the Chak rulers. There are also occasional references to eminent saints and literary figures of Kashmir.

The Ma’āṣir-i-Rahimī by Khwāja ‘Abdu’l-Baqī Nihāwandī completed in 1616 is a life of ‘Abdu’r-Raḥīm Khān-i-Khānān, but it also

1. BainiPrasad says in his translation of T.A., iii, p. XXX, that the Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir which Nizāmu’Dīn consulted was the Persian translation of the Rājatarangini. But this is only half the truth. Nizāmu’Dīn must have also consulted, in addition, the Persian chronicles, for his chronology and some of his details do not agree with the Sanskrit chronicles. Moreover, for the period of the later Shāh Mīrs and the Chaks some Persian chronicle was necessary, because Śuka wrote in 1596, and the author of T.A. could not have utilised his work. From a close study of both T.A. and the Munich MS., it appears that Nizāmu’Dīn drew extensively from the later chronicle.
contains a section on the history of Kashmir. It is, however, based on the Tabaqat-i-Akbari and does not add to our knowledge.

The Majalisu'l-Salatin by Muḥammad Sharīf an-Najafi completed in 1628-29 is a brief history of India. A portion of the work gives a detailed account of Riṃchana's conversion to Islām. I have consulted Br. Mus Add. 30,779 which is an English translation of the extracts relating to Kashmīr.

The Haft Iqlim by Amīn Aḥmad Rāżī is a geographical encyclopaedia completed in 1594. It gives a brief account of Mīrzā Ḥaidar's conquest of Kashmīr, and makes short notices of some Kashmīri poets, saints and rulers. There is also a reference to the shawl industry of the Valley.

(c) Mughal Histories

The Akbar-nāma by Abū'l-Fażl makes a brief but useful reference to Mīrzā Ḥaidar's rule in Kashmīr. He, however, describes in detail the invasions of Kashmīr by Abū'l-Ma'ālī and Qarā Bahādur, the relations of the Mughals with the Chaks, and the final conquest of the Valley by Akbar. His chronology and topography are correct, and, barring a few lapses, his account is generally truthful. His A'in-i-Akbari is an important authority because of the light it throws on the topography of the Valley and the life of the inhabitants.

The Tuzuk-i-Jahāngīrī by the emperor Jahāngīr contains useful references to the history, habits and customs of the people of Kashmīr.

(d) Central Asian Histories

The Žafar-nāma by Sharafu'd-Dīn 'Alī Yazdī is a history of Timūr and Khalīl Sulṭān completed in 1424-25. It throws light on Šikandar's relations with Timūr when the latter invaded India. It also gives a brief description of the geography and people of Kashmīr. Similarly in the Malfuzāt-i-Timūrī, which is said to have been written by Timūr himself, there are references to his relations with Sulṭān Šikandar and to the topography of the Valley.

The Tarīkh-i-Rashdī by Mīrzā Ḥaidar Dughlat, a cousin of Bābur from his mother's side, is a history of the Mongol rulers of Mughal-ištān and Kashgar, completed in 1546. Mīrzā Ḥaidar twice invaded Kashmīr: once from Kāshgar in the early part of 1533, and again
from Lahore in November 1540 when he conquered the Valley and ruled for ten years. He describes his first invasion in detail, but the account of the second invasion and of his administration of Kashmir is very meagre. He, however, gives an interesting picture of the buildings, agriculture, religion and arts and crafts of Kashmir as he found them. It was unfortunate that his life was cut short by the rebellion of the Kashmiri nobles, otherwise he might have left us a more valuable account of Kashmir.

(c) Histories of the Delhi Sultanate

Although Kashmir had cultural, commercial and political relations with India during medieval times, yet the chronicles of the Delhi Sultanate very rarely make any reference to them. The Ta’rikh-i-Mubārak Shāhī by Yahyā b. Ahmad b. ‘Abdu’llah Shirhindī only mentions the conflict between ‘Ali Shāh of Kashmir and Jasrat Khokar. Ta’rikh-i-Dā‘ūdī and Ta’rikh-i-Khān-i-Jahānī describe A‘zam Humāyūn’s relations with Mīrzā Ḥaidar and the Kashmir nobles at the time of his revolt against Islām Shāh. But they wrongly state that A‘zam Humāyūn was killed in an engagement with the Kashmirī forces while Mīrzā Ḥaidar was still alive. Moreover, they do not throw any light on the relations between the Kashmirī nobles and Shēr Shāh.

(f) Biographies of Saints

The Khulāṣatu’l-Manāqib1 is a life of Sayyid ‘Alī Ḥamadānī by Nūru’d-Dīn Ja’far Badakhshī, one of his disciples. But the work does not refer to any of the activities of the Sayyid in Kashmir. The MS. of the work I have consulted was originally in the Berlin Library, but since the last World War it has been in the Tubingen University Library, the Librarian of which very kindly sent me a photostat copy. Another work by Ja’far Badakhshī, which contains a life of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī, is Manqabatu’l-Jawāhir written in about 1378.

Tuhfatu’l-Aḥhāb, written about the middle of the fifteenth century, is a life of Mīr Shamsu’d-Dīn who introduced the Nurbakhshīya teachings into Kashmir. The author’s name is not known but his father was an

---

1. There are other works besides which throw light on ‘Alī Hamadānī's life. Some of them have been discussed in this chapter, while others have been mentioned in the Bibliography. For more details see Yaghmā, lv, No. 8, pp. 337 sqq; and Journal Asiatique, cexl, pp. 313 sqq.
important disciple of Shamsu’d-Dīn and he himself was a fanatical Nūrbakhshiya. He was a child when Shamsu’d-Dīn arrived in the Valley, but he grew up in close association with him. He gives a detailed account of how Shamsu’d-Dīn came to the Valley, the obstacles he encountered in propagating his faith, and the success that attended him in Kashmir and Baltistan. However, in his zeal to represent the saint as the champion of Islām he is in the habit of indulging in imaginary accounts of his iconoclastic activities. Nevertheless, his work is valuable because it contains the history of Islām’s progress in Kashmir, brief notices of Kashmir’s political history, and of the social life and beliefs of its inhabitants. The copy of the MS. I have consulted is in the private collection of Āghā Sayyid Muḥammad Yūsuf, the Shī‘ite Mujtahid of Kashmir, who is a descendant of Mīr Shamsu’d-Dīn. He very kindly placed the work at my disposal during my visit to Kashmir in the summer of 1952. I was told by the Āghā Sāheb that there is another copy of the MS. in the possession of his relations who are at Skardu.

The *Hilyatu’l-‘Arīfin* is a biography of Shaikh Ḥamza Makhdūm by Khwāja Ishāq Qāri, his disciple. Although the work is mostly concerned with the miracles performed by the Shaikh, it throws some light on the social conditions in the Valley. The *Taẓkiratu’l-‘Arīfin* by Mullā ‘Alī Raina completed in 1587 is another biography of Shaikh Ḥamza which is useful for the study of the social and religious life of the period.

The *Majālisu’l-Mūminīn* by Sayyid Nūru’llāh Shushtarī, which contains biographical notes on eminent Shi‘ites, gives a short account of the lives of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī and Muḥammad Nūrbakhsh, and briefly mentions how the teachings of the latter were introduced into Kashmir and Baltistan.

3. LATER PERSIAN WORKS

(a) *Kashmir Chronicles*

The *Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir* by Nārāyan Kaul ʿĀjiz, a Kashmirī Brahman, is a history of Kashmir from the earliest times to 1710, the year it was completed. As it is only an abridgement of Ḥaidar Malik’s chronicle, it does not contain any new information.
The *Nawādiru’l-Akhbār* by Abā Raffī’u’d-Dīn Aḥmad is a history of Kashmir completed at Shāhjahānābād in 1723. The author’s ancestors came from Balkh but he was himself a Kashmirī by birth. His work deals with the Hindu period very briefly, but describes the history of the Sultāns in detail. It closely agrees with the *Bahāristān-i-Shāhī* and Ḥaidar Malik’s history, but supplies additional information regarding the improvements effected by Mīrzā Ḥaidar in Kashmir, and also contains more details, though not always correct, regarding the attitude of the Sultāns towards the non-Muslims. Its chronology is however incorrect; it confuses Yūsuf Shāh Chak with Yūsuf Khān, the son of Ḥusain Shāh, and its account of the life of Yūsuf Shāh and Ya’qūb Shāh, whom it always calls Ya’qūb Khān, is not reliable. The importance of the work is that it preserves the Sunni traditions of the Valley, though it makes the mistake of over-estimating the influence of the religious factor in the civil wars.

The *Wāqi’āt-i-Kashmīr* by Muḥammad A’ẓam was completed in 1747. It is an abridgement of the earlier works. But in addition to the political history it contains a useful account of the saints and scholars who flourished in Kashmir during the Sultanate period.

The *Gauhar-i-‘Alam* by Badi’u’d-Dīn Abū’l-Qāsim is a history of Kashmir from the earliest times to 1786. The author claims to have consulted the *Nūr-nāma* and the accounts by Ḥasan Qārī and Muḥammad A’ẓam. But he does not bring to light any new facts. His style is cumbersome and ornate, and he occasionally makes statements which are not supported by any authority.

The *Hashmat-i-Kashmīr* by ‘Abdu’l-Qādir Khān completed at Banaras in 1850 is a history of Kashmir based mainly on the *Gauhar-i-‘Alam*. It also contains brief notices on Tibet, Badakhshān, and the neighbouring countries. Besides the *Hashmat-i-Kashmīr* there were many other works written in the nineteenth century. But with the exception of the *Ta’rikh-i-Ḥasan* by Pīr Ḥasan Shāh (d. 1898) none of them is important, all being abridgements of Ḥaidar Malik’s history. The *Ta’rikh-i-Ḥasan* consists of four parts. The first deals with the

---

1. Storey, *Bibliographical Survey of Persian Literature*, section ii, Fasc. 3, pp. 684-7, gives the names of many such works. But all of them are mere summaries of Ḥaidar Malik’s *Ta’rikh*. 
geography of Kashmir, its Muslim monuments, its castes, tribes and religious sects. The second describes the history of Kashmir from the earliest times to the author's own days. The Hindu period is based upon Kalhana's *Rajatarangini*; the section on the Sultans has been drawn mainly from the *Bahāristān-i-Shahī*, though works of Ḥaidar Malik, Nizāmu'd-Dīn, Abū'l-Faḍl and others have been consulted. The third part contains the biographies of saints based on *Tazkiras* and local traditions. The last part is chiefly concerned with Persian poetry as it flourished under the Sultans and the Mughal Emperors. All the volumes are useful, and are written in a clear, simple, lucid style.

(b) **Mughal and Provincial Histories**

Among the later Mughal histories none is important for our study except the *Ma'āṣiru'l-Umarā* by Ṣamṣāmu'd-Daula, which contains brief notices of the invasions of Kashmir by Mīrzā Ḥaidar and Abū’l-Ma'ālī, and of its final conquest by Akbar. Of the provincial histories mention may be made only of three; The *Aḥwāl-i-Kishtwār* written in 1882-83; the *Ta'rikh-i-Rājgān-i-Jammu* or *Rājdarshānī* composed in 1847; and *Ta'rikh-i-Rājgān-i-Rajaurī* published in 1907. All these works make occasional references to the Valley; but since most of their accounts are legendary, they are not of much historical importance. It is strange that although Jammu, Kishtwar and Rajauri were for long periods subject to the authority of the Sultāns of Kashmir, these chronicles completely ignore this fact.

(c) **Biographies of Saints**

The *Tāzkira-i-Mashā'īkh-i-Kashmir* by Bābā Naṣīb relates the part played by Nūru'd-Dīn Rishī and his disciples in spreading Islām in the Valley, and gives interesting accounts of religious discussions between the Brahman priests and Muslim saints. Another work known as the *Majmu‘a dar Ansāb Mashā'īkh-i-Kashmir* gives a short account of how Islām spread in the Valley from the time of Rīchana to that of Mūsā Raina, with useful sidelights on the political events of this period. The *Futūḥat-i-Kubraviya* written by 'Abdu'l-Wahhāb in 1749 describes the progress of Islām in Kashmir from the time of Rīchana to that of Akbar. In addition it contains a brief history of the Sultāns of Kashmir and short sketches of the lives of Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī, his son
Muḥammad Hamadānī, and other saints of the Valley. Other Tazkiras which contain occasional historical notes and references to social life are the Asrāru’l-Abrār by Dā‘ūd Mishkātī written 1653; the Khawāriq’ul-Sālikīn known as Ta’rikh-i-Hādi written in 1697-98; Nūr-nāma, a life of Nūru’d-Dīn Rishi by Bābā Nasību’d-Dīn Ghāzī composed in 1630-31; and the Ta’rikh-i-Kabīr by Mu’inu’d-Dīn Miskīn published in 1904.

4. KASHMIRI LITERATURE AND FOLKLORE

Medieval Kashmir was rich in Kashmirī poetic literature, but unfortunately only a small portion of it has come down to us. The songs of Lallā Ded have been collected and translated by Barnett and Grierson; a few mystical verses of Nūru’d-Dīn Rishi and the lyrics of Habba Khātūn have been edited by J. L. Kaul. They throw some light on the social and cultural life of medieval Kashmir. The folklores and traditions of the Valley collected by Lawrence, Knowles, Grierson and many European travellers also give us a glimpse of the manners and customs of the inhabitans.

5. EUROPEAN ACCOUNTS

No European ever visited Kashmir during the time of the Shāh Mīr and Chak rulers. The first Europeans to set foot on Kashmir soil were Father Jerome Xavier and Benedict de Goes who arrived in the company of Akbar in 1597. They have left an account of their impressions which, though useful, are very sketchy. The description of Kashmir by Francisco Pelsaert is also very brief. But Bernier, who visited the Valley with Aurangzēb, relates in detail the social and economic life of the people. The description of Father Desideri is useful as it furnishes information about the trade of Kashmir, while the account of Father Fryre is important for the light it throws on the social life of the people. The accounts of European travellers, who visited Kashmir in the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, are valuable because they contain earlier traditions of the country, and help us in identifying some of the old localities which have either disappeared or changed their names.

6. ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCE

The archaeological evidence for this period is very scanty. The coins which have been found furnish us only with the names and titles
of the Sulṭāns, but they are not of much chronological importance. On the other hand, the architectural remains are too few; most of the palaces, mosques, and khānqāhs erected by the Sulṭāns having been destroyed in the course of civil wars and foreign invasions. With the exception of the Mazār-i-Salāṭīn and the tomb and mosque of Madani, which are in a very bad state of preservation, the other monuments that we see today have either been rebuilt or renovated in later times. The few inscriptions that have been discovered do not substantially add to our historical knowledge.
CHAPTER II

THE GEOGRAPHY OF KASHMĪR

The influence of geography on the social and political history of Kashmir has been very profound. The rivers and springs, soil and climate of the Valley have all played an important part in shaping the character and life of its people throughout the centuries. But none of the natural features have exerted a more direct influence on the history of the country than the great mountain ramparts that encircle it. It is to these mountains that the Valley owes its rivers and its streams, its rains and the fertility of its soil, and even its floods and famines. It is also to them that it owed not only immunity from foreign invasions for long periods, but also “a historical existence of marked individuality.”

Extent and Boundary

Kashmir is situated in the Western Himalayas at an average height of 6,000 ft. above the sea. It resembles a great irregular oval consisting of a similarly shaped level vale in the centre with a ring of mountains around it. The flat part of the country measures about eighty-four miles in length from the south-west to north-east, while its width varies from twenty to twenty-five miles. Its area has been estimated at 1,800 or 1,900 sq. miles. It is surrounded by an unbroken ring of high mountains, and, reckoned from the summit lines of these ranges, the length of the irregular oval enclosed by them is 116 miles, with a width varying from forty-five to seventy-five miles. The whole area within the mountains has been estimated at about 3,900 sq. miles.

The mountains surrounding Kashmir consist of three main ranges. The most important of these is the Pīr Panjāl Range which, with a width of fifty to sixty miles, forms the southern and south-western boundary of the Valley. It begins from the southernmost part of the country where the Bānihāl Pass, 9,200 ft. above the sea, marks the lowest depression in the chain of mountains. After running for about thirty

2. Ibid., Intro., i, 30.
miles from east to west, the range turns to the north-northwest. In this direction it continues for about fifty miles more, and, after attaining its greatest elevation in the Tatakūṭī Peak (15,524 ft.) it gradually descends towards the Jehlam Valley.

The boundary of the Valley in the north-east is formed by the main Central Himālayan range, which separates the Jehlam and the Indus drainage. The eastern boundary is formed by a high spur of this range which branches at about ten miles east-south-west from the Zōji-Lā Pass. and runs due south, its peaks maintaining an elevation of from 12,000 to 14,000 ft. It thus forms the watershed between the Jehlam and the Chīnāb, and separates Kashmir from the Maru-Wardwan Valley. The range then turns to the north-west, and joins the Pīr Panjāl Range at the Bānihāl Pass.

The mountains which enclose the Kashmir Valley in the north and north-west, may be looked upon as one great range. A few miles west of the spot from which the eastern boundary spur branches near the Zōji-Lā, another minor range branches off. This runs due west for about 100 miles at an elevation of from 1,200 to 1,300 ft. with a breadth varying from twelve to twenty-four miles, and forms the northern boundary of the Valley, separating the Jehlam on the south from its important tributary, the Kishangangā on the north. After reaching 75° 15' E, the ridge gradually curves round to the south until it joins the Kājnāg Peak, north-west of Bārāmūla¹, thus forming the north-western boundary of the Valley. The mountain-ring, which surrounds the Valley, has only one gap. This is the narrow gorge at Bārāmūla through which the Jehlam escapes to the plains of the Punjāb, and thence to the sea.

The natural boundaries of the Valley agree closely with its frontiers. But to have a more precise idea about the extent of the country, it will be useful if we take a brief notice of the territories that surround it.

To the south-east lies the Valley of Kishtwār on the upper Chīnāb. Its rulers had matrimonial relations with the Sultāns of Kashmīr, and were usually subject to them. Lower down on the Chīnāb is the district of Bhadravāh. South of the Pīr Panjāl Range there were small hill-states, which were inhabited by the "unruly Khaşas" and were

1. It is a town situated on the Jehlam in Lat. 34° 13', Long 84° 23', 34 miles west of Srinagar.
tributary to Kashmir. To the south-west was the important hill-state of Rajaurī, comprising the valleys drained by the Tohī and its tributaries. On the north-west of Rajaurī lay the kingdom of Pūnch, and to the north-west of Pūnch was the Jehlam Valley. This was held in olden times as an outlying frontier district of Kashmir, as far as Bulaśa. Further to the west lay the district of Pākhī.\(^1\) To the north-west of the Kashmir Valley was situated the tract known as Karṅāv. Its inhabitants were Khaśas, and their chiefs acknowledged the suzerainty of strong Kashmir rulers. To the north lies the valley of Kishangangā inhabited by the Dard tribes.\(^2\) To the east lies Baltistān and Ladākh inhabited by the people of Tibetan race. Further south along the range on the east of the Valley is situated a long narrow valley known as Maru-Wardwan.

**Topography**

The Kashmir Valley is divided into two parts. One comprises the plain formed by the alluvium of the Jehlam and its main tributaries; the other consists of the plateaus or karēwas elevated above the plain.

The Jehlam, which forms the main arterial drainage system for the Valley’s lakes and rivers and of the inner slopes of the mountains, is first formed by the meeting of several streams like the Sāndran, the Bring, the Ārapath and the Lidar which drain the south-eastern portion of the Valley. This meeting takes place in the plain close to Anantnāg.\(^3\) At Khanabal\(^4\) the Jehlam becomes navigable and continues so up to Bārāmūla, a distance of 102 miles, thus forming the most important highway of Kashmir. At Khanabal also begins the great plain which stretches on both sides of the river as far as Bārāmūla. In its winding course the Jehlam receives many streams. But just before reaching Srinagar, it is formed by a stream which drains the lake called Dal to

---

1. This comprised the whole of the hill territory between Kashmir in the east and the Indus in the west, including the lower valley of the Kishangangā and the valleys of the streams which flow into the latter. (See for more details, Stein, ii, 434).

2. The Dard tribes inhabit the territories of Chitrāl, Yasīn, Gilgit, Chilās, Bunjī, and the Kishangangā Valley. (See for more details, Stein, i, Intro., p. 91; Drew, *Jummo and Kashmir*, pp. 7, 422sq.

3. It is the second largest town in the Valley situated in Lat. 33° 44', Long 75° 12'. It is also called Islamabād.

4. It is near Anantnāg and is its port on the Jehlam.
the east of the city. The surplus waters of the lake flow out towards the Jehlam by a canal which is now called Chūnh Kul but which in ancient times bore the name of Mahāsarit.1

A'large stream called Dūdgangā, made up by the waters of several streams that drain the south-western mountains, joins the Jehlam on the left bank at the city of Srīnagar. Immediately below Srīnagar, we come to the marshes which stretch along both sides of the river for a considerable distance. The marshes to the north of the river are more extensive and belong to the delta of the Sind river, the greatest tributary of the Jehlam within the Valley, which originates near the Zōji-Lā and Amburnāth Peak. It has a course of over sixty miles and drains the mountain range in the north. The Valley of the Sind, called after its name, forms the district of Lār, one of the main sub-divisions of the Valley in the north. The Sind river joins the Jehlam near the village of Shādipūr.2 The Jehlam continues on in a north-westerly direction until it joins the Volur lake. It then flows out from the lake at the south-west corner. It receives many streams in its course up to Bārāmūla, but the chief one among them being the Pohur stream which drains the Lōlāb Valley, and enters the main river at Dubgām, about four miles below the town of Sōpūr.3 The river goes on winding through a flat country like that above Srīnagar until it reaches Bārāmūla, where the gorge begins. After this there is no further possibility of navigation. In its course from Khanabal to the Volur lake the fall of the river is 165 ft., in the first thirty miles, and 55 ft. in the next twenty-four miles. But from the Volur to Bārāmūla the fall is very slight.

In ordinary times the Jehlam flows gently between its high banks, but in times of flood, it not only overflows its natural banks, it even overtops the artificial embankments constructed on either side of the river. As a result crops are damaged, houses are destroyed, and lives are lost. The loss caused by the floods is always considerable below

1. Stein, ii, 416.
2. It is situated in Lat. 34° 11', Long. 74° 43'. It is a contraction of the original name of Shihābu'd-Dīnpūr given to it by Sultan Shihābu'd-Dīn who founded the town. (See Munich MS., f. 56b; and Stein, ii, 329 n. 1.).
3. It is a town on both sides of the Jehlam situated in Lat. 34° 17', Long. 74° 31'. Its ancient name was Suyyapura and was founded by Avantivarman's minister Suyya. (Stein, v, No. 118n.).
Srinagar as the fall of the country is slight, and the flood water remains on the land rotting the crops. But above Srinagar, owing to the slope of the country, the flood water escapes quickly, and so the crops are often not damaged.

Kashmir abounds in lovely lakes and springs. Of the latter the Volur and the Dal are the most important. The Volur is the largest fresh water lake in India, being about twelve and a half miles by five in extent. It is fed by several streams, while from the south the Jehlam seeks a passage through it. Its shores are ill-defined, and it consists of miles of marshlands with reeds growing, and when the floods come its water spreads over many miles of the country. The boatmen of Kashmir look upon it with apprehension even in normal times, for the quiet surface of the lake changes into a sea of rolling waves, most dangerous to the flat-bottomed crafts of the country. However, it performs a very useful service by retaining the valuable loamy rich deposits of the Jehlam which, otherwise, would escape to the Punjāb.

The Dal lake, measuring about four miles by two and a half, lies close to Srinagar in the east. Its water which is clear and soft as silk is said to be specially suited to the fabrics of the pashmina, and at the same time renders the colours fast whilst bringing out their brightness.¹ The Dal is also like the Volur rich in natural products. Kashmir possesses many other lakes too, like the Mansabal and the Anchar Dal, but they do not possess the same importance as the Volur and the Dal.

The springs in Kashmir are as useful for irrigation as the mountain streams and rivers. One of the springs, the Maliknāg, is sulphurous, and its water is highly prized for garden cultivation; while the Kokarnāg is given the first place as a source of drinking water. The town of Anantnāg possesses a large number of springs which send out numerous streams. Perhaps the most beautiful of all the springs is the Achabal which gushes out of the Sosanwar hill. Vērnāg on the way to Jammu is another spring of great importance. People in Kashmir regard the springs as sacred, because their water is cold in summer and warm in winter.

Besides the central plain surrounded by the mountains, there are also many side valleys which are drained by the tributaries of the Jehlam, and which add much ground to the total cultivated area of the

¹ Pearce Gervis, This is Kashmir, p. 138.
country. The slope of the mountains where cultivation is not possible are rich in forests, and above this are rich alpine pastures. These side valleys have been the sites of important battles in medieval times.

The second division of the Valley consists of high ground called udar in Kashmiri, and karēwa and uddara in the Persian and Sanskrit chronicles respectively\(^1\). The karēwas are considered by the geologists to be due to alluvial deposits, and they occur either isolated, or are connected by slopes with the mountains that surround the Valley. They rise generally from 100 to 300 ft. above the level of the Valley. Most of them are found on the south-western side, stretching from Shupiyan\(^2\) to Bārāmūla. Beyond Sōpur again the north-western end of the Valley is mostly karēwa ground. The karēwas also occur in the north-east and south-east side of the country. Those karēwas which are attached to the mountains are cultivated with the help of the water-courses brought from the higher ground, but owing to the inferiority of the soil they are much less fertile than the plain. Those however which are isolated, are either entire wastes, covered with low jungle, or, if cultivated, yield only poor crops because of the uncertainty of rainfall and the difficulty of irrigation. Some of these karēwas, owing to their elevation and commanding position, have been the sites of severe fighting in the past.

**Passes**

The mountain walls which surround the Valley, are pierced by a number of openings through which it maintains contact with the outside world. Here mention will be made only of those passes which had commercial or strategic importance in the past. The routes towards the Punjāb which crossed the Pīr Panjāl barrier have exercised great influence on the history of Kashmir. The route leading over the Zōjī-Lā in the east has also always been an important thoroughfare, connecting Kashmir with Ladākh and thence with Tibet, Turkistān, and China. But the routes leading over the mountains in the north and north-west have not been of much significance for the history of the country.

The Bānīhāl Pass (9,200 ft.) is situated at the eastern extremity of

2 A town on the south-west side of the Valley situated in Lat. 33° 44'. Long. 74° 53', 29 miles from Srinagar.
the Pīr Panjāl Range. Owing to its small elevation it has always been a convenient route of communication with the upper Chināb valley and the eastern Punjāb hill-states. This pass is the only route across the Pīr Panjāl Range on which communication is never completely stopped by snow-fall. It is by this route that the State of Jammu was, as it is today, connected with Kashmir1. It is closed for horses and vehicles from the end of December onwards for two months. The distance between Jammu and Srīnagar is reckoned at 177 miles2.

Sidau or Būdīl Pass (14,000 ft.) connects Srīnagar with Akhnūr and Siālkōt in an almost straight line. Owing to its high ridges it can be used only for foot-traffic, but owing to its shortness it was formerly a favourite route with the Kashmirīs. The name Sidau is given to the pass from the first village reached by it on the Kashmir side. Śrīvara refers to it as Siddhādeśa, an adaptation of Kalhaṇa’s Siddhāpatha3. By this route Jammu is only 129 miles from Srīnagar4.

From the point close to the west of the pass of Sidau where the main range changes its direction towards north-north-west, there branches off in a westerly direction the lower Ratan Range. Beyond this lie the passes of Rūpri and Darhāl (13,000 ft.). They give most direct access to Rajaurī, and are crossed without much trouble during the summer months. In the past, therefore, they must have been used very frequently.

The Pīr Panjāl Pass5 (11,400 ft.) gives access to the valleys of the two Tohīs of Rajaurī and Pūnch, from which direct routes of communication led to the central and western Punjāb. Hirapūr6 was the entrance station for those reaching Kashmir from Rajaurī and the neighbouring places, and a point of departure for those leaving Kashmir for Rajaurī. The starting point from the Punjāb

1. It is by this route that Ya’qūb Sarfī and other Kashmirīs proceeded to the court of Akbar to seek his help against Ya’qūb Shāh (F.K., ff. 211a-b.).
4. Srīv, p. 251, calls it Dānchhāladeva. It corresponds to Pīr Panjāl; Pīr being the nearest Muslim equivalent for Deva. (See Stein, ii, 397-8).
5. It is a village 7 miles south-west of Shupiyan, situated in Lat. 33° 41' Long. 74° 46'. It is called Shūrapura by Śrīvara.
side was Bhimbhar. This route played an important part in the time of the Sulṭāns. Influenced by the consideration of its natural advantages, Akbar also, after the conquest of the Valley, chose it for the construction of his Imperial Road which was to connect Lahore with Kashmir. The route was open for seven months in the year.

The old Imperial Road, constructed by the Mughals across the Pīr Panjāl Pass, on ascending the narrow valley kept on its left side high above the Pīr Panjāl stream. But from a point close to the ‘Ālīābād Sarāi, a high mountain ridge slopes down from the south and falls off towards the valley in a wall of precipitous cliff. This ridge is known as Hastivanj. Before the construction of the Imperial Road, the old route to the pass crossed the Hastivanj route and followed throughout the right bank of the Pīr Panjāl stream. This route was used for the march of troops before the construction of the Pīr Panjāl route. It was by this route that Qāsim Khān, Akbar’s commander, entered Kashmir.

The route via the Tūshamaidān Pass was very important owing to its natural advantages. It was the shortest route leading into the valley of Pūnch, and hence to that portion of the western Punjāb which lies between the Jehlam and the Indus. This route was followed by Huen Tsiang on his way to Pūnch, and by Maḥmūd of Ghaznī when he attempted an invasion of Kashmir. It remained a popular trade route until the construction of the Jehlam Valley cart-road. However, owing to the elevation of the pass, this route was always closed by snow longer than the Pīr Panjāl route. During the winter months, therefore, the road from Pūnch to Kashmir lay by the lower passes in the west, leading into the Valley below Bārāmūla.

The Jehlam Valley beyond Bārāmūla is confined between two ranges of mountains. The one to the south is a branch of the Pīr Panjāl Range; the range to the north belongs to a mountain system which culminates in the Kājnāg Peak (14,400 ft.). These two ranges accompany the course of the river for eighty miles westwards to Muẓaffarābād. Owing to the confined nature of this defile, and steep

1. It is a small town in Lat. 32° 58’ Long. 74° 8’. It is 150 miles from Srinagar by the Pīr Panjāl route.
and rugged cross ridges the use of the route was difficult; and so its military and commercial importance was in the past less than that of Pır Panjál or Tōshamaidān routes. It is only from the time of the Afghān occupation of Kashmir that this western route attained real prominence. The route was important as leading to the Hazāra district and the North-West Frontier Province, which are now in West Pakistan. It is continued towards Kashmir on the right bank of the Jehlam, the crossing of the latter being entirely avoided. Since this route does not pass through much high ground, it is the only one that is almost free from snow in winter, and was, until the Partition, the easiest route from the Punjāb to Kashmir. It was also convenient for those who wished to proceed towards Attock and Peshāwar from Kashmir. It must have also been used for Kashmir's trade with Persia and western Turkistān. Hiuen Tsiang and Ou-K'ong entered Kashmir from the west by this route, and it is by this route that many learned scholars and Sūfīs from Persia and Turkistān came to the Valley.

It must be remembered that there was no line of communication along the left side of the Jehlam Valley corresponding to the present Murree-Bārāmūla road. But for two marches down the valley, as far as Uri, a convenient route leads over the easy Ḥāji Pır Pass (8,500 ft.) to Pūnc. It is never closed by snow owing to its small elevation. It was hence much used during winter months when the more direct routes to Kashmir via the Pır Panjál, the Tōshamaidān, and other passes were rendered impassable.

The Marbal Pass (11,570 ft.) connects Kashmir with Kistwār. After crossing the pass, the Wardwan and Chināb rivers are crossed by rope bridges. The route is closed in winter.¹

The Zōji-Lā Pass (11,300 ft.) has always been an important thoroughfare. It connects Kashmir with Ladākh and thence with Tibet and China. From Ladākh also routes led to Baltistān and, across the Karakoram Mountains, to Chinese Turkistān.² It was through the Zōji-Lā Pass that Riṇchana entered Kashmir, and Mīrza Ḥaidar Dughlat first invaded the country. It was also through this pass that Kashmir maintained commercial and cultural relations with China and Turkistān.

2. See for these routes Chapter XII under the section of Trade.
The mountains which enclose the Kashmir Valley in the north-west and north, have a number of passes connecting it with the Kishangangā Valley, which was at times subject to the authority of Kashmir rulers. But the routes leading over these passes were not as important as those already described. The route, however, which leads from the Kashmir Valley into that part of the upper Kishangangā Valley known as Gurēz and is connected with those leading to Astōr and Baltistān, is an important one. The road made in recent years is called the “Gilgit Transport Road”, and crosses the range by the Trāgabal or the Rāzdiangan Pass, nearly 12,000 ft. high. But the route frequented in ancient times lay some eight miles further to the east. This was via Dudakhut Pass. An easy track over the ridge leads down to Gurēz. This route, being direct and comparatively easy during the summer, was much frequented by the Dard traders until the construction of the Gilgit Road. From Gurēz the route leads across the Kamrī Pass (13,000 ft.) to Astōr and Gilgit.1 At Burzil, the last halting place on this side of the watershed, two roads part: one leads north-eastwards across the Deosai Plateau to Skārdū;2 the other goes north to Astōr. Following the latter, the Dorikun Pass (13,000 ft.) is crossed, and then the Indus basin is reached. The next spur that has to be crossed is known as Hatū Pīr, and then Gilgit is reached. The road to Skārdū has to cross difficult passes, the highest of them being the Burjī Pass, 15,700 ft. high.

1. From Gilgit routes lead to Transoxiana. See Chapter XII
2. This is the most frequented route between Kashmir and Skārdū. The distance is 158 miles. The other route by Drās to Skārdū is 242 miles. Up to Tashgām the route to Leh and Skārdū is common. (Drew, Jummoo and Kashmir, 377, 531).
CHAPTER III

THE FOUNDATION OF THE SULTANATE

DURING the eighth century Kashmir was several times subjected to the attacks of the Arabs. Two centuries later, Maḥmud of Ghaznī twice led his armies for its conquest. But although both the Arab and Turkish invasions ended in failure, it will be useful to take a brief notice of them, for it is to these that Kashmir owed its earliest contact with political Islam.

The Arab Invasions

The conquest of Kābul and Turkistān by Qutaiba b. Muslim during the caliphate of Walīd, brought the Arabs to the borders of the kingdom of Kashmir. But within six years from the death of Qutaiba much of his work was undone. However, under the Caliph Hishām (724-43), Naṣr b. Sayyār, the first Arab governor of Transoxiana, not only reconquered most of the territories overrun earlier by Qutaiba, but even reached as far as Kāshgar. Under the early ‘Abbāsids these conquests were further extended and consolidated. In 751 the Arabs gained a victory over the Chinese and compelled them to abandon Gilgit as well as their other possessions in the extreme west. The kingdom of Kābul over which the hold of the Umayyads had been precarious was reduced while Ma’mūn ar-Rashīd was governor of Khurāsān, and its ruler accepted Islām. Later, when Ma’mūn became Caliph (813-33), he entered into relations with the rulers of Tibet and its neighbours. The news of these Arab advances must have been a source of anxiety to the kings of Kashmir, although there is no evidence to suggest that the Arabs ever contemplated the invasion of the Valley from the north, either from Kābul or Kāshgar. The real threat to the Valley came from the Arabs who had established themselves in Sindh.

5. Ibid., 197.
Muḥammad Qāsim occupied Sindh and the lower Punjāb between the years 711 and 713. He then marched from Multān and carried his arms to the borders of the kingdom of Kashmir.1 Threatened by the Arab advance, Rājā Candrāpiḍā of Kashmir sent an envoy to the Chinese emperor asking for help against the Arabs.2 However, no aid was received; but fortunately Muḥammad b. Qāsim was recalled by the Caliph Sulaimān to Damascus, and so the Arab danger was for the time being removed. In the reign of the Caliph Hishām (724-43) the Arabs of Sindh under their energetic and ambitious governor Junaid again threatened Kashmir. But Lalitāditya (724-60), who was the ruler of Kashmir at this time, defeated him and overran his kingdom.3 His victory was, however, not decisive for the Arab aggression did not cease. That is why the Kashmirī ruler, pressed by them from the south and by the Turkish tribes and the Tibetans from the north, had to invoke the help of the Chinese emperor and to place himself under his protection.4 But, although he did not receive any aid, he was able to stem the tide of Arab advance by his own efforts.5

When Hishām b. Amr at-Taghlībī was appointed governor of Sindh by the Caliph Manṣūr (754-75), he also attempted an invasion of the Valley, and reached as far as the southern slopes of the Himalayas, which were subject to Kashmir. He, however, failed to enter the Valley, and occupy it as has been claimed by the Arab historians.6 This was the last attempt of the Arabs to invade Kashmir; and when again a Muslim invasion of the Valley took place it was undertaken not by an Arab chief but by a Turkish Sultan.

Maḥmūd of Ghaznī’s Invasions

In 1002 Maḥmūd of Ghaznī routed the forces of Jaipāl, Raja of Waḥand, who, affected by the humiliation of defeat, burnt himself to death. Jaipāl’s son and successor Anandpāl also suffered a crushing defeat at the hands of Maḥmūd (1009), and died after a few years. Anandpāl’s son Trilocanpāl, whose power was now confined only to

1. Elliot, i, 436; Chōh-nāma, 192. 2. Majumdar, The Classical Age, 134, 174. 3. Ibid. 4. Ibid.; Reinaud, Mémoire sur l’Inde, 90. 5. Majumdar, The Classical Age, 173-4. 6. Balāzuri, Futūḥu’l-Buldān, p. 431; Mas’ūdī, Murūjū’z-Zuhab, (Trans. de Meynard), 1, 373, says that Kashmir was part of the country of Sindh. See also Elliot, i, 444.
the Salt Range, appealed to Sāṅgrāmarāja (1003-28), the king of Kashmir, for help against Māhmūd. Sāṅgrāmarāja sent a large army under his commander-in-chief Tuṅga. Māhmūd met the forces of Trilocanpāl, supported by the Kashmir contingent, in one of the valleys which leads towards Kashmir from the neighbourhood of Jehlam. Tuṅga, having won a victory over a reconnaissance party of the Sultān, began to think too lightly of the invader. The result was that when Māhmūd personally advanced to attack the enemy, Tuṅga, in spite of the advice of Trilocanpāl to take shelter behind a rock, advanced to face him. But Māhmūd put him to flight. Trilocanpāl tried to retrieve the situation, but he too was defeated (1014).

Provoked by Sāṅgrāmarāja’s conduct, Māhmūd decided to invade Kashmir and punish him. He marched to Jehlam and then, proceeding along the valley of the river Tohi, tried to enter Kashmir by the Tōshamaidan Pass. But his further progress was checked by the strong fort of Loharkōt which guarded the pass. Māhmūd besieged the fort for a month, but without any success; and owing to heavy snowfall, which cut off his communications, he was compelled to raise the siege. While retreating he lost his way. Many of his troops perished, and he himself escaped with difficulty. This was his first serious reverse in India.

In Sept.-Oct., 1021, Māhmūd again set out from Ghazni to invade Kashmir in order to retrieve his prestige. He followed the same route as before, but once again the fort of Loharkōt stopped his advance. He besieged it for a month, but failed to reduce it. Meanwhile as severe winter had set in, he was compelled to withdraw. After these two failures Māhmūd abandoned the idea of invading Kashmir again.

1. It is a town situated on the west bank of the river Jehlam, 100 miles to the north-west of Lahore.
2. Nāzīm, Sultan Māhmūd of Ghazna, 92-3; Stein, i, BK. vii, Nos. 47-62 and n.
3. Loharakotī or Lōhkōt or the Castle of Lohara lay in the valley now called Loharin belonging to the territory of Pūnch. It was situated in Lat. 33° 48’ Long. 74° 23’. An isolated ridge in Loharin towards the right bank of the river Loharin just above the village of Gīgivand was the site of the fort. (See for more details Stein, ii, 293-300). Persian chronicles of Kashmir call it Loharkōt.
5. Ibid., 105.
When two centuries later the storm of Turkish invasion again burst on the plains of Hindustān, it did not affect Kashmir, for Shihābu’ddin Ghūrī, and after him the Turkish Sultāns of Delhi, remained pre-occupied with the extension and consolidation of their territories in Hindustān. Even when, by the end of the thirteenth century, they had succeeded in subduing the whole of Northern India, they did not undertake the hazardous adventure of invading Kashmir, but directed their arms to the conquest of the Deccan and South India which was easier to achieve. And when in the second quarter of the fourteenth century Muslim rule came to be established in the Valley, it was not the result of foreign invasion but was due to internal conditions obtaining there.

Decline of Hindu Rule

Signs of internal decay began to manifest themselves with the establishment of the Lohara dynasty in 1003. Henceforth the Hindu rule in Kashmir started on its downward course until it met its overthrow in about 1320 under Sūhadeva. The kings who, during this period, occupied the throne were for the most part weak and worthless, and allowed themselves to be dominated by low favourites and corrupt ministers. The people were subjected to the hated corvée, and to all kinds of oppressive taxes in addition to the illegal exactions of the officials. The Dāmaras or feudal chiefs grew powerful, defied royal authority, and by their constant revolts plunged the country into confusion. Life and property were not safe, agriculture declined, and there were periods when trade came to a standstill. Socially and morally too the court and the country had sunk to the depths of degradations.¹

Saṅgrāmarāja (1003-28), the first ruler of the Lohara dynasty, neglected the administration and allowed his greedy officers and vile favourites to plunder the people.² On his death his son Harirāja ascended the throne, but he died after a reign of twenty-two days. Ananta (1028-63), Saṅgrāmarāja’s younger son, then became king. His expensive habits involved him in heavy debt, so that he had to pawn even the royal diadem and throne to a foreign trader³. Luckily, however,

1. In BK. vii and viii Kalhana gives numerous instances of the deterioration of morals in the Valley.
2. Stein, i, Bk. vii Nos. 107-19. 3. Ibid., No. 195.
at this time his queen, Sûryamatî, intervened and took charge of the affairs. She paid off the debts from her own savings, and secured the services of able ministers who governed the country well. But during the reign of Kalaśa (1063-89) the Valley was once again plunged into chaos. He neglected public business and lived in the society of immoral and vicious courtiers who completely dominated him. He became so depraved as to violate his own daughter.

The next ruler Harśa (1089-1101) was in many ways a remarkable man. He was handsome, courageous and of a powerful frame. He loved music, and patronised art and learning. In the beginning he ruled wisely and made his subjects happy, but later his character degenerated under the influence of his evil counsellors, and he became cruel, licentious and perverse. His sensualities led him to commit acts of incest. His foreign campaigns were nowhere successful. Inside the Valley the pretenders and feudal chiefs were a constant source of trouble; and although he suppressed them with revolting cruelties, they again raised their heads. His reckless expenditure on troops and costly pleasures involved him in financial difficulties. To meet the crisis he began looting the wealth of the temples and exploiting his subjects by imposing upon them new and oppressive taxes. He even went to the extent of taxing the night soil. The result of his misgovernment and tyranny was that the nobles rose against him, and put him to a miserable death.

The Second Lohara Dynasty

Uccala (1101-11) was generous, capable and energetic. But "with robbers as ministers and feudatories, a brother ready to become a pretender, a land without treasure," he found it impossible to establish law and order in the country. Sussala (1112-28) ruled for sixteen years with a brief interval of one year when Bhikṣâcara, Harśa's grandson, occupied the throne. Sussala oppressed his subjects to fill the treasury, and failed to subdue the chiefs who were in a state of constant rebellion.

1. Ibid., Nos. 197 sqq.
2. Ibid., Nos. 285 sqq.
3. Ibid., No. 278.
4. Ibid., Nos. 874-8.
5. Ibid., Nos. 932-56.
6. Ibid., No. 960.
7. Ibid., Nos. 1147-8.
8. Ibid., Nos. 1152 sqq.
9. Ibid., Nos. 1037 sqq
10. Ibid., Nos. 1089-95; 1115 sqq.
11. Ibid., No. 1107.
12. Ibid., viii, No. 7.
13. Ibid., 481 sqq.
It was in the midst of an open revolt that Jayasimha (1128-55) succeeded to the throne of his father. He lacked a strong will, did not display any acts of personal bravery during his reign and failed to crush the Dāmaras. Yet by cunning diplomacy and unscrupulous intrigue he succeeded in giving peace to the country. As Kalhana observes: "He restored to this land, which owing to the baseness of the time was like a decayed forest, wealth, population and habitation."

Jayasimha was the last great Hindu ruler of Kashmir. After his death the country again lapsed into chaos. The political and economic decline, which had set in since the beginning of the eleventh century and which Jayasimha had in vain tried to arrest, became more rapid after him. His successors were weak and incompetent. They neglected their duty of protecting their subjects and instead robbed them with the help of their favourites. Their misrule was taken advantage of by the nobles who became strong and defied the royal authority. In 1198, however, Jagadeva became king, and he endeavoured to establish peace and prosperity in the Valley. But his efforts were not successful, for the corrupt officials drove him out of the country. Although he later recovered the throne, he was soon poisoned and died in 1212-3. He was succeeded by his son Rājadeva (1212-13 to 1235) whose power was limited by aggressive nobles. His son Sāṅgrāmadeva (1235-52) was a strong man, but was helpless when the chiefs compelled him to leave the country. Although he later succeeded in recovering the throne, he was shortly afterwards slain. The reign of Rāmadeva (1252-73), Rājadeva's son, was uneventful. As he had no child, he adopted Laksmanaśe, the son of a Brahman, as his heir-apparent. Laksmanaśe (1273-86), who succeeded him, was incompetent, and was constantly harassed by the Turks and his turbulent nobles. His son Simhadeva (1286-1301) ruled over a kingdom considerably reduced in size. He was dominated by evil counsellors, and was in the end assassinated by Darya, the husband of his nurse's daughter with whom he had illicit relations.

Simhadeva's brother Sūhadeva (1301-20) succeeded in bringing the whole of Kashmir under his rule. But the heavy fines and taxes which he exacted made him unpopular. He did not exempt even the Brahmans from taxation. He was a bad ruler, "the Rākṣas of a king
who, under the plea of protecting the country, devoured it for nineteen years and twenty-five days." Moreover, like his predecessors, he neglected the defences of the country by leaving the passes un guarded. As a result, adventurers and spies entered the Valley without any difficulty. Socially and morally the people of Kashmir had sunk to the lowest depths, for old and young alike had taken to falsehood, intrigue, dishonesty and discord. Such was the state of Kashmir when the storm of foreign invasion by Zuljū burst upon the country.

Zuljū's Origin

Who was this Zuljū that overwhelmed Kashmir? Jonarāja calls him the commander of the great king Karmasena. But it is not possible to identify the latter. Abūl-Fażl, who based himself entirely on the Sanskrit chronicles for this period of Kashmir history, refers to Zuljū as chief commander of the king of Qandahār. Nizāmu’d-Dīn and Firishta say that he was Mīr Bakhshī of the ruler of Qandahār. But these statements are apocryphal. Qandahār did not have at this time any chief of its own, but was a possession of Ghiyāṣu’d-Dīn, the Kurt ruler of Herāt, who was tributary to the Il-Khāns of Persia. Ghiyāṣu’d-Dīn himself was not powerful enough to send an army for the conquest of Kashmir; and besides he was confronted with internal rebellions and intrigues, and with an invasion of Prince Yasūr, the Nikūdarī. It is, therefore, wrong to say that Zuljū came from Qandahār. Zuljū was in reality a Mongol who came from Turkistān which was at this time ruled by the descendants of Chaghatāy, the son of Chingiz Khān, and his army consisted of both Turks and

1. Ibid., 19. 2. G. A., f. 96b.
Mongols. As regards his religion he does not seem to have been a Muslim. By this time only a few of the Chaghatay chiefs had embraced Islām. Most of them had remained attached to the pagan beliefs of their forefathers.

**Mongol Invasions**

In the thirteenth century the Mongols, emerging from their Mongolian steppes, overran considerable parts of Asia and Europe. Kashmir too was subjected to a series of invasions. Thus Ogatāy, Chingiz Khān’s third son, despatched Mugatu towards India and Kashmir, and he returned after ravaging parts of these countries. Again in 1253 Tair was sent with an army to Kashmir and India. After Tair’s death his troops came under the command of Sali who is said to have conquered Kashmir and sent several thousand prisoners to Hūlāgū Khān. Details of these Mongol invasions are not available, but they appear to have been in the nature of raids and affected only the outer hills of Kashmir. The invasion of Zuljū in the spring of 1320 was a continuation of these previous attempts to conquer the Valley.

**Zuljū’s Invasion**

Zuljū entered Kashmir by the Jehlam Valley route, and as the passes were not properly defended, he did not meet with any resistance. Hearing of the invasion, Sūhadeva tried to persuade Zuljū to withdraw by paying him a large sum of money, which he raised by taxing all classes of people, including the Brahmans. But the effect of this was that, while it increased Sūhadeva’s unpopularity among his subjects, it only served to whet Zuljū’s appetite for loot. And the Mongol chief, instead of withdrawing, continued to advance. Sūhadeva tried to organise resistance, but did not succeed, for the people of Kashmir, owing to the

1. B.S., f. 10a; Jonar. (Bo. ed.), No. 170, says Zuljū’s army consisted of Turks, Tajiks, and mlecchas.
2. Prawdin, The Mongol Empire, pp. 141 sqq; Vambery, Buchārī, pp. 406-7; also p. 157 n. where the names of Chaghatay rulers of Transoxiana are given.
4. Ibid., 1135 n. 5; Howorth, History of the Mongols, iii, 184.
5. Ṭabaqāt-i-Nāṣirī (trans. Raverty), 1191 n; Howorth, iii, 185. But Howorth gives 1263 as the year of these conquests. See also Bretschneider, Medieval Researches, 137-8, 305.
financial exactions and injustices to which they had been subjected by him and his predecessors, remained apathetic to his appeals. He, therefore, fled to Kishtwār, leaving his people to the mercy of the invaders who perpetrated all kinds of atrocities upon them. They set fire to the dwellings, massacred the men and made women and children slaves. For many years afterwards the blackened remains of ruined homesteads told the tale of the conquerors' cruelties. The only place which remained partially safe from the fury of the Mongols was the district of Lār, where Rāmacandra, Sūhadeva's commander-in-chief, shut himself up in the fort, and endeavoured to protect his family, his followers, and the inhabitants of the town and the neighbourhood. In fact, he was the only person who tried to maintain some semblance of authority in the Valley; and, after Zuljū's departure, he moved down to Andarkōt and drove out the Gaddis who had come from Kishtwār on a raid.

The Mongols continued their ravages in the Valley for eight months, until the commencement of winter. During this period fields had been for the most part left uncultivated, for the inhabitants had either been killed or escaped to the mountains. And as the Mongols had consumed or burnt the existing stocks of grain in the country, they were now threatened by an acute shortage of supplies. It was owing to this reason, and not because of the cold weather, that Zuljū decided to depart from the Valley. His officers advised him to leave by the same route

1. Hasan, 92b; H.M., 96a-b.
2. The district known as Lār comprises the whole of the territory drained by the Sind and its tributaries. The Sanskrit chronicles call it Lahara (Jonar. 18), but the Persian chronicles call it Lār. The fort of Lār was situated in the village of Gagangīr, in Lat. 34° 18' Long. 75° 15', about 10 miles west of Sonamarg on the road to Drās. (N.A., f. 14a; W.K., f. 11b; T.H., ii, 82a).
3. B.S., 12a; Hasan, 92b; H.M., 96b.
4. Lawrence, Valley, 189. Andarkōt is a village situated in Lat. 34° 13' Long. 74° 42', on the Sambal Lake about 12 miles north-west of Srinagar.
5. B.S., 10a-11a; H.M., f. 96b.
6. B.S., f. 11a; Hasan, 93a-94a; H.M., 97b; Jonar., p. 17. The chronicles say that the Mongols made this decision owing to the dread of approaching winter. But this is wrong for the Mongols, coming as they did from colder regions, could have easily faced the cold weather of Kashmir.
of Bārāmūla and Pakhlī by which he had entered, because it was shorter and passable even in winter. But he ignored their advice, and asked the prisoners to point out the shortest route to India where he expected to find provisions for his army. To revenge themselves on the Mongols for their sufferings, they directed them to the most hazardous route via Brinal. When the Mongol army reached the top of the hill in the Divasar pargana, there was a severe snowfall which destroyed the whole army of Zuljū, including the prisoners.

**Condition of the Valley after the Mongol Withdrawal**

After the withdrawal of the Mongols the inhabitants returned to the Valley from the mountains whither they had fled to escape massacre or enslavement. They witnessed the havoc which the invaders had caused. Many found themselves without houses, without relations, and without friends. In addition to these sufferings, they were subjected to the harassments of the neighbouring hill tribes, who raided the Valley and plundered them of whatever they still possessed, and then carried them away as slaves. Moreover, to crown it all, famine stared them in the face.

As there was no organised government in the country, the local chiefs made themselves independent. In some cases the inhabitants themselves organised their defence against the depredations of robbers and the hill tribes by taking possession of a fort and choosing some strong person as their leader. Among those who took advantage of the prevailing anarchy, the most prominent person was Riñchana.

**Riñchana: Sultan Sadru’d-Dīn (1320-23)**

Riñchana, whose full name was Lha-chen-rgyal-bu-rin-chen (Lhachen rGyalbu Riñchana), was the son of the Ladākhi chief, Lha-chen-dNgos-

---

1. Hasan, 94a-b; According to N.A., 14a, Zuljū set out to conquer Kishtwār on his counsellors' advice.
2. Hasan, 94b; B.S., 11a; H.M., 98a. Brinal is now in Kulgām Tahsīl situated S.E. of the Valley in the Brinal-Lāmar Mountains. The route via Brinal leads to the Bānhāl Pass.
3. Hasan, 94b-95a; H.M., (B.N.), 31b-32a.
4. B.S., 12a; Hasan, 95a; H.M., 98b.
grub (Lhachen dNgos-grub), who ruled Ladakh from 1290 to 1320. The wars between the Ladakhis and Baltis had been very frequent in the past. However, owing to the Pax-Mongolica which covered both Ladakh and Baltistan, these wars had for the time being ceased. But after the death of Kublai Khan (1260-94), which plunged his empire into confusion, they were renewed. In a campaign the Baltis were victorious over the Ladakhis, and "they avenged their fathers and their forefathers." As a result Rinchana's father lost his life. Rinchana succeeded in avenging his father by killing a number of Balti chiefs, but realising his position to be precarious, he left his country for Kashmir, which he entered by the Zoji-La Pass. On reaching the village of Gagangir, he decided to settle there with the permission of Ramacandra to whom the place belonged.

During Zulju's invasion, Rinchana remained in the district of Lār, and was employed by Ramacandra to establish law and order, and protect the inhabitants from robbers. By performing his duties with energy and efficiency, he grew influential and won the confidence of the people. But so long as Zulju was in Kashmir, Rinchana lay low; it was only after the Mongol chief's withdrawal that he, like many others in the Valley, asserted his independence, and began to aspire to the throne of Kashmir. But although he had secured a following in the Lār district in the course of, and after Zulju's invasion, he knew he was not strong enough to fight Ramacandra in the open. He therefore decided upon a ruse. He sent his Ladakhī followers in the guise of

2. I.A., 1909, p. 60. The Persian chronicles do not mention the struggle between the Baltis and the Ladakhīs. They merely say that Rinchana's father and relations were killed by the rival party, and so he came away to Kashmir.
4. Hasan, 87b; B.S., 10a; H.M., 92b. Jonarāja's statement that Rinchana was a joint invader with Zulju is incorrect. Munich MS. is wrong in saying that Rinchana, like Zulju, took prisoners and looted.
5. Hasan, 82b. Hasan also states that Rinchana appropriated some of the revenues which he collected on behalf of Ramacandra.
6. B.S., f. 12b.
merchants, selling woollen clothes, to the town of Lār. They carried on business for some time so that no suspicion might be aroused. Then, one day, they entered the fort under the pretext of trade, with their weapons concealed, and took Rāmacandra’s men by surprise. Meanwhile, Riñchana also, at the appointed time, attacked the fort. Rāmacandra’s troops were routed and he was killed. His son Rāwancandra with his whole family was taken prisoner. As there was no one strong enough to challenge Riñchana, he occupied the throne at the end of the year 1320.

Riñchana had seized power with the support of his Ladākhī followers. But he realized that, being a stranger in Kashmir, his government would not be stable unless he won the goodwill of the people of the country. The first thing, therefore, which he did was to befriend Rāwancandra. After releasing him he conferred upon him the title of Raina (Lord or Master), made him his commander-in-chief, and gave him the pargana of Lār and the province of Ladākh as jāgīr. He then married Rāwancandra’s sister Koṭa Rānī. In this way Riñchana succeeded in gaining the loyalty of Rāwancandra, and in making him forget the murder of his father.

Riñchana was faced with two dangers at the outset of his reign. The first was due to the appearance of Sūhadeva, who returned from Kishtwār to claim his kingdom from which he had so ignominiously fled. But Sūhadeva was repulsed, and retired in haste to Kishtwār. The people of Kashmir did not forget how he had betrayed them in the hour of their greatest need, and so no one came forward to welcome him, and none regretted his departure.

The other danger was from the Lavanyas who during Zuljū’s invasion had become independent and now refused to acknowledge

1. Jonar. (Bo. ed.), Nos. 199-200. G.A., f. 99a says that Riñchana secured help from his brother who was ruler of Dārdu. But this is absurd.
2. B.S., 12a-b; Hasan, 95b; H.M., 99a.
4. B.S., 12b; Hasan, 96a-b; H.M., 99b. Munich MS., 48a, wrongly says that Koṭā was the wife of Rāmacandra.
5. B.S., 13a; Hasan, 96b; H.M., 100a.
6. Lavanyas must have formed in medieval times an important tribal section of the rural population in Kashmir. Many of them must have held positions of influence as landowners. (See for more details Stein, i, No. 1171 n.; and Lawrence, Valley, 306.)
Riñchana as ruler. Riñchana, however, succeeded in suppressing them by playing the different chiefs against each other. In this way he established his authority over the whole Valley.¹

**Riñchana's Conversion to Islam**

Riñchana's mind was inquisitive and alert. He was fond of the society of learned men and Hindu and Buddhist priests, and used to discuss with them their respective religions in order to find a satisfactory answer to the question: "what is truth?" But the discussions failed to satisfy his spiritual cravings. Buddhism, the faith in which he was born, had become diluted with foreign elements and so could not offer him any solace. Hinduism also did not appeal to him because of its caste-ridden rules and the arrogance of the Brahmans who were its custodians. Owing to his inability to discover the truth, he felt a sense of frustration and a spiritual vacuum in his life. As a result, he was troubled and restless, and passed sleepless nights, weeping and praying to God to guide him to the right path.² It was in such a state of spiritual unrest that he came into contact with Sayyid Sharafu'd-Dīn, commonly known as Bulbul Shāh, who was a disciple of Shāh Ni'matu'llāh Fārsī belonging to the Suhrawardiya Order of Șūfis³ and had come to Kashmir in the reign of Sūhadeva from Turkistan with one thousand fugitives from the Mongol invasion.⁴ Riñchana learnt from him about Islām, and was so much impressed by its teachings, which were simple, free from ceremonies, caste and priesthood, that he became a Muslim⁵ and adopted the name of Șadru'd-Dīn according to the saint's

2. B.S., 14a; Hasan, 98a; H.M., 101b-102a.
3. B.S., 14b; Majnū'ī ādar Aṃsūb Masha'īkh-i-Khurāsānī, f. 106a; see also T.H., i, f. 136b and ii, f. 84b.
5. Persian chronicles represent this event as the outcome of a miracle. They state that, unable to arrive at any decision, Riñchana made up his mind to adopt the religion of the person whom he saw first in the morning. The first person he saw from his palace early next morning was Bulbul Shāh who was engaged in prayers. He immediately went up to him and, after making inquiries about the main tenets of his religion decided to adopt it. (Hasan, 99b-100a; H.M., 102-103a). Jonarāja is wrong in saying that Riñchana
advice. The next person to embrace Islām after Rīñchana was his brother-in-law, Rāwancandra. The royal patronage which Islām secured won for it new converts. Rīñchana built for Bulbul Shāh a hospice on the bank of the Jehlām, near the palace, and endowed it with a number of villages, whose income was to be spent for supporting its servants and supplying food to the travellers and the poor. He also built near the hospice a mosque where he prayed in congregation five times a day. This was the first mosque ever to have been built in Kashmir. Later on it was destroyed by fire, and a smaller mosque was built in its place.¹

Meanwhile Rīñchana was faced with a serious conspiracy headed by Tukka, his former prime minister. Tukka was angry with Rīñchana for dismissing him from his office and appointing in his place Vyālarāja, and then inflicting the punishment of death upon his brother.² He therefore planned to destroy Rīñchana; and while the latter was at Vimsapraṣṭha, Tukka and his followers made a surprise attack on him. Although Vyālarāja came to his rescue, he received a serious wound, and as a result fainted. His enemies, thinking that Rīñchana was dead, proceeded to occupy Srinagar. They plundered the city, but began to quarrel among themselves for the spoils. Meanwhile the king had recovered from his swoon, and taking advantage of the disunity among his enemies, he took them by surprise. He seized them, and ordered their execution. But his thirst for revenge not being satiated, he had the wombs of their wives ripped open by

wanted to become a Śaivite, but that the Brahmans refused to convert him. In ancient and medieval times conversions from Buddhism to Hinduism and vice versa were of common occurrence. In reality the reason why Rīñchana did not embrace Śaivism was that it could not satisfy his spiritual cravings. It is probably out of bitterness against Rīñchana's rejection of Śaivism that Jonarāja wrote that the Brahmans refused to take him into the fold of Hinduism. It was also due to the bitterness he felt at Rīñchana's acceptance of Islām that he did not even so much as refer to the event in his chronicle.

¹ B.S., f. 15a-b; Hasan, 100b-101a; H.M., 103a-b.
² Jonar. 19-20; Munich MS., 148b-49a; I.A., July 1908, p. 187. According to Munich MS. Tukka was incited by Udayānadeva, brother of Sūhadeva, who wanted to seize the throne.
the sword. The wound, however, which Riňchana had received on the head, proved to be mortal, and he died within a few months at the end of 1323, after a reign of over three years. He was buried near the mosque he had built. His grave was discovered in 1909 by A.H. Francke, the well-known Tibetan scholar and archaeologist of the Moravian Mission. Riňchana’s rule, while harsh and stern, was firm and rested on law. He was able and energetic, and tried to give peace to the land which had been in a state of chaos for a long time. Unfortunately he was on the throne only for a short period; and the man who succeeded him was too weak and incompetent to continue his work.

Udayānadeva (1323-38)

Riňchana left behind a son named Ĥaidar who was under the guardianship of Shâh Mîr, his trusted counsellor. As Ĥaidar was a minor, his mother Kotâ Râñî acted as Regent. But this arrangement was not regarded as satisfactory, for it was apprehended that without a sovereign the country might again lapse into anarchy. It was therefore decided to set up on the throne a senior and an experienced member of the former royal family of Kashmir. Kotâ Râñî, Riňchana’s widow, accordingly, on the advice of Shâh Mîr and other nobles of the land, recalled Udayānadeva, the brother of Sûhadeva, from Swat where he had been living since Zuljû’s invasion, made him king, and married him. Udayānadeva was, however, cowardly and incompetent, and it was really Kotâ Râñî who was the virtual ruler.

Soon after Udayānadeva’s accession to the throne, Kashmir was faced with a great threat from an invasion of the Turks who entered the country via Hirapûr. Udayānadeva became terror-stricken and

3. J.P.H.S., i, No. 2, pp. 175-6.
4. B.S., f. 15b; Hasan, 101a; H.M., 104a. T.A., iii, 425, calls Ĥaidar as Chandra.
5. Jonar., 24; B.S., 16a; Hasan, 101b.
6. B.S., f. 16a; Hasan, 101b.
7. This was probably an incursion. But who these Turks were, and if they were sent by the Delhi Sulţâns, have not been recorded. The chronicles give different names to the leader of the invaders. Most of the Persian chronicles call him Urdîl (H.M., (B.N.) 33b; Hasan, 101b). But Jonar. 25 calls him Achala.
fled to Ladākh. But Koṭā Rāṇī did not lose heart. She rose to the occasion, and with the help of her chief officers, like her brother Rāwancandra, Shāh Mīr, and Bhaṭṭa Bhiksāṇa, she resolved to organise resistance to the invaders. She wrote to the chiefs who, taking advantage of the foreign invasion, had declared themselves independent, to give up their refractory conduct and unite under her banner to repel the enemy, for disunity and selfishness would bring them nothing but disaster, as it had done during the invasion of Zuljū. She asked them to recall to memory the invasion of Zuljū when owing to the cowardice of the leaders and disunity in the country the people had suffered so much. She called upon them to gird up their loins, and fight the enemy, because it was a thousand times better to be killed in the defence of one’s family and country than to run away to safety, leaving the women and children behind to be taken prisoners. Her appeal woke the chiefs from their lethargy and they rallied round her. As a result, the campaign against the Turks was conducted vigorously, and they were defeated and compelled to withdraw from the Valley.

After their withdrawal, Udayānadeva returned to Srinagar. But due to his cowardly flight his prestige had greatly suffered, and so henceforth he began to lead a secluded life, taking very little interest in public affairs. The real power in the state was wielded by Koṭā Rāṇī.

Udayānadeva died in the year 1338, but Koṭā Rāṇī, in order to get time to consolidate her position, concealed his death for four days. She had two sons. One of them was by her first husband, Rinchana, and was in charge of Shāh Mīr; the other was by Udayānadeva, and was under the guardianship of Bhaṭṭa Bhiksāṇa. She ignored the claims of both her sons, and herself ascended the throne. But no sooner did she assume the reins of government in her hands, than her position was threatened by her eldest son’s tutor, Shāh Mīr.

1. According to H.M. (B.N.), f. 33b, he was Koṭā’s foster-brother and was not an able officer.
2. B.S., f. 16b; Ḥasan, ff. 101b-102b; H.M., 104a-5a. H.M., (B.N.) says that the Turks having been defeated made peace, and then withdrew. Nārayan Kaul follows this account.
5. Ibid., B.S., f. 17a, is wrong in saying that Koṭā Rāṇī had no son alive at this time.
Shāh Mīr

Shāh Mīr’s ancestry is shrouded in legend. According to some accounts he was descended from the Pāṇḍūs, heroes of the Mahābhārata, while others trace his descent to the rulers of Swāt. But from a study of the character and achievements of Shāh Mīr and his successors, it is more than probable that the family was of Turkish origin. The name of Shāh Mīr’s father was Tāhir and his grandfather’s Waqīr Shāh, who was a very devout and religious man.

Turkish adventurers began to enter Kashmir from the end of the eleventh century onwards in search of employment. They were treated with respect by the Hindu kings, who employed them in their armies. Similarly, in 1313, came Shāh Mīr to the Valley with his tribe in search of fame and fortune. Sūhadeva, who was then ruling Kashmir, employed him and gave him a village near Bārāmūla as jagīr. We do not know what role he played during Zuljū’s invasion and in the events leading to Rīchchana’s rise to power. But it is certain that a man of his restless nature and abundant energy could not have remained a mere passive spectator of the happenings around him. Besides, from the confidence which Rīchchana placed in him, it appears that he must have helped him in his struggle against Rāmacandra. It was because of this, and also because he stood aloof from the conspiracy hatched by Tūkka, that Rīchchana appointed him his minister as well as guardian of his only son Haidar.

During the reign of Udayānadeva, Shāh Mīr, by his tact and ability, further strengthened his position. He co-operated with Koṭā Rānī in organising resistance to the Turkish invasion, and in the end succeeded in repelling it. This considerably increased his prestige and popularity in the country, for he had saved the people from the fate to which they had been subjected only a few years ago by Zuljū.

1. T.A., iii, 424; Flīshta, p. 647. Jonar. is silent over the question of their ancestry.
2. B.S., f. 9a; H.M., f. 91b; Hasan, f. 86b.
3. Ibid., Jonar., p. 15, wrongly calls him Qaur Shāh. Sūfī, Kashīr, i. p. 130n. follows Jonar.
4. Jonar., p. 15; B.S., f. 9b; T.A., iii, 424. Jonar. p. 24, says he was the chief of his tribe. I cannot identify the village that was given to him as jagīr.
5. Jonar., 23; Munich MS., f. 50a,
To consolidate his position further he entered into matrimonial alliances with the important feudal chiefs of the Valley.¹ Those with whom such alliances could not be formed, he brought under his influence by playing one against the other. All this filled Udayānadeva with jealous hostility towards Shāh Mīr, and made him apprehensive lest the latter should use Prince Ḥaidar, Riṅchana's lawful successor, to drive him out or to exclude his heirs from the succession. But Shāh Mīr, assured of his own position and strength, ignored Udayānadeva.²

On Udayānadeva's death Koṭā Rānī ascended the throne, but alarmed at the ambition and growing power of Shāh Mīr, she appointed Bhaṭṭa Bhikṣāna as her prime minister who, being one of the ablest and most powerful men in the kingdom, she hoped, would act as a counterpoise to him.³ Moreover, in order to be safe from the danger of Shāh Mīr's proximity in Srīnagar, where he was very popular, she transferred her capital to Andarkōt.⁴ Shāh Mīr was, however, angry with Koṭā Rānī for having ignored him and raised another person to the highest office in the state; and he therefore made up his mind to overthrow both Koṭā Rānī and her chief confidant. First he succeeded by means of a conspiracy in securing the assassination of Bhikṣāna.⁵ and then asked Koṭā Rānī to marry him and to share power with him, threatening to make war on her if she refused. But Koṭā Rānī rejected his proposal, for she did not want to marry a person who had been in her service; and being ambitious and domineering, she was not prepared to share power with any one. Shāh Mīr, therefore, set out from Srīnagar with an army against Andarkōt; and having defeated the troops which were sent by Koṭā Rānī to check his advance, he laid siege to the fort. Meanwhile, as most of the important chiefs of the kingdom had been won over by Shāh Mīr, and her forces began to desert and join him, she decided to surrender, and accept his

³. Ibid., 28.
⁴. B.S., 17a; Hasan, 102a; H.M. 105b.
⁵. Ibid., Jonar., 29, says that Shāh Mīr feigned illness, and that when Kākāpūrī went to see him he stabbed him to death. But this story appears spurious. Since their relations were inimical it seems unlikely that Kākāpūrī would have visited Shāh Mīr.
proposals.\textsuperscript{1} But although Shāh Mīr married her, he did not trust her, because she had given her consent reluctantly and under duress. Moreover, as she still possessed some following in the country, he felt apprehensive and he therefore threw her into prison along with her two sons.\textsuperscript{2} He then himself ascended the throne under the title of Sulṭān Shamsu’d-Dīn and thus laid the foundation of his dynasty which ruled Kashmir for over two hundred years. Koṭā Rānī died in prison in the year 1339.\textsuperscript{3} What happened to her sons is not recorded in the chronicles.

\textsuperscript{1} B.S., f. 17a; Hasan, ff. 103a-b; H.M., f. 105b.
\textsuperscript{2} Jonar., p. 32; Munich MS., 53a. The story that on entering the bridal chamber after the marriage ceremony she stabbed herself, and bringing out her entrails offered them to Shāh Mīr, seems to be apocryphal. Jonaraja, who is the earliest authority for this period, does not mention the incident.
\textsuperscript{3} Jonar., 32.
CHAPTER IV

SULTĀN SHAMSU’D-DĪN AND HIS SUCCESSORS

Shamsu’D-Dīn (1339-42)

Shamsu’D-Dīn, like Riñchana, tried to heal the wounds inflicted on the Valley by Zuljū’s invasion and nearly two centuries of feudal anarchy and misrule. He abolished many of the extra taxes which had been imposed on the people in the previous reigns, and cancelled those laws and regulations which were of an oppressive nature. He took from the peasants one-sixth of the produce as revenue, and protected them from greedy officials. He kept the feudal chiefs under control; and in order to counteract their influence, he raised to prominence two families: the Māgres, who were of indigenous origin, and the Chaks who had migrated to Kashmir from Dardistān in the reign of Sūhadeva under their leader Lankar Chak. Shamsu’D-Dīn made the latter his commander-in-chief, and similarly appointed other officers from among the Māgres. However, we do not hear much of the activities of these families during the early Shāh Mīr period. It was in reality not until after the reign of Zainu’l-Ābidin that they began to play an important part in the history of Kashmir.

Shamsu’D-Dīn introduced a new era called the Kashmirī era in place of the Laukika era which had been in force hitherto. The new calendar began with Riñchana’s accession and conversion to Islām which was fixed at 720 A.H., and was used in all state documents during the Sultanate period. Its official use, however, ended with the Mughal conquest, although it continued to be used in the rural parts of the Valley until very recently.

Towards the end of his days he left the administration in the hands of his two sons, Jamshēd and ‘Alī Shēr. He died in the year

1342 and was buried in Sumbal near Andarkōt. Unknown and, probably, of humble origin, Shamsu'd-Dīn came to Kashmir in search of fortune, but he took advantage of the political chaos that prevailed in the country, and by his great energy, resource, and perseverance he rose to power and founded his dynasty. Although he ruled only for three years, yet, even in such a short time, he was able to win the loyalty of his subjects who looked upon him as their saviour.

**Sultān Jamshēd (1342-43)**

Shamsu’d-Dīn left two sons, Jamshēd and ‘Alī Shēr. Jamshēd being the eldest succeeded to the throne. He had already gained experience in state affairs in the time of Udayānadeva, when he and his brother had acted as governors of Kamrāj and Marāj. During the reign of his father also he had been closely associated in the government of the country. He proved to be a good ruler, and endeavoured to promote the welfare of the people. He founded the town of Jāmnagar in the pargana of Adavin, and built a bridge over the Jehlam at Sōpūr, and inns for travellers at various places. However, he was not shrewd enough to realise the danger which threatened him and adopt measures to overcome it.

Jamshēd treated his younger brother, ‘Alī Shēr, with kindness, placed confidence in him, and consulted him on all matters relating to administration. But ‘Alī Shēr was ambitious, and having been incited by some courtiers, he raised the banner of revolt in Avantipur in order to seize the throne. Jamshēd tried to conciliate him, but without any success. Meanwhile the Sultān had despatched his son with an army to suppress a revolt in Divasar. ‘Alī Shēr marched

---

2. Ibid., p. 28.  
5. Jonar., p. 35.  
6. Ibid., 33; Munich MS., f. 54a. The statement in T.A., iii, 427, that Jamshēd was suspicious of his brother from the beginning is not supported by Kashmir chronicles.  
7. It is a village situated in Lat. 33°55’ Long. 75°4’ on the right bank of the Jehlam about 17 miles south-east of Srinagar. It lies on the site of the town of the same name founded by Rājā Avantivarman.  
8. Munich MS., f. 54a.
against his nephew and defeated him. But during his absence Jamshèd, on the advice of his minister, Lakṣman Bhaṭṭ, decided to capture Avantipūr, the seat of his brother’s power. He accordingly besieged it, and inflicted great loss on the garrison. But hearing of the approach of ‘Alī Shēr, he withdrew, and signed a truce for two months with his brother. But while he was absent in Kamrāj, ‘Alī Shēr broke the truce; and having bribed Sirāj, who was in charge of Srīnagar, he took possession of the capital and declared himself as Sulṭān.1 Jamshèd, finding himself not strong enough to fight, fled; and after aimlessly wandering about in the Valley for a year and ten months, he died in 1345.2

Sulṭān ‘Alā’u’d-Dīn (1343-54)
On ascending the throne ‘Alī Shēr styled himself as ‘Alā’u’d-Dīn. From the few facts that are known about his reign of about eleven years, he appears to have been an able, just, and strong ruler. He continued the work of consolidation and reform begun by his predecessors. He brought back the peasants to the lands from which they had fled during Zuljū’s invasion, and he repeopled the towns which had been depopulated.3 The same year that he became Sulṭān, the Valley, owing to the untimely rains which destroyed the crops, suffered from a severe famine. But he did all he could to alleviate the sufferings of his subjects.4 He erected many beautiful buildings at Andarkōt, which he made his capital, and founded the town of ‘Alā’u’d-Dīnpūr, now a part of Srīnagar, after his own name.5 He promulgated a law by which a childless widow, if immoral, was not entitled to get a share of her husband’s property from her father-in-law.6 During his reign the Lavanayas rose in revolt and then fled to Kishtwār. But they were pursued and captured by him, and were brought back to Kashmir where they were thrown into prison and their leaders executed.7 ‘Alā’u’d-Dīn died in the year 1354,8 and was buried in his new town of ‘Alā’u’d-Dīnpur.9

Nothing is known of the early life of 'Ala’u’d-Dīn’s son and successor, Shīrāshāmak (the little milk-drinker), except that he had been associated by his father in the government of the kingdom. On ascending the throne he assumed the title of Shīhābu’d-Dīn. He was full of energy and vigour, and his ambition was to establish his sway over the neighbouring territories. But before undertaking any wars of aggression, he first directed his attention to consolidate his position in his own country. Taking advantage of Zuljū’s invasion and the chaos that followed it, the feudal chiefs had made themselves independent, and had built strong forts. Shīhābu’d-Dīn’s predecessors had reduced many of them, but there were still some left who refused to pay tribute and defied the authority of the government. Shīhābu’d-Dīn, therefore, undertook a campaign against the refractory chiefs. He put to death those who refused to surrender, but spared those who promised to remain loyal to him. It was after he had assured himself that there would be no trouble in the Valley during his absence, that he set out to conquer the neighbouring territories which had once formed part of the kingdom of Kāshmīr.

According to the Kāshmīr accounts Shīhābu’d-Dīn marched via Bārāmūla, and occupied Pākhli and Swāt. Next he invaded Mūltān, Nu’mān and Kābul, Ghaznī and Qandahār, all of which he occupied one by one. He then crossed the Hindu Kush and invaded Badakhshān. After conquering it, he retraced his steps towards Gilgit and Dārdū which also he annexed. He then advanced to conquer Baltistān and Lādākh. The ruler of Kāshgār to whom these provinces belonged at the time, on hearing of Shīhābu’d-Dīn’s invasion, set out with a large force and offered him battle in Lādākh. Although the Kāshmīr army was numerically inferior to that of Kāshgār, yet it was victorious, and Baltistān and Lādākh were occupied. Meanwhile,

1. Firīshtā, T.A., and the Munich MS., say that he was the son of Shāh Mīr and brother of ‘Alā’u’d-Dīn. But this is wrong. Jōnarāja calls him at one place the son of Shāh Mīr (p. 35) but at another place mentions him as the grandson of Shāh Mīr (p. 26). All other Persian chronicles state that Shīhābu’d-Dīn was the son of ‘Alā’u’d-Dīn.

2. Munich MS., ff. 55b-56a; B.S., ff. 20b-21b; H.M., f. 108b.

Shihābu’īd-Dīn’s commander Malik Candra reduced Kishtwār and Jammu.\(^1\) Shihābu’īd-Dīn himself, on the other hand, marched from Ladākh to Nagarkōṭ (Kāŋgra), and after occupying it, encamped on the plains of the Sutlej. Here in 1361 he was met by Udakpati, the Rājā Nagarkōṭ, who had just returned with the spoils from a raid into the territory of Fīrūz Shāh Tughlaq. Shihābu’īd-Dīn defeated him, and compelled him to surrender his booty and acknowledge his sovereignty.\(^2\) Then with 50,000 horse and 50,000 foot Shihābu’īd-Dīn set out to conquer Delhi, but was opposed by Fīrūz Shāh Tughlaq on the banks of the Sutlej. Since the battle between the rulers of Delhi and Srīnagar was indecisive, peace was concluded. It was agreed that all the territory from Sirhind to Kashmir was to belong to Shihābu’īd-Dīn, while the rest lying to the east was to go to Fīrūz Shāh.\(^3\) A marriage alliance was also contracted by which Fīrūz Shāh’s two daughters were married to Shihābu’īd-Dīn and his brother Quṭbū’īd-Dīn, while Shihābu’īd-Dīn’s daughter was married to Fīrūz Shāh.\(^4\) This was Shihābu’īd-Dīn’s last campaign, after which he returned to Kashmir and devoted the remaining nine years of his reign to the work of reform.

The Kashmir chronicles, describing the conquests of Shihābu’īd-Dīn, have indulged in wildly exaggerated claims which are not supported by the contemporary authorities. Just as Kalhana had two centuries earlier exaggerated the military exploits of his hero Lalitaditya,\(^5\) so Jonarāja, and after him other Kashmir chroniclers, magnified the achievements of Shihābu’īd-Dīn. There is, for example, no evidence to suggest that Shihābu’īd-Dīn crossed the Hindu Kush and occupied the territories beyond it. In fact both Nīzāmu’īd-Dīn and Firishta say that, realising the difficulties of crossing that mountain, he retraced his steps.\(^6\) Similarly the claim that the Sultān conquered Kābul, Ghaznī and Qandahār appears to be fantastic. In reality his conquests covered a

---

1. B.S., ff. 20a-21a; Hasan, ff. 105b-106b; H.M., ff. 108a-b.
3. B.S., f. 20b; Hasan, 106b; H.M., 108b-109b.
4. N.A., f. 28a; G.A., ff. 113a-b.
5. See Reinaud, Memoire sur l’Inde, pp. 190 sqq.
much limited area. These comprised Gilgit, Dardistan and Baltistan to the north, Ladakh to the east, Kishtwar, Jammu, Chamba and other hill states to the south, and most of the northern and western Punjab and the Peshawar district to the west. As regards Shihabu’d-Din’s relations with Firuz Shah it is possible that the two rulers met each other while the latter was carrying on a campaign against the Raja of Nagarkot, and also, perhaps, concluded a treaty. But there is no reliable evidence to support the view that there was a conflict between the Sultans of Kashmir and Delhi, or that a marriage alliance was concluded.

Shihabu’d-Din was not only a proved warrior but also an able administrator, and governed his kingdom with firmness and justice. But one of his regulations, which survived for a long time, that for seven days in every month the hanjis (boatmen) would be required to serve the king without wages, was very oppressive. His exaction of Baj also weighed heavily upon the people. He was, however, a patron of learned men and opened a number of schools where the Qur’an, Hadi,

1. J.R.A.S., xlvi, (1918), p. 453. There is some confusion regarding the date of Shihabu’d-Din’s meeting with the Raja of Nagarkot and Firuz Shah. From a study of Firuz Shah’s reign it appears that this meeting must have taken place either in 1360 or later for, before this period, Firuz was busy elsewhere. (M.T., i, 327-30). But the difficulty arises from the statement of Jonaraja that in 1360 a flood took place in Kashmir, and that Shihabu’d-Din was present at the time in Srinagar. Shihabu’d-Din might have left Kashmir to meet Firuz after the flood, but according to the Kashmir chronicles he proceeded directly from Ladakh to Nagarkot, and the flood took place on his return from the campaign. This means that the meeting took place before 1360. But that was impossible as is clear from the movements of the Delhi Sultan. It may be that the flood occurred in about 1362 and not in 1360 as mentioned by Jonaraja. It is also possible that Shihabu’d-Din met Firuz early in 1360 and then returned to Srinagar at the time of the flood.

2. Neither Jonar. nor any history of Firuz Shah’s reign refers to this conflict or a marriage alliance. B.S. and Haidar Malik’s history too do not mention of the marriage alliance. It occurs only in the later chronicles of Kashmir, which also describe Shihabu’d-Din’s marriage alliances with the rulers of Sind and Kabul. But these are legendary accounts.

3. B.S., f. 10a; Hasan, f. 103a; H.M., f. 107a.

and Fiqh were taught. He was tolerant towards his non-Muslim subjects, and the statement of Persian chroniclers that, towards the end of his reign, he indulged in iconoclastic activities is incorrect. For Jonarāja, who is the earliest and most reliable authority, says that when, owing to the expenses caused by his campaigns his treasury became empty, and Udayaśrī, his minister, suggested to melt the brass image of Buddha and coin the metal into money, the Sultān replied in anger: "Past generations have set up images to obtain fame and earn merit, and you propose to demolish them. Some have obtained renown by setting up images of gods, others by worshipping them, some by duly maintaining them, and some by demolishing them. How great is the enormity of such a deed!"

Like his father and uncle, Shihābu'd-Dīn also built a new town. It was situated on a delightful spot at the confluence of the rivers Jehlam and Sind, and was called Shihābu'd-Dīnpūr after his own name. He erected in it a mosque, and laid out gardens and parks for the benefit of the people. Meanwhile, in 1360, Kashmir suffered from a serious flood which engulfed the whole town of Srinagar. There was a great loss of life and property; and the Sultān had to take refuge in a hill fort. When, therefore, the waters subsided he laid the foundations near Kōh-i-Mārān of a new town which would not be affected by floods and named it Laksminagar after his queen Laksī. One more town which the Sultān built was Shihābpūr, now called Shihāmpūr, and is a part of Srinagar. He is also said to have erected many mosques and monasteries.

Shihābu'd-Dīn was a good judge of men, and took into his service persons known for their ability and integrity. Udayaśrī and Koṭā Bhatta were two of his ministers in whom he placed great confidence.

1. N.A., ff. 29a-b; G.A., f. 110b. 2. B.S., f. 22a; Ḥasan, 107b; H.M., 109b.
3. Jonar., p. 44.
4. Jonar., p. 42; Munich MS., f. 56b; B.S., f. 21b. Shihābu'd-Dīnpūr is now called Shādīpūr (See p. 16 and n. 5, supra).
5. See p. 43n. 2 supra for a discussion of the date of the flood.
7. Munich MS. f. 56; also T.H., cited in Śūfi, i, 139.
Udayaśrī was both his chief and finance minister. But Koṭa Bhaṭṭa after some time renounced the world and retired to a forest. His military commanders were Malik Candra, Śura Lolaka, and Acal Raina, a descendant of Rāmacandra, whom the Sultān gave the village of Chādura as jāgīr.

The last years of Shihābu'd-Dīn’s life were not happy. He became attached to his queen Laksī’s sister’s daughter named Lāsā who had been brought up by her. She was beautiful and clever, and by her intrigues she contrived to alienate the Sultān from his queen, and then secured the exile of their two sons, Hasan Khān and ‘Alī Khān. Shihābu’d-Dīn was very unhappy on account of his separation from the princes, but owing to the great influence which Lāsā exercised over him, he could not rescind his order. However, just before his death in 1373, he wrote to his sons, who were in Delhi, to return to Srīnagar. Only Hasan obeyed the summons, but did not arrive in time to see his father.

Sultān Qutbu’d-Dīn (1373-89)

On the death of Shihābu’d-Dīn his younger brother Hindāl ascended the throne under the title of Qutbu’d-Dīn. He was not only an able ruler, but a man of culture, a poet and a patron of learning. After suppressing the conspiracy of Udayaśrī he founded a new town and named it Qutbu’d-Dīnpūr after himself. Towards the end of his reign a severe famine took place, but the Sultan did his best to relieve the sufferings of the people by distributing among them food, grain, and money.

3. B.S., f. 21b; Hasan, f. 107a; H.M., f. 109a. N.A. adds the name of Sayyid Hasan, the son of Sayyid Tāju’d-Dīn, a cousin of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī, as one of the Sultān’s commanders.
7. It is a part of Srīnagar consisting of the two Mohallas of Langarhatta and Pīr Ḩāji Muḥammad.
Soon after his accession he was called upon to deal with a serious revolt in Lohara. Towards the end of Shihâbu’d-Dîn’s reign, its chief had revolted against his authority, and had refused to pay tribute. The Sultân had sent some troops against him, but they had fled ignominiously. When Qutbu’d-Dîn became ruler he despatched Lolaka, who had also served his brother, to reduce Lohara. Its chief, realising that resistance was futile, decided to surrender, and sent his Brahman agents to negotiate the terms of capitulation with the Kashmirî commander. But the latter, thinking that the chief was not serious in his advances, had the messengers seized and punished as spies. This filled the chief with great anger, and he decided not to surrender, but to die fighting like a Kṣatriya. He and his followers came out of the fort, and attacked the besiegers with arrows and stones. Lolaka was killed, and his forces were repulsed. Thus Lohara remained unsubdued.1

Soon after, Qutbu’d-Dîn was faced with a conspiracy headed by his chief minister Udayaśrî. We have seen that Shihâbu’d-Dîn before his death had summoned his two sons from exile in Delhi. Only Prince Hasan had set out towards Kashmir; but on hearing at Jammu the news of his father’s death, he decided not to proceed further.2 Qutbu’d-Dîn, however, pressed him to return to Srînagar and become his heir-apparent as he had no son of his own.3 Prince Hasan, thereupon, came, and was received with affection and cordiality by the Sultân. But soon after his arrival misunderstandings arose between the uncle and the nephew owing to the machinations of the courtiers. Some of them incited the Sultân to imprison the prince who would sooner or later try to usurp the throne. Others led by Udayaśrî organised a conspiracy to assassinate the Sultân and set up Hasan as ruler. But the plot was discovered. Hasan on the advice of Udayaśrî fled to Loharkôt, and strengthened the rebels. Udayaśrî was however imprisoned; but in consideration of his ability and past services he was released and forgiven on the mediation of Sura Râni, Queen of Qutbu’d-Dîn. In spite of this Udayaśrî tried to escape and join the prince. But he was caught and beheaded. Qutbu’d-Dîn then secured the surrender of Prince Hasan by bribing the garrison, and had him thrown into prison.4

The most important event in the reign of Qutbi’-Dīn was the arrival of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī, commonly known as Amīr-i-Kabīr or ‘Alī-i-Šānī, who was one of the most remarkable personalities of the fourteenth century Muslim world. Born in Hamadān on Monday the 22nd October, 1314, he descended from the famous family of the Alavī Sayyids of the town.1 His father Sayyid Shihābu’-Dīn was a governor of Hamadān. But Sayyid ‘Alī did not show any interest in the affairs of his father; instead he came under the spell of his maternal uncle, Sayyid ‘Alā’-u’Dīn who was a learned Ṣūfī. ‘Alā’-u’Dīn was the first teacher of Sayyid ‘Alī, and taught him Qur’ān at an early age.2 Later, Sayyid ‘Alī became the disciple of Shaikh Sharafu’-Dīn Maḥmūd b. ‘Abdu’llāh Mazdaqānī, the pīr of his uncle.3 He also read under Shaikh Ruknu’-Dīn ‘Ala’-u’Daula and then under Qutbi’-Dīn Nīshāpūrī. After attending on Shaikh Ruknu’-Dīn for six years, he learnt at the feet of Taqīu’-Dīn Dūstī for two years.4 But after the latter’s death he went back to his former teacher Sharafu’-Dīn Maḥmūd who put the finishing touches to his education.5

After completing his education, Sayyid ‘Alī set out on his travels on the advice of his teachers who regarded this as a valuable means of acquiring knowledge. Convinced of its usefulness, he later undertook many travels. According to some authorities he journeyed round the world three times.6 He made several pilgrimages to Mecca, and visited various parts of the Muslim world.7 But the most important of his travels was his visit to Kashmir which had such far-reaching consequences for that country.

Sayyid ‘Alī arrived for the first time in Kashmir in September 1372. After a stay of four months, he proceeded to Mecca on a pilgrimage, and thence returned to Hamadān. The second time he came was in 1379 in the reign of Qutbi’-Dīn. He remained in the Valley this time for two and a half years, and returned to Turkistān via Ladākh. He

2. F.K., ff. 135a-b; also Ja’far, *Khulāṣatul-Manāqib*, f. 90a.
3. Ibid., f. 136a; also Nafahātul-Uns, p. 515; *Riyāzu’-Ārifin*, p. 169; Ḥabību’s- Siyar, iii, p. 87.
5. Nafahātul-Uns, p. 515; Ḥabību’s-Siyar, iii, p. 87.
6. Ibid.
came for the third and last time in 1383, and left after a stay of about a year for Turkistān.¹

The third visit of Sayyid ‘Alī was caused by the third invasion of Persia by Tīmūr in 1383 when he conquered ‘Irāq, and decided to exterminate the ‘Alavī Sayyids of Hamadān who, until his time, had played an important part in local affairs. Sayyid ‘Alī, therefore, left Hamadān with 700 Sayyids, and set out towards Kashmir where he expected to be safe from the wrath of Tīmūr.² On hearing the news that Sayyid ‘Alī was approaching Srinagar, Sultān Qūṭbu’d-Dīn went out with his chief officials and received him with great warmth and respect, and brought him and his followers to the city. Sayyid ‘Alī took up his residence in an inn in ‘Alā’u’d-Dīnpūr. There he constructed a ṣufla (raised floor) where he used to perform his prayers, which were also attended by Qūṭbu’d-Dīn.³

At this time the number of Muslims in Kashmir was very small; a majority of the population being still Hindu. Moreover, in dress, manners, and customs there was nothing to distinguish them from the Hindus.⁴ In ‘Alā’u’d-Dīnpūr, for example, there was a temple which was visited every morning both by the Sultān and his Muslim subjects.⁵ To avert famine Qūṭbu’d-Dīn once performed the yagia, and distributed large gifts to the Brahmans,⁶ and in contravention of Islamic teachings he had two wives who were sisters.⁷ Sayyid ‘Alī denounced these practices and called upon Qūṭbu’d-Dīn to divorce one wife and retain the other. The Sultān, in accordance with the saint’s instructions, divorced the elder sister and re-married the younger named Sūra who became the mother of his two sons, Sikandar and Haibat. He also enjoined the Sultān to wear the dress common in Muslim countries. He held discussions with the Brahman priests and in this way secured many converts to his faith.⁸

Anxious not to antagonise his non-Muslim subjects, Qūṭbu’d-Dīn did not follow every advice of the Sayyid, but he held him in

¹ Ta’rikh-i-Kabīr, pp. 12-4; also Journal Asiatique, ccxl, pp. 61-2.
² Ibid., p. 62.
³ B.S., f. 24a; Hasan, ff. 109b-110a.
⁴ H.M., (B.N.) f. 36b.
⁵ F.K., f. 147a; also S.A., p. 8.
⁶ Jonar., 53.
⁷ F.K., f. 147b.
⁸ Ibid., ff. 147b-48b; Hasan, f. 108b; H.M., 110b.
great reverence, and visited him every day. Sayyid 'Ali gave him a cap which, out of respect, the Sultān always wore under his crown. The subsequent Sultāns followed the same practice until the cap was buried with the body of Fath Shāh according to the latter's will. After the Sayyid had been for about a year in the Valley, he decided to leave. The Sultān tried to persuade him to postpone his departure, but the Sayyid refused, and departed with some of his followers, leaving behind Maulānā Muḥammad Balkhī commonly called Mīr Ḥāji Muḥammad, at the request of the Sultān, to give him guidance in matters relating to the Shari'ā. The Sayyid travelled to Pakhlī, and thence proceeded to Kunār near Kāfiristān. Here he fell seriously ill and died on January 19, 1385, and was buried in Khatlān.

Sayyid 'Alī was a great scholar in Arabic and Persian. He is said to have been the author of more than one hundred works on logic, jurisprudence, philosophy, political science, ethics, Śūfīsm and commentaries. He is said to have written a treatise on the science of physiognomy styled Qiyāfat-nāma. Another work on the same subject called Fi 'Ilmu'l-Qiyāfa has been noticed in the Bodleian Catalogue. Zakhīratu'l-Mulāk is his work on political science and ethics, and contains his ideas on government and the duties of subjects and rulers. Besides being a prolific prose writer, Sayyid 'Alī also wrote Persian poetry.

According to a tradition among the Shiʿītes of Kashmirī, Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī is said to have been a Shiʿīte. Nūrullāh Shūshtarī in his work Majālisu'l-Muʿminin has included him in the list of Shiʿīte saints. But Nūrullāh Shūshtarī is not a sure guide on this question, for he regards all great Śūfīs, philosophers, and scholars of medieval Islam as Shiʿites. A modern scholar also thinks that Sayyid 'Alī was a Shiʿīte on the ground that in some of his poetic compositions he has

1. Hasan, 110a; H.M., 111a. It is said that when a darwēsh heard that the cap had been buried with Fath Shāh's body he prophesied that this would mean the end of the dynasty.
3. See Ethe, i, p. 1021 and Rieu, ii, pp. 835b-36a for the list of his works. Also Journal Asiatique, ccxl, pp. 56 sqq and Yaghmā, iv, No. 8, pp. 337 sqq
4. Ethe, ii, No. 3057.
5. Bodleian, i, No. 1241, 28.
extolled the virtues of ‘Alī and his successors. But this is an insufficient proof, for many Sunnī saints have also written similar panegyrics, glorifying the family of the Prophet. Thus there is no sufficient evidence to support the view that Sayyid ‘Alī was a Shi‘ī; on the other hand, there is reason to believe that he was a Sunnī Muslim. In his work Ṣakhirātul-Mulūk he extensively quotes the traditions on the authority of ‘Āisha, the wife of the Prophet, and the early Caliphs. He has profound reverence for the first four Caliphs whom he regards, next to the Prophet, as the best of creation. In one place he strongly says that it is the duty of every Muslim to spread the principles of Sunnat va al-Jamā‘at. Ja‘far Badakhshī, a disciple of Sayyid ‘Alī, says that he was at first a Hānafī, but later he became a Shāfi‘ī. However, he did not object if any of his followers wished to remain a Hānafī; nor did he oppose the practice of the Hānafī law in Kashmir.

As a Ṣūfī, Sayyid ‘Alī belonged by two intermediaries to the Order of Shaikh Āḥmad ‘Alā‘u’d-Daula Samnānī (d. 1335-36), and attached himself to the Kubraviya Order. But although the Sayyid did not himself found any order, his indirect disciple, Sayyid Muḥammad Nūrbakshī, was the founder in the ninth century of the Nūrbakshiyya sect which played an important role in the religious and literary life of Persia for many centuries. In reality, however, the real value of Sayyid ‘Alī’s work in Persia and Central Asia has yet to be properly assessed. But it appears that he achieved his greatest triumphs in the Valley of Kashmir, where even today after the lapse of more than 450 years his influence continues to be felt.

Sulṭān Sikandar (1389-1413)

Qutbu’d-Dīn was an old man when a son was born to him and was named Sikandar. To celebrate the occasion festivities were held, gifts and jāgīrs were conferred upon the courtiers, and prisoners were released. Later his queen gave birth to another son who was named Haibat.

1. Journal Asiatique, ccxl, pp. 54 sq.; and Yaghmā, iv, No. 8, pp. 337-38. 
2. ‘Alī Hamadānī, Ṣakhirātul-Mulūk, ff. 6a sqq. 
3. Ibid., f. 6b. 
4. Ibid., f. 52b. 
5. Ja‘far Badakhišī, Manqabatul-Jawāhir, ff. 30b-31a; also F.K., f. 147b. 
7. Ibid., p. 56. 
8. Jonar., p. 53; Munich MS., f. 59b. The author of this work calls him Sankar. Perhaps it was an abbreviation of Sikandar. 
On Qutbu'd-Din's death in the year 1389, his eldest son Sikandar ascended the throne; but as he was a minor, his mother Queen Sūra acted as Regent. The chronicles do not describe the events of her Regency clearly and fully. She, however, appears to have been a woman of ability and strong character. She ruled with a firm hand, and put to death her own daughter and son-in-law for conspiring against Sikandar. Meanwhile Rāi Māgre, who was the prime minister, had grown powerful and ambitious. He had Prince Haibat Khān, Sikandar's younger brother, whom he suspected of being his rival, poisoned. Similarly he had a minister named Sāhaka treacherously killed. The chronicles do not tell us if Sūra adopted any measures to check the growing power of Rāi Māgre. But when Sikandar took the reins of government in his hands, he decided to get rid of Rāi Māgre. He sent him with a force to invade Ladākh, hoping that he would be slain there. But instead Rāi Māgre succeeded in conquering Ladākh and returning victorious to Srinagar. And as his relations with the Sulṭān worsened, he raised the banner of revolt. Sikandar first tried to persuade him to give up his refractory conduct, but having failed in the attempt, he sent Laddarāja to attack him from the front, while he himself advanced to attack him from the rear. On the approach of these forces, Rāi Māgre fled without offering any resistance. But he was seized by the chief of Bānīhāl, and sent to Sikandar. The Sulṭān spared his life in consideration of his past services, but threw him into prison where, after sometime, he committed suicide.

In 1398 the storm of Tīmūr's invasion burst on India. He had left Samarqand in April 1398, and encamped on the banks of the Indus on the 20th September, at the very spot where Jalālu'd-Dīn Khawārizm Shāh had fled before Chingīz Khān by crossing the river. Here ambassadors from various countries came to offer their allegiance. Sulṭān Sikandar too, in order to avert the invasion of his kingdom, sent an envoy to the conqueror, professing submission. Tīmūr was satisfied at this, and dismissed the envoy after issuing a farman that Sikandar

1. Munich MS., ff. 59b-60a; Firishta, p. 562.
2. Jonar., (Bo. ed.), No. 668. Dutt's translation is here somewhat confused.
4. Ibid.
should join him with his army at Dīpālpūr.\textsuperscript{1} Sikandar accordingly set out from Srinagar, but on reaching the village of Jabhan he was informed that Timūr’s ministers wanted from him a contribution of 30,000 horse and 100,000 
\textit{durusts} of gold, each weighing two and a half \textit{misqāls}. He therefore returned to Kashmir to collect the sum.\textsuperscript{2}

When Timūr occupied Delhi after annihilating the army of Maḥmūd, the last Tughlaq ruler, he sent Uļjāh Timūr Tufuqdār, Faulād Bahādūr and Zainu’d-Dīn to Sikandar to demand explanation why he had not come to pay his homage.\textsuperscript{3} The envoys proceeded to Srinagar and, after meeting the Sultān, returned, accompanied by his representatives led by Maulānā Nūru’d-Dīn. Meanwhile Timūr had left Delhi, and they joined him in the neighbourhood of Jammu. On February 24, 1399, Nūru’d-Dīn presented a letter from Sikandar, which was written in respectful terms and expressed his desire of waiting on him. On being asked why Sikandar had not proceeded to Dīpālpūr as ordered, he explained that the Sultān had advanced as far as Jabhan, but returned to collect money and horses which he expected would be demanded from him. On hearing this Timūr rebuked his ministers, and told them that the tribute demanded from Sikandar was beyond his means, and that he should have been asked to pay according to his capacity. Timūr then sent the envoys accompanied by Mu’tamad Zainu’d-Dīn with the message that Sikandar should not consider himself bound to fulfil the demands made by his officers, but that he should proceed at once and meet him on the banks of the Indus after twenty-eight days.\textsuperscript{4} On receiving these instructions, Sikandar again set out, but on reaching Bārāmūla, he learnt that Timūr had crossed the Indus and proceeded towards Samarqand. He therefore returned to Srinagar.\textsuperscript{5}

1. Sharafu’d-Dīn ‘Ali Yazdī, \textit{Zafar-nāma}, pp. 46-7; \textit{Malfūgāt}, ff. 283a-b; See also Munich MS., ff. 60b-61b which gives a detailed account of Sikandar’s relations with Timūr.


3. It was with these envoys that Timūr must have sent the two elephants as presents to Sikandar mentioned in B.S., Haldar Malik’s \textit{Ta’rikh} and other chronicles.


5. Munich MS., 61b; Firuṣta, p. 653. It is absurd to say that Timūr took with him Shāhī Khan, the future Zainu’l-‘Abidīn. Shāhī Khan was not even born when Timūr invaded India.
Sikandar did not make any new conquests; he only tried to retain the kingdom left to him by his father. In the early part of his reign he led an expedition against the ruler of Ohind named Fīrūz, who had renounced his authority, and compelled him to recognize his suzerainty and give him his daughter Mīrā in marriage.1

After reducing Fīrūz, Sikandar sent an army under Sūhabhatṭa and Laddarāja to subdue Pāla Deo, Rājā of Jammu, who had not paid him tribute. Realising the futility of resistance, the Rājā submitted, and sent his daughter as a present to Sikandar. But as soon after he again declared his independence, Sikandar sent Sūhabhatṭa and Jasrat Khokar,2 with whom he had entered into an alliance, with a large force against the Rājā. They defeated him and sacked Jammu.

Of the Sultān’s private life the chronicles tell us very little. They only mention that he abstained from wine and other intoxicants, and that on religious grounds he did not listen to music. He appears to have been a man of puritan temperament, and banned all the gay celebrations which were so common a feature of the reigns of Zainu’l-Ābidīn and other Sultāns.3 He also never indulged in extra-marital relations, and kept within the legally prescribed limit. Sikandar first married Mīra, the daughter of the king of Ohind, who became the mother of his three sons, Mīr Khān, Shādī Khān and Bahrām Khān.4 He then married Šobhā Devī5 who gave birth to two sons named Muḥammad and Fīrūz,6 and two daughters who were married to the rulers of Ohind and

2. He was the son of Shaikhā Khokar, the brother of Nuṣrat Khokar. He had been taken away into captivity by Timūr, and returned to the Punjāb on the conqueror’s death. (See for more details about the Khokars, Rose’s *Glossary of the Punjāb Tribes and Castes*, ii, pp. 546–7; and I.A., xxxvi, pp. 1–8.
5. We know from the chronicles that Sikandar married the daughter of the Rājā of Jammu (Janor. Bo. ed. No. 729). Probably she was known as Šobhā Devī. But if she was a different person, then it means that Sikandar had three wives.
6. Fīrūz was Sikandar’s son from Šobhā Rānī and was not an adopted son. (Janor., Bo. ed. Nos. 737, 856; also Janor. p. 64). Janor. p. 59, wrongly says that the sons of Šobhā were adopted children.
Sindh. But Sikandar did not have the same affection for the sons of his second wife as for those by his first. As a result when Fīrūz grew up, Sikandar exiled him from Kashmir in order to prevent a war of succession with his step-brothers. During his last illness he called his three sons in his presence, and advised them to avoid strife and remain united. He then appointed Mīr Khān, the eldest, as his successor and conferred upon him the title of ‘Alī Shāh. He breathed his last in 1413.

Sikandar was an able, generous and brave ruler, and looked after the welfare of his subjects. He put an end to many oppressive taxes like Bāj and Tamghā and others, which had hitherto been realised from the people. He established schools for the education of boys, and founded hospitals where medicine and food were supplied free. He endowed a number of villages for the benefit of travellers, scholars, Sayyids and other deserving persons. The Shaikhu’l-Islām was made responsible for the administration of these endowments.

Sikandar was a great patron of learned men and Sūfis; and during his reign many of them came to Kashmir from Persia and Central Asia. The Sultan treated them with respect, and gave them jāgīrs which could be inherited by their descendants. Some of the more prominent among those who entered the Valley during this period were Sayyid Hasan Shirāzī, formerly Qāzī in Shiraz, whom Sikandar made Qāzī of Kashmir; Sayyid Aḥmad from Isfahān, who was the author of many books; Sayyid Muḥammad from Khwārizm who was a good poet; Sayyid Jalālu’d-Dīn, a saint from Bukhārā, who came with his followers; Bābā Ḥājī Adham, and his disciple Bābā Ḥasan, the logician.

3. Ibid., No. 856; Munich MS., f. 63a.
5. T.A., iii, 433; T.H., ii, f. 89b. Bāj had been collected under Shihābu’d-Dīn (BS., f. 19a). Tamghā was a demand in excess of the land revenue, but Bāj was simply a tax or toll. Tamghā seems to have been introduced into Kashmir from Persia or Turkistān. Bāj and Tamghā were levled on horses, cows, goats, silken clothes etc., (Wilson’s Glossary pp. 5 sq.).
6. B.S., f. 34b. These charitable institutions survived until the seventeenth century.
7. Ibid.
from Balkh. Also at this time came Sayyid Muḥammad Hamadānī, the son of the great Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī. He was born in Khatlān in the year 1572, and was twelve years of age when his father died. Sayyid 'Alī left a testament for his son with Maulānā Sarāī to be sent to Khwaja Ishāq Khatlānī and Maulānā Nūru’d-Dīn Badakhshī, two of his most prominent disciples. In this will Sayyid 'Alī advised his son to travel extensively when he grew up, for this would help him to build up his character, broaden his mind and develop his personality.

Muḥammad Hamadānī read under Khwaja Ishāq and Maulānā Nūru’d-Dīn, and when he attained the age of sixteen the testament of his father was given to him. Muḥammad Hamadānī visited many places, and then in 1393, at the age of twenty-two, he arrived in Kashmīr with three hundred Sayyids and learned men. He wrote for Sultān Sikandar Risāla-i-Sikandarī, a work on Ṣūfism, in Persian. He was also the author of a book on logic in Arabic. He was greatly revered by the Sultān who regarded him as his teacher and guide. He converted a number of Hindus to Islām, but the most important man to embrace Islām under his influence was Sūhabhaṭṭa, Sikandar’s chief minister and commander-in-chief, whom he named Saifu’d-Dīn, and after the death of his first wife Bibī Tāj Khāṭūn, the daughter of Sayyid Ḥusain Baihaqī, married his daughter. Muḥammad Hamadānī stayed in Kashmīr for nearly twelve years. He left Kashmīr owing to his differences with Sayyid Muḥammad Ḥiṣārī and proceeded on a pilgrimage to Mecca. From there he returned to Khatlān where he died on April 30, 1450, and was buried near his father.

Sikandar was a great builder. He founded the town of Sikandarpūr, and there built a magnificent palace and a grand Jāmī’ Masjid.

1. Ibid., 2. F.K., f. 155a.
3. Ibid., f. 156a; B.S., f. 25b; S.A., p. 18. 4. Ibid.; H.M., f. 112b.
5. S.A., p. 27; Miskīn, Ta’rikh-i-Kabīr, p. 25, says Muḥammad Hamadānī stayed for 22 years.
6. Ibid.; B.S., f. 36b; Da‘ūd Mishkātī, Aṣṣarw‘l-Abrār, f. 45a. See also S.A., pp. 18 sqq. for Muḥammad Hamadānī’s life in Kashmīr. The date of the Sayyid’s death as 809/1377-8 given in W.K., f. 20b, is incorrect.
7. It was situated at the foot of the Kōh-l-Māran. It is now called Nauhatta and is a part of Srinagar.
The latter’s architect was Şadru’d-Dîn Khurâsânî. It had 372 wooden columns, each 40 yards in height and 6 yards in circumference. There were four archways, each of which contained 32 of these columns.¹ Sikandar also built a mosque in the town of Bijbehāra, and laid the foundation-stone of an ‘Id-gâh in Srînagar which was completed by his son Sultân ‘Alî Shâh.² Besides the mosques, he built khâqânâhs (hospices) in the villages of Vachi and Trâl³ and in the town of Sîpûr.⁴ Sayyid ‘Alî Ḥamadânî had built a raised floor in ‘Alâ’u’d-Dînûr for the congregational prayers. Sikandar constructed there in 799/1396-97 a hospice known as Khâqânâh-Mu’alâ. He endowed it with the three villages of Vachi, Shaura, and Nunahwânî, and appointed Mâlânâ Muḥammad Sa’îd as trustee.⁵ Sikandar also constructed another mosque near the spring of Bavan. It was two-storeyed with a beautiful garden around it, having all kinds of flower plants and fruit trees. The place was so pleasant and picturesque that Sikandar used to spend his time there in spring. His example was followed by the subsequent rulers of Kashmir until the time of Muḥammad Shâh.⁶

Sikandar was the first Sultân of Kashmir to enforce the Shari‘a with great strictness in the country. He banned the use of wine and other intoxicants, and prohibited gambling, the dancing of women and the playing of musical instruments like the flute, lute, and guitar, allowing only the playing of drum and fife for military purposes.⁷ And in order

---

1. B.S., f. 35a; H.M., 114a.
2. B.S., f. 35a; Hasan, f. 113b; H.M., f. 114a; see also T.H., i, 140b sq.
3. Vachi is a village situated at the eastern foot of Zainapûr Udâr. Trâl is a small town situated in Lat. 33° 56’ Long. 75° 10’ on the sloping plateau at the foot of the mountains east of the Volur pargana of which it is a Tahsîl station.
4. T.H., i, ff. 140b sqq.
5. B.S., f. 35b; T.H., i, 113b-114a. According to a tradition Muḥammad Hamadânî gave a Lâl-i-Badakhshân to Sikandar in return for these villages. But this seems to be unreliable for the Sultân could not have accepted the lâl as payment for the endowment. Futuhî-i-Kubravîya says it was given as a present to Sikandar by the Sayyid.
6. B.S., 34b; Hasan, ff. 114a-b; H.M., f. 114b.
7. B.S., f. 26a; Junar, pp. 65-7; H.M., f. 113b.
Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā, Srinagar

Jāmi' Masjid, Srinagar
to see that the Islamic law was properly enforced, he established the office of the Shaikhu'l-Islām. These measures were adopted by Sikandar under the influence of Sayyid Muḥammad Hamadānī. It was also due to his advice that the Sultan imposed two pāls of silver as Jīzāya upon the non-Muslims, and prohibited Ṣāṭī and the application of qashqa (tilak—a religious mark made by the Hindus on the forehead).\(^1\)

However, the chief person who prevailed upon Sikandar to adopt an intolerant attitude towards the non-Muslims was Saifu'd-Dīn, who was in this respect his evil genius. The Sultan at first resisted him, but in the end gave in, and allowed himself to be used as an instrument of his minister’s religious fanaticism. Saifu'd-Dīn, with the zeal of a new convert, called upon the Brahmans to embrace Islām. As a result some became Muslims. Those who refused had to pay Jīzāya.\(^2\) Others who would not or could not pay, decided to leave Kashmir and take refuge in India. When Saifu'd-Dīn heard of this, he ordered the guards on the frontiers not to allow any one to leave the Valley without a permit. But in spite of these restrictions many Brahmans succeeded in escaping from the country.\(^3\)

In their misplaced zeal for their faith, Sikandar and Saifu'd-Dīn were also responsible for the destruction of some images and temples. But the statement of Jonarāja that there was no village or town where temples were not razed to the ground, is fantastic.\(^4\) It must be remembered that as Saifu'd-Dīn had been a Brahman, Jonarāja resented his conversion to Islām and therefore magnified his iconoclastic activities. The Muslim chroniclers also speak of the wholesale destruction of temples, but they distort facts owing to their anxiety to represent Sikandar and his minister as champions of Islām. The falseness of their view is evident from the fact that if we add up the list, given by them, of temples allegedly destroyed, then not a single one should have remained standing. In reality, however, even over a hundred years after Sikandar, a large number of temples were still in existence in the Valley.

1. Jonar., p. 60; also Jonar., (Bo. ed.) No. 1077; Munich MS., f. 64b; B.S., f. 26a. For more details about Jīzāya see Chapter XI.
2. H.M., f. 113b; Jonar., p. 60, says the Hindus had to pay heavy fines for retaining their religion. This fine was nothing else but Jīzāya.
4. Ibid., p. 60.
Haidar Dughlat, who ruled Kashmir for ten years, writing in about 1546 observed: “First and foremost among the wonders of Kashmir stand her idol temples. In and around Kashmir there are more than 150 temples ….. In the rest of the world there is not to be seen, or heard of, one building like this. How wonderful that there should (here) be a hundred and fifty of them.” Abü’l-Fażıl also wrote that some of the temples were in a state of perfect preservation; and similarly Jahângîr remarked that “the lofty idol temples, which were built before the manifestation of Islam, are still in existence.”

Thus the iconoclastic activities of Sikandar have been greatly exaggerated. In many instances it was not Sikandar who pulled down the temples, but what really happened was that when the inhabitants of a certain locality embraced Islam, the temple was converted into a mosque, or it went into ruins due to sheer neglect. Many suffered because of earthquakes. But these factors were ignored, and Sikandar was held responsible for any temple that was found in a crumbling state. Some writers have even gone to the extent of suggesting that he employed gunpowder to destroy temples. Stein, however, observes: “The early use of gunpowder in Kashmir has been doubted by others, and I believe rightly. Earthquakes and the imperfect fitting of the stones, observable in all Kashmirian temples, are sufficient to explain the complete ruin, notwithstanding the massive character of the materials.”

Another writer similarly observes: “It is scarcely possible to imagine that the state of ruin to which they have been reduced (referring in particular to the temples of Avantipûr), has been the work

2. A.A., ii, 124.  
3. Tuzuk-i-Jahângîrî, ii, 150.  
4. Lawrence, Valley, pp. 162, 213.  
5. Cited in Lawrence, Valley, p. 190 n. 1; see also J.A.S.B., xlv, p. 64, where Maclagen in his article “On Early Asiatic Weapons“ says that gunpowder was not known in the time of Sikandar, and that the destruction was caused by earthquakes and Time. He illustrates his view by referring to the temples of Pâyech and Mûrtand which, in about a quarter of a century since Cunningham expressed his view, have suffered owing to the fingers of Time and the moderate movements of the earth. The earthquakes of June and July 1828 caused considerable destruction of house property in Srinagar, and large masses of rocks are said to have been detached from the hill sides and thrown down.
of time or even of men, as their solidity is fully equal to that of the most massive monuments of Egypt. Earthquakes must have been the chief agents in their overthrow.”

**Sultān ‘Ali Shāh (1413-20)**

Sikandar’s eldest son, Mīr Khān, who ascended the throne under title of ‘Alī Shāh, showed no ability as a ruler. He was weak and fickle-minded, and allowed himself to be dominated by Šaifu’d-Dīn who continued as chief minister. Other ministers who enjoyed ‘Alī Shāh’s confidence, were Laddī Māgre and Sānkhar, the physician. But this roused the jealousy of Šaifu’d-Dīn who decided to destroy them. His plan was to strike at his rivals when all of them, including the sons of Laddī Māgre, particularly the eldest Mahmūd Māgre, the governor of Bāngil, would be present at the capital. To lull them into a false sense of security he began to bestow favours on Laddī Māgre’s another son Tājī Māgre and to consult him on all important matters. He then invited Muḥammad Māgre to Srinagar under the pretext of seeking his advice. But the latter suspected treachery and fled. When Šaifu’d-Dīn heard of this, he had Laddī Māgre, who was ill, his remaining sons and Šānkhar, treacherously seized and thrown into prison. Meanwhile Muḥammad Māgre had taken refuge with Govind, chief of the Khaṣas, who lived in the neighbourhood of Ohind, and whom he regarded as his friend. But Govind betrayed him to Šaifu’d-Dīn’s men. Muḥammad Māgre was seized, shackled, and imprisoned in the fort of Bīru. He, however, succeeded in making good his escape through the efforts of his foster-brothers. Šaifu’d-Dīn became alarmed at this news, and he had Laddī Māgre put to death. Laddī Māgre being a popular man, his execution caused considerable grief to the people.

We have seen that Sikandar had exiled his son Fīrūz. But after the Sultān’s death, the latter returned to Kashmir to contest the throne with the support of the Turkish troops, supplied to him by the ruler of

---

1. Trebeck, ii, p. 150.  
2. Jonar., p. 61; Munich MS., f. 66a.  
3. It is a pargana in Kamrāj. Its old name was Bhangil. But by the time of Haidar Mallk its name had been changed to Bāngil.  
4. Bīru is Bahurūpa of Jonarāja. It is a pargana on the south-west side of the Valley and is situated in Lat. 34° 1’ Long. 74° 38’.  
5. Jonar., pp. 61 sqq; Munich MS., ff. 65a-b.
Hindustān. Saifu’d-Dīn at once despatched Laddarāja and Gaurabhaṭṭa who completely routed Fīrūz. In reward for their services, Saifu’d-Dīn appointed Laddarāja as Mīr Bakhshī, and Gaurabhaṭṭa as governor of Kamrāj.

Soon after, however, Laddarāja, having incurred the displeasure of Saifu’d-Dīn, tried to flee the country. But he was seized by Hamsabhaṭṭa, Saifu’d-Dīn’s brother, and thrown into prison. Meanwhile, Saifu’d-Dīn died of consumption, and his death was followed by a struggle for power between Hamsabhaṭṭa and Gaurabhaṭṭa whom he had entrusted with the government before his death. Hamsabhaṭṭa, in order to strengthen himself against his rivals, released Laddarāja, and with his help defeated and killed Gaurabhaṭṭa. At the same time realising that Laddarāja might prove a dangerous rival, he assassinated him. In this way he became the most powerful man in the kingdom.

There was, however, one man whom he regarded as a thorn in his side. This was Shāhī Khān, ‘Alī Shāh’s younger brother, who was not prepared to submit to him. Hamsabhaṭṭa, therefore, made up his mind to destroy him too. But Shāhī Khān came to know of it, and with the consent of ‘Alī Shāh and the support of the Thākurs, he had him assassinated in the ‘Īd-gāh on the day of ‘Īdu’z-Zuha. ‘Alī Shāh, who had been chafing under the yoke of Hamsabhaṭṭa, was glad at his fall, and in his place appointed Shāhī as prime minister. This appointment was hailed by the people, for the young Prince had endeared himself to them by his courage, intelligence, and tact.

Not long after these events, ‘Alī Shāh, who was of a religious bent of mind, decided to give up his throne and go on a pilgrimage to Mecca, and to spend the rest of his days there. Shāhī Khān, however, tried to dissuade him from this step by telling him that serving the people was

1. The name of this ruler is not mentioned in the chronicles. But perhaps he was Khīizr Khān, the founder of the Sayyid dynasty, who was ruling Delhi at this time.
2. Jonar., p. 65; Munich MS., f. 66a.
3. Ibid., 66b; Jonar., p. 69.
4. Thakkura was a title of the small nobility of Rājpūts from the hill territories to the south of Kashmir. (Stein, BK. VII, No. 290n; Lawrence, Valley, p. 306).
5. Jonar., p. 69; Munich MS., f. 67a.
the best form of devotion to God. But his advice had no effect, and 'Ali Shāh left Kashmir after entrusting the kingdom to him, and giving him the title of Zainu'l-ʿAbidin.¹

From Srinagar 'Ali Shāh proceeded to Jammu to bid farewell to its rāja who was his father-in-law. On the way interested persons pointed out the difficulties and privations of the journey to Mecca; and, when he reached Jammu, his father-in-law disapproved of his decision.² 'Ali Shāh, who never possessed a strong will, yielded to these criticisms. He gave up the idea of going on a pilgrimage, and returned to Kashmir via Rajauri, accompanied by the armies of the rulers of Jammu and Rajauri to claim his throne.³ Jonarāja states that Zainu'l-ʿAbidin was angry with 'Ali Shāh for having brought a foreign army, but that the affection for his brother got the better of him, and so he gave up the throne and left Kashmir.⁴ Another chronicler says that since Zainu'l-ʿAbidin had held the kingdom as a trust for 'Ali Shāh, he relinquished it in his favour and left the Valley.⁵ But the truth appears to be that Zainu'l-ʿAbidin retired without offering any resistance because he did not find himself strong enough to fight 'Ali Shāh. He proceeded to Sīālkot and sought the help of Jasrat Khokar.⁶ The latter promised to support him, but this angered 'Ali Shāh who set out to punish the Khokar chief. The ruler of Jammu, however, advised him not to descend from the mountains until he had arrived with his army, for the Khokars were clever fighters.⁷ But 'Ali Shāh ignored him and continued his march. The result was that he was defeated by Jasrat at Thanna.⁸

After this victory Zainu'l-ʿAbidin proceeded to Srinagar, where he was welcomed by the people. This however did not end the civil war. Jonarāja does not record the subsequent events, but from a study of the Persian chronicles it appears that 'Ali Shāh reorganized his army, and, with the support of the Jammu forces, invaded the Valley to recover the

¹. Jonar., pp. 70-1. Jonarāja does not say that Mecca was 'Ali Shāh's destination, but it is mentioned by the Persian chronicles.
². Jonar., p. 71; Hasan, f. 115a; H.M., f. 115a-b.
³. Munich MS., f. 68a; T.A., iii, 434.
⁵. Munich MS., f. 68a.
⁶. Ibid., f. 68b; T.A., iii, 434.
⁸. Yahya as-Sirhindī, Taʿrīkh-i-Mubārak Shāhī, p. 194; T.A., i, 271.
throne. Zainu'l-Ābidīn, hearing of this, advanced via Bārmūla, and defeated his brother at Uri.¹ According to Ḥaidar Malik, ‘Alī Shāh was captured and imprisoned in the fort of Pakhlī where he died after a few years.² But Śrīvara, who is a contemporary authority, says that he was seized by Jasrat and put to death by him. He does not state if this was done by the orders of Zainu'l-Ābidīn, but it is unlikely that Jasrat should have carried out the execution without the consent of the Sultān, his friend and patron.³

1. H.M., f. 115b; Hasan, f. 115a; N.K., f. 28b.  
2. H.M., f. 115b.  
3. Śrīv, BK. I, Chapt. lli, No. 106 (Bo. ed.).
CHAPTER V

ZAINU’L-ĀBIDĪN THE GREAT (1420-70)

Of all the Sultāns who sat on the throne of Kashmir, Zainu’l-Ābidīn was undoubtedly the greatest. He ushered in a period of nearly half a century of peace, prosperity and benevolent rule for his people. He introduced many arts and crafts for which Kashmir has become famous ever since. He promoted learning, music, and painting, and made Kashmir the centre of a great culture. He won the loyalty and affection of his subjects who called him Bud Shāh or the Great King, a name by which he is remembered even today by the people of Kashmir. He acquired a halo in popular imagination which still surrounds his name in spite of the lapse of nearly five hundred years.

Conquests

The reign of Zainu’l-Ābidīn, unlike that of his grandfather Shihābu’d-Dīn, is not noted for any stirring military exploits, for he was not inclined to wage wars for self-aggrandisement; his main interest lay in developing the arts of peace. At the same time he was not prepared to give up his claims to the territories which had been reduced by his grandfather and were of strategic and commercial importance to Kashmir. Ladākh and Baltīstān had been conquered by Shihābu’d-Dīn, but they had become independent after his death. Although Sikandar had reconquered them, they had again asserted their independence during the weak rule of ‘Alī Shāh. Zainu’l-Ābidīn, therefore, collected a large army in the pargana of Lār, and set out accompanied by his commanders, Hilmet Raina, Aḥmad Raina and Muḥammad Māgre. Having crossed the Zōjī-Lā Pass he compelled the Ladākhī chief ‘aBumlīde IV to acknowledge his sovereignty. He then secured the allegiance of the Baltī ruler.¹ The account in Persian chronicles that in this expedition

¹. B.S., ff. 50a-51a; Ḥasan, f. 121b; H.M., f. 121a. See for more details about ‘aBumlīde, Francke, History of Western Tibet, pp. 75ssq. But the name of the Baltī chief who was Zainu’l-Ābidīn’s contemporary is not known.
Zainu’l-‘Abidin met the ruler of Kāshgar in Ladākh, and that although his forces were numerically inferior, he defeated his rival who was in occupation of the province, appears to be spurious, for it is not supported by Jonarāja who is a contemporary authority for this period. This tradition is in reality nothing but a repetition of an earlier encounter between Sultān Shihābu’d-Dīn and the ruler of Kāshgar. However, it was probably in the course of this campaign that Zainu’l-‘Abidin invaded Guge,¹ and in the village of Shel² saved a gold image of Buddha from the hands of some tribal people, whom Francke wrongly regards as Muslims.³ He also captured the town of Kūlū which was in the possession of the Ladākhīs (Bhauṭtas). However, it appears that, shortly after, these territories renounced the authority of the Sultān, for we find that in 1451 he had to send his eldest son Adham Khān to conquer Ladākh;⁴ and then again, between 1460 and 1470, he himself led the expedition.⁵ But the details of this last campaign have not been recorded in the chronicles.

Zainu’l-‘Abidin next directed his attention towards Ohind whose chief had been subdued by Sikandar, but had declared his independence in the reign of ‘Alī Shāh. Although he was supported by the ruler of Sindh, the Sultān defeated him and established his suzerainty over him.⁶

Relations with Foreign Countries

Zainu’l-‘Abidin’s reputation for justice and patronage of art and culture had spread far and wide. This led to the exchange of embassies and the establishment of friendly relations between him and the rulers of various countries. Thus Mīrzā Abū Sa‘īd (1452-67), the Timūrid ruler of Khurāsān and Transoxiana, sent an envoy to the Sultān with Arab horses and Bactrian camels as presents. Zainu’l-‘Abidin in return

---

¹. Guge lies north of Garhwāl and Kumaun and is now part of Tibet.
². Shel is 8 miles south-east of Leh on the Indus. It is Shaya of Jonaraja.
³. Jonar., (Bo. ed.), Nos. 1106-7. Francke in I.A., xxxvii, p. 188, identifies the mlecchas with the Muslims. But this is incorrect, for it is unlikely if there were any Muslims in Shel at that time, or at any rate, even if there were any, they could not have been strong enough to seize the gold image of Buddha. Jonarāja does not give the date of the event, but probably it took place between 1430 and 1440. (See I.A., xxxvii, p. 188).
⁴. See infra, p. 74.
⁵. Jonar., p. 103; I.A., xxxvii, p. 188.
⁶. Jonar., (Bo. ed.), No. 1105.
sent him saffron, paper, musk, shawls, crystal cups and other articles.¹
According to the Nawādiru'l-Akhbār, Shāh Rukh (1404-47), son of Timūr, who was a great patron of literature and science, sent Zainu'l-Ābidīn elephants and precious stones. The Sultaṉ thanked him and sent presents in return, but wrote that he would have appreciated it better, if he had received learned men and books instead of precious stones. Shāh Rūkh, thereupon, sent him six learned scholars, and a number of manuscripts.²

Zainu'l-Ābidīn had friendly relations with the rulers of other countries, too. The Sharīf of Mecca, and the kings of Gilān and Egypt sent him presents.³ Dongar Singh, Rājā of Gwalior, hearing that the Sultaṉ was interested in music, sent him valuable works on the subject. After his death his son Kīrat Singh maintained friendly relations with the Sultaṉ.⁴ There was also an exchange of embassies and gifts between Zainu'l-Ābidīn and the rulers of Sindh, Bengal, and Tibet, Sultaṉ Maḥmūd of Gujarāt, Maḥmūd I of Mālwa, and Buhlūl Lodi.⁵

Zainu'l-Ābidīn’s relations with Jasrat continued to be as friendly as before. Jasrat had carved out for himself an independent principality in the Punjāb on his return from Samarqand. But being very ambitious, he wanted to extend it.⁶ As Zainu'l-Ābidīn was indebted to him for his help in the fight against 'Ali Shāh, he gave him military assistance. Jasrat, taking advantage of the weakness of Mubārak Shāh, the Sayyid ruler of Delhi, conquered the whole of the Punjāb. But his attempt to conquer Delhi failed.⁷ Alarmed at his activities, Mubārak Shāh sent a force to crush him. Jasrat being defeated, fled to Kashmir, and received the protection of Zainu'l-Ābidīn.⁸

Rebellions

In the early part of the reign there was a rising led by Pāṇḍū Chak, the leader of the Chaks. He organised a strike as a protest

1. Munich MS., f. 73a; T.A., iii, 440.
2. N.A., ff. 46b-47a; also G.A., f. 126b.
3. Sṛīv., p. 151; Munich MS., f. 73a; T.A., iii, 440.
4. Munich MS., f. 73a; T.A., iii, 440.
against the corvée system, so that when Zainu’l-‘Abidin visited Kamrāj, he found that no unskilled workers were available. The Sultān, however, forced them to work. But when he left, Pāṇḍū and his followers set fire to the palace and other government buildings in Kamrāj. Fearing retaliation, Pāṇḍū sent away his family and the families of his followers to Drāva, while he himself fled to the hills of Trahgām. When the Sultān heard that his palace had been burnt he sent a force which destroyed all the houses of the Chaks in Trahgām. Pāṇḍū escaped to Drāva and joined his family there. Meanwhile, the Sultān rebuilt the palace. But Pāṇḍū returned, and having again set fire to the palace, withdrew to Drāva. Zainu’l-‘Abidin, thereupon, decided to attack Pāṇḍū in his retreat. He first won over the inhabitants of Drāva by giving them money and land, and then, with their help, succeeded in capturing Pāṇḍū. The latter along with the members of his family were brought before the Sultān, who ordered the execution of all men fit to bear arms. Only women and children were spared, and sent to live in the distant village of Trahgām. One of the sons of Pāṇḍū was Husain Chak, a posthumous child, who became the father of ten sons.

The last twenty years of the Sultān’s reign were disturbed by the rebellion of his sons, Adham, Ḥāji, and Bahrām. Zainu’l-‘Abidin had designated, according to an earlier precedent in the family, his younger brother Maḥmūd as heir to the throne. But as Maḥmūd died, he proclaimed Ḥāji heir-apparent. Since this aroused the jealousy of Adham, the eldest son, the Sultān, apprehending danger, thought it inexpedient to keep the brothers together at Srinagar. He, therefore, in 1451, sent Adham to invade Ladākh which had become independent under its king bLo-gros-mchog-ldan (1440-70). The prince was victorious in the campaign, and having conquered the province, returned to the capital with the booty which he placed at the feet of the Sultān.

1. Trahgām or Trigamma is a big village in the Lōlāb Valley. It is about 25 miles north-west of Bārāmūla. It should not be confused with Trigām which is in Paraspūr pargana opposite the junction of the Jehlam and the Sind.
2. This was the name for the Kishangangā Valley from below Shardi as far as Karnāv.
3. B.S., ff. 52a-53a.
4. Munich MS., f. 74a; T.H., li, f. 103b.
5. Srīv., pp. 105-6; Munich MS., f. 74b; I.A., xxxvii, p. 189.
The latter then despatched Ḥājī to Lohara as its governor. There in 1452, at the instigation of some of his evil counsellors, Ḥājī decided to invade Kashmir and usurp the throne. His wise and loyal officers, however, dissuaded him against such a course, pointing out that the advice to revolt was given by interested persons who were anxious to return home to their families, and that it would be a mistake to take up arms against the Sultān who was too powerful to be defeated. But Ḥājī ignored their suggestions, and, with the help of the Khāsas, entered Kashmir via Hirapūr.\(^1\) Hearing of this the Sultān set out with his army. He was however anxious to avoid the conflict, and so he sent a Brahman messenger to persuade his son to give up his refractory conduct. But Ḥājī's soldiers cut off the Brahman's ears. When Ḥājī came to know of it he felt ashamed at the behaviour of his men, and decided to make peace with his father. But his officers opposed him, reminding him that they had begged him not to rebel against the Sultān, but he had ignored their advice. If he were now to make peace, while he himself would be reconciled to the Sultān, they would be left in the lurch and suffer. Owing to this attitude of his followers, Ḥājī had no other alternative except to prepare for battle with his father.\(^2\)

Meanwhile, the Brahman agent had returned to the Sultān. When the latter saw his condition, he was filled with great anger, and at once moved his army in order to punish Ḥājī and his followers. He encountered the rebels at Pallashilā.\(^3\) The fight continued from morning till sunset, and led to a great loss of life. In the end Ḥājī's forces were defeated and fled, pursued by Adham, who killed many of them. He wanted to continue the pursuit and seize Ḥājī, but he was recalled by his father. Ḥājī, having collected the remnants of his army, escaped to Hirapūr and thence to Bhimbar.\(^4\) The Sultān returned to Srīnagar and there built a minaret of the heads of the enemy, and ordered the execution of the prisoners of war.\(^5\) He then

2. Ibid., 109-10; Munich MS., f. 74b.  
3. It is a karēwa near Shupiyan at a distance of about 33 miles south of Srīnagar on the route to Rajaurī. In the time of the Mughals there was an inn where travellers changed horses and halted.  
4. Munich MS., ff. 75a-b; T.A., iii, 442-3; also Jonar., 112 sqq.  
5. Munich MS., f. 75a; T.A., iii, 443.
entrusted Adham to make inquiries about the conduct of those persons who had instigated Ḥājī to revolt. Adham confiscated their properties, and inflicted great sufferings on their families. In consequence many persons out of fear deserted Ḥājī and went over to Adham. The Sultān now proclaimed Adham his heir-apparent, and appointed him governor of Kamrāj.  

Soon after these events, in 1460, Kashmir was subjected to a severe famine caused by a heavy fall of snow which destroyed the rice crop. This brought great misery to the people who were compelled to subsist on roots and leaves; and as a result large numbers died of starvation. The price of rice rose from 300 dinārs to 1,500 dinārs per kharwār; and even at that price it was not easily available. Taking advantage of the scarcity, grain merchants made huge profits. The Sultān was greatly distressed, and did his best to alleviate the sufferings of his subjects. He distributed rice from his own stores, and, after the famine was over, he cancelled the debts which the people had incurred in order to buy rice. Many persons had pawned their valuables in exchange for grain. The merchants were ordered to return the articles to their owners and receive money for the grain which they had supplied. 

Hardly had the inhabitants of the Valley recovered from the effects of the famine when, two years later, they fell victim to another calamity. This was the flood caused by a severe rainfall. Men and beasts alike perished, and thousands of houses were destroyed. Fortunately, however, the rice crop was not affected. The Sultān, apprehending the recurrence of a similar calamity, built on the high banks of the Jehlām the town of Zainatilak, near Andarkōt, which had been destroyed due to the flood. It was in this new city that Jai Singh of Rajaurī was received by the Sultān, and appointed Rājā of the kingdom of Rajaurī. 

Zainu'l-ʿĀbidīn had hoped that with the appointment of Adham as heir-apparent and governor of Kamrāj, all the internecine troubles would be over. But he was disillusioned. Adham spent his time in hunting or in the society of women. He was cruel, vain, and rapacious, and oppressed the inhabitants of Kamrāj. He resumed the lands which

1. Ibid. 
2. Jonar., pp. 117-19; Munich MS., 75b 
had been granted by the Sultan, and robbed the people of their wealth. Following his example, his officials also exploited the inhabitants, and indulged in rape and plunder.1 When the Sultan learnt of this he felt grieved, and admonished Adham. But the latter instead of listening to him raised the banner of revolt. He arrived at Qutbu’d-Dīnpūr, and then marched to attack his father in Zainagīr. Taken by surprise, the Sultan tried to persuade him to give up his refractory conduct. Wiser counsels prevailed, and Adham returned to Kamrāj.2

Zainu’l-Abidīn was not certain if Adham would long remain loyal and peaceful, and so he wrote to Ḥājī to immediately come to his assistance. But before Ḥājī could arrive, Adham attacked Sōpūr in 1459. Its governor offered resistance, but Adham defeated and killed him and destroyed the town.3 Hearing of this, the Sultan sent a large army to Sōpūr. After heavy fighting Adham was routed. And as his followers were fleeing across the Jehlam at Sōpūr, the bridge gave way, and three hundred of them were drowned in the river. After this the Sultan himself proceeded to Sōpūr and consoled the inhabitants on their sufferings.4

Meanwhile the Sultan, learning of the arrival of Ḥājī in the neighbourhood of Bārāmūla, at once despatched Bahram to receive him. The two brothers greeted and embraced each other, and then proceeded to join their father.5 When Adham came to know of this he became panic-stricken, and having crossed the Indus, sought refuge in the Sind Valley.6 Zainu’l-Abidīn returned to Srinagar with Ḥājī who was once again declared heir-apparent.7 His followers were forgiven for their past conduct and were given khil’ats and jāgīrs by the Sultan.8 Of fair complexion, polite, modest and energetic, Ḥājī was a favourite of Zainu’l-Abidīn.9 The Sultan, however, did not like Ḥājī’s excessive addiction to wine which was undermining his health. He tried to persuade him to give up the vice, but in vain.10 In consequence he

1. Ibid., 125-6; Munich MS., f. 75b.
2. Srīv., 126-8; Munich MS., f. 75b.
4. Munich MS., f. 75b; T.A., iii, 444.
5. Munich MS., 76a; T.A., iii, 444.
6. It is a narrow valley opening into the north side of Kashmir, a few miles north-west of Srinagar. It lies between Lat. 75° 30’ Long. 74° 50’.
7. Srīv., p. 131; Munich MS., f. 76a.
8. Ibid.; Srīv., p. 137.
9. Ibid., p. 132.
10. Ibid., pp. 158-60; Munich MS., ff. 76a-b.
became disgusted with him. Some of the nobles, who favoured Adham, taking advantage of this state of affairs invited him to come to Srinagar. Adham thereupon immediately set out towards Kashmir. But Hasan, Ḥāji’s son, who was in Pūnch, marched to Rajaurī to intercept him. A severe engagement took place between the uncle and the nephew. Hasan was defeated and Adham reached Srinagar safely. Here the brothers were reconciled to each other, and both Ḥāji and Bahrām welcomed Adham. But this did not improve matters, for their reconciliation was more apparent than real. Moreover, Adham did not receive the welcome he and his supporters had expected from the Sultān. This was because the latter, having had bitter experience of both Adham and Ḥāji, had begun to bestow favours upon his youngest son, Bahrām, whom he wanted to declare as his successor. Zainu’l-ʿAbidīn therefore called him to his presence, and told him that he should not trust Adham who would never forget the part he had played in the war against him. He also warned him against Hasan who, he pointed out, would be interested more in his own son ʿAbdūr-ʿRahmān than in him. But Bahrām paid no heed to his father’s words, and replied that he was not prepared to give up the society of Ḥāji who would always help and protect him. This reply came as a great blow to the Sultān, for he had pinned his last hopes on Bahrām. He became so disgusted with his sons that he refused to nominate any of them as his successor. Although his ministers advised him to declare one of them as heir-apparent, he remained adamant. Adham, the Sultān pointed out, was a miser and was surrounded by unscrupulous advisers; Ḥāji was a drunkard, while Bahrām was licentious. Under the circumstance, the Sultān thought, his sons should themselves decide the question of succession by force of arms after his death. The one who was the strongest would naturally secure the throne. It was the question of survival of the fittest.

Meanwhile, as the Sultān had foreseen, the facade of friendship between the brothers began to crack. Bahrām in order to promote his

---

1. Adham had gone to the Sind Valley and from there had moved on to Outer Hills.
2. Sūrī, pp. 160-1; Munich M.S., f. 76b.
4. Ibid., 162-3.
own interest tried to foment dissension between Adham and Ḥājī. After succeeding in separating them, he made common cause with Ḥājī and plotted the destruction of Adham. The latter got alarmed and sought the protection of his father. But the Sulṭān called him a coward, and refused to help him. Adham therefore moved to Quṭbu’d-Dīnpūr, and there kept himself on the alert.¹

The closing phase of Zainu’l-ʿAbidin’s life was clouded with private sorrows and public anxiety. He was grieved at the dissensions among his sons, and at their attitude of disloyalty towards him. His wife, Tāj Khāṭūn, to whom he had been very devoted, was dead. Many of his trusted friends and counsellors had also passed away,² and he had no able minister left who could give him useful advice.³ His new courtiers were only opportunists and men with no principles, attending him during the day and intriguing with his sons in the night. Thus he saw that owing to the follies and selfishness of his sons and officers, the kingdom was heading towards a catastrophe, and the work of his lifetime was being destroyed.⁴ All this saddened him and filled him with a sense of frustration. And as he was no longer strong enough either physically or mentally to fight against the dangerous tendencies around him, he took refuge in religion. He began to pray for his early death to be relieved of his sufferings, and to ask Śrīvara to recite the Sanshitā which might give him some consolation.⁵

Meanwhile the mental powers of the Sulṭān were decaying. He began to suffer from loss of memory, and therefore gave up signing official papers, allowing his ministers to carry on the government. He became apathetic towards everything, so that when he was consulted by his officials about public affairs, he either did not reply, or uttered words without any meaning.⁶ Moreover, he began to suffer from the persecution mania. He would not touch the food brought to him, suspecting that it was poisoned and imagining that his ministers were planning his overthrow.⁷

Bahrām, perceiving that the end of the Sulṭān was approaching, advised Ḥājī to proceed to the palace, imprison the ministers hostile to him, and seize the horses and the treasury. But Ḥājī rejected the

advice, saying that he did not want to do anything to hurt his father; and although he went to the palace, he passed the night in attendance on the Sultan who lay dying.  

Adham, who was in Quṭbu’ddīn’s, on hearing the reports of his father’s approaching death, moved with his army to Naushahr to seize the throne. But instead of marching immediately on the capital, he procrastinated, and passed the night on the outskirts. Meanwhile the treasurer Ḥasan Kachhī took the oath of allegiance to Ḥājī and handed over the treasury to him. Moreover, Ḥājī on the advice of Ḥasan and Bahrām seized the horses. When Adham heard of this he became struck with panic, and realising that his cause was lost, he fled, pursued by Bahrām, who killed a number of his followers. Shortly after Ḥasan, who was the governor of Pūnch, hastened to the help of his father. This further strengthened Ḥājī’s position.  

While the civil strife was going on, the Sultan lay unconscious, dying. In the end he expired at noon on Friday the 12th May, 1470, at the age of 69. His body was carried to the Mazār-i-Salāfīn, and was buried there amidst the loud lamentations of his subjects. On that day no one cooked food, and no smoke arose from the houses in the capital. Ḥājī also displayed belated grief, and repented for the sufferings he had caused his father.

Character.

Of Zainu’l-Ābidīn’s physical appearance there is no description in the chronicles. Śrīvara says that he was handsome and had a black, flowing beard, but beyond this he does not mention anything. However, it is evident from a close study of the accounts that the Sultan did not possess the physical strength, energy, and prowess of Shihābu’ddīn. Nor is there anything to show that he was a great soldier, for there are no military exploits to his credit. It is true that he defeated ‘Alī Shāh, but this was due more to the help he received from Jasrat Khokar than to his own initiative and valour. And the armies which won victories in Ladākh, Baltistān, and Kulū, were led not by him but by his commanders.

1. Ibid., 172.  
2. Ibid., 172-4; Munich MS., f. 77a.  
3. Ibid., Śrīv., p. 175.  
4. Ibid., p. 178.  
5. Ibid., pp. 177-8.  
6. Ibid., pp. 174-5.
Zainu’l-Abidin possessed a mild temper, and was very rarely provoked to anger. He was affectionate by nature as is shown by his attitude towards his courtiers and members of his family. Thus when Śivabhaṭṭa, his minister, died, he was very grieved, and distributed a large sum of money in charity. Similarly, as his other faithful counsellors passed away one by one, he felt lonely and sad. The Sultān was also very fond of his sons; and it was only when they repeatedly rebelled that he turned against them. However, he refrained from punishing them, although if he had adopted a harsher policy many of the troubles of his later reign might have been avoided.

The Sultān possessed a deeply religious nature. He was strict in the performance of his religious duties, praying five times a day and keeping the Ramaḍān fasts during which period he did not take meat. He held the Śūfis, learned men, and Brahman pandits in great respect, and granted them lands. He consulted the Shaikhul-Islām on affairs of state, and his relations with the ‘Ulamā were in general cordial.

Our information regarding the private life of the Sultān is very scanty. From the Sanskrit chronicles it appears that he occasionally indulged in wine, but never in excess. He, however, abstained from other intoxicants. There is also evidence to show that he led a moral life. He never kept any concubines; nor did he have more than three wives at a time. He first married Tāj Khātūn, the daughter of Sayyid Muḥammad Baihaqī. She gave birth to two daughters, of whom one was married to her nephew Sayyid Ḥasan Baihaqī, while the other to the ruler of Pakhlī. The Sultān was very devoted to Tāj Khātūn, and her death, which took place in his old age, greatly

1. Ibid., p. 167. 2. Munich MS., f. 74a.
3. Šriv., p. 170. According to Šriv., p. 175, the Sultān’s lips quivered at the time of his death, and it appeared that he was praying. Probably he was reciting the kalima.
6. For the Sultān’s views on the bad effects of alcohol see Šriv., p. 159.
7. Šriv., p. 157. Śrivara calls her Vodhā Khātonā. Perhaps Vodhā is a corruption of Makhdūm, which was also her name, or of Bōd which means big.
8. B.S., ff. 29b-30b.
affected him. His two other wives were the princesses from Jammu. But it is not known if they were sisters; nor if they were in his harem together. By these Jammu princesses the Sultan had four sons, named Adham, Hajj, Bahram and Jasrat. But the last seems to have died young, because we do not find him mentioned either by Srivara or by the Muslim chroniclers.

According to a tradition of doubtful authenticity, Sunder Senā, Rājā of Rajauri, sent his eldest daughter Rājya Devī to Zainu'l-Ābidin. The Sultan, who was engaged in sport on the Volur lake, seeing the lady's party coming, inquired "What mother's doli is that"? On being told that it was the Rajauri princess sent to him, he said that, as he had called her mother, he could not receive her as a wife. She was, however, not sent back to Rajauri, but was allowed to live in the palace. She became a Muslim, and built the Rajauri Kadal, a bridge over the Mār canal in Srinagar. Sunder Senā then sent his second daughter, who also embraced Islām. Her name was Sunder Devī, but was called by the people Sundermāji.

No other Kashmirī Sultan did so much to promote the welfare of his subjects as Zainu'l-Ābidin. He undertook tours to different parts of the country to find out the condition of the people, and how his officers were carrying on the administration. With the same object in view it was his practice, like that of the Caliph Hārūn ar-Rashīd, to disguise himself and roam about the streets of his capital. His espionage system was very efficient, and kept him informed of the activities of his subjects and officers. If he came to know that they were taking bribes or oppressing the people, he punished them. He abolished the extra taxes and arbitrary fines which his officers realized from the peasants to fill their own pockets, and ordered that land sold

1. Jonar., p. 86. Sriv., p. 194, mentions of only one princess who was the sister of Mānīk Dev, the Rājā of Jammu, and the mother of Adham Khān.
2. Jonar., p. 86.
3. J.P.H.S., ix, part ii, p. 145. This account is based on Cunningham who does not give any authority. Tagkira Rājgūn-I-Rajaur does not mention of any such marriage.
7. Munich MS., f. 70a; T.A., iii, 436.
should be registered on the *bhūrja* (birch-bark) so that the sale might not be afterwards denied.¹ Like Asoka, he had his code of laws inscribed on copper plates, which were placed in villages and towns for the enlightenment of the people.² The prices of different commodities too were inscribed on copper plates; and a decree was issued that the articles imported by merchants should not be kept hidden in their houses but should be sold to the public at a small profit. This was done to prevent cornering and black marketing.³

During the reign of Zainu'l-Abidin copper mines were worked, and their income was set aside by him for his own expenses. Gold dust was also collected from the sandy banks of the rivers, and the government's share of this was one-sixth.⁴ Since the melting of gold and silver idols in the reign of Sikandar had brought about a depreciation of these metals, the Sultan ordered coins to be minted from pure copper.⁵

Zainu'l-Abidin had a high sense of justice, and no one who committed a crime was spared, however close he was to the throne. One Mir Shah, who was a favourite of the Sultan, killed his wife in a fit of rage. The Sultan refused to pardon him and ordered him to be put to death.⁶ Similarly, when his two foster-brothers, Sher and Mas'ud, both of whom enjoyed his confidence, quarrelled, and the former killed the latter, the Sultan ordered the execution of Sher.⁷ In another instance Sa'dullah, a learned man, whom the Sultan respected, killed a Brahman yogi out of jealousy. Zainu'l-Abidin consulted the Shaikhul-Islam about him and was told that he deserved the punishment of death. However, as Sa'dullah had committed the crime in a state of drunkenness, the Sultan commuted the death sentence, and instead ordered him to ride on an ass through the market, with his face towards the tail, his beard drenched in urine, his head shaved, his hands tied with the entrails of the deceased, and the spectators spitting on him.⁸

4. *Jonar.*, pp. 88-9; Munich MS., f. 72b. It is not recorded as to where these mines were situated. But copper may have been extracted from the mountain on which 'Aishmakān in the Lidar Valley stands. (Lawrence, *Valley*, p. 62).
The Sultān did not, as a rule, favour the infliction of capital punishment, which he reserved for serious crimes. For ordinary offences he preferred to give milder punishments. Thus he decreed that thieves and robbers should not be executed, nor even be flogged, but were to be put in shackles, and then made to dig earth or work on public buildings. Similarly, the caṇḍālas, who earned their livelihood by thieving, were not to be sent to prison, but were to be compelled to carry on agriculture. To those who took to stealing for lack of employment, he gave food. He built charity houses and hospitals for the poor and the sick. If a robbery was committed in a village, the chief men of the place had to pay a fine. In this way robbery was stopped, and men slept in peace in their houses and travelled in safety even through forests and lonely places.

Agriculture.

Zainu'l-Abidīn took keen interest in agriculture. He built floating islands on which crops were sown. He drained the marshes and brought large areas which lay barren under cultivation. He developed the irrigation system by making a number of tanks, canals, and dams. The following is the list of important canals which were constructed by him:

The Lachhamkul carried the waters of the Sind river to the new town of Naushahr founded by the Sultān. The canal extended to the Jāmi' Masjid, and then emptied itself into the Mār canal.

The Kākapūr canal irrigated the lands around the village of Kākapūr.

The Chakdar canal originated from Nandmarg, and irrigated the plateau of Chakdar.
The Karāla canal irrigated the Karāla country known by its present name of Adavin, lying between Shupiyan and Romuh. It was on the banks of this canal that the Sultan built the town of Zainapūr.

The Avantipūr canal irrigated the lands around Avantipūr, and made possible the cultivation of rice crops. A portion of this canal, running as far as the villages of Midpūr and Rājpūr, is still in existence.

The Shāhkul or Safapūr canal carried the waters of the Sind river across the district of Lār to the lands around the Manasbal lake. Here on the banks of the lake the Sultan restored the ancient town of Andarkōt, and built at Safapūr a palace called Bāgh-i-Safa, which later became the residence of Mīrzā Ḥaidar.

The Lālkul or Pohur canal carried the waters from the Pohur river to the land around Zainagīr, a town which the Sultan founded. This was done by constructing a dam and diverting the waters of the river. As a result the cultivation of rice became possible in that area.

The Shāhkul or Mārtand canal diverted the waters of the Lidar river to irrigate the arid plateau of Matan. This enabled the Sultan to introduce the cultivation of sugar-cane on the plateau. The canal is still in existence.

The Mār canal or Nalla Mār: Previously the surplus waters of the Dal lake flowed out into the Jehlam at Habbā Kadal. But Zainu’l-‘Ābidīn diverted the waters of the lake into the Mār canal which

1. It is a village about 10 miles north of Shupiyan, on the west side of the road to Srinagar, in Lat. 33° 52' Long. 74° 53'.
2. Jonar., p. 87. Zainapūr was a pargana in the Shupiyan dist. of Marāj division. Now it is in Anantnāg dist.
4. Kāk, Ancient Monuments of Kashmir, p. 37. I have not been able to trace Midpūr either in the settlement records or on the maps. The inhabitants of Avantipūr are also ignorant of the existence of such a village. Rājpūr is a village about 12 miles south-east of Srinagar. It is well-known for its apple orchards and is a packing centre for apples.
5. Jonar., p. 87. Safapūr is a small village situated on the bank of the Mansabal where Akbar had constructed a garden.
6. B.S., ff. 51a-b., S.A., p. 38; T.H., i, f. 99b. Zainagīr is a pargana in Kamrāj division.
he extended up to Shādīpūr where it emptied itself at the confluence of the Jehlam and Sind.¹ In consequence a large tract of land was recovered for cultivation. The Sultān spanned the canal with seven bridges of masonry. Today it is an important highway of traffic between Srinagar and the Dal.

Owing to these irrigation works, the draining of marshes, and the reclamation of large areas for cultivation, Kashmir became self-sufficient in food, and rice was cheap.² According to Moorcroft, the annual produce of rice in Zainu'l-ʿĀbidīn’s time was seventy-seven lakhs of kharwārs.³ The revenue was realised in kind, and granaries were built to store the grain.⁴ Whenever the price of rice went up or there was a famine, the government immediately brought out its stocks to bring down the prices and to feed the people. It is not known as to what was the normal rate of assessment. But from the fact that whenever there was a famine the rent was reduced to one-fourth and in some place even to one-seventh,⁵ it can safely be concluded that the state’s share must have been one-half or one-third of the produce. The state’s share in the crops raised by the peasants on the land cleared and brought under cultivation at Zainapūr at the expense of the government was one-seventh of the gross produce. The Sultān had this inscribed on the copper plates so that in the future also rulers should realise the revenue at the same rate.⁶

Zainu'l-ʿĀbidīn and his Non-Muslim Subjects.

One of the most outstanding features of Zainu'l-ʿĀbidīn’s reign was the just and liberal treatment that was meted out to the non-Muslims. The Sultān allowed the Hindus complete freedom of worship, and recalled those who had fled to Jammu and Kishtwār. He even permitted those Brahmans who had become Muslims under duress to return to their former religion.⁷ He banned cow-slaughter, and gave Hindus the right to perform Sātī and other customs which had been

1. Śrīv., p. 143; S.A., p. 37.
2. H.M., ff. 120b-21a.
3. Moorcroft, Travels, II, p. 135. When Moorcroft visited Kashmir the annual produce was only twenty lakhs of kharwārs.
4. Śrīv., p. 140.
5. Munich MS., f. 75b; T.A., III, 443.
6. Śrīv., p. 156.
7. Ibid., p. 437.
prohibited by his father. He not only permitted the repair and rebuilding of the temples destroyed in the time of Sikandar, but in some cases he himself repaired and rebuilt them. He gave rent-free lands to Brahmans, endowed temples, and did not resume the grants made in the time of the Rājās. In Rainwāri (Srīnagar), for example, there was a large building erected under the Hindu kings where food was supplied free to persons who came from outside on pilgrimage to various sacred places in the Valley. Zainu’l-‘Abidin extended the endowment and constructed another building for the accommodation of pilgrims and travellers.

We have seen that Sikandar had imposed two pāls of silver as Jizya upon every non-Muslim. Realising that it was a heavy burden, Zainu’l-‘Abidin, on the advice of Śrīyabhaṭṭa, reduced it to the nominal amount of one masha of silver. That he did not entirely abolish the Jizya was due to his respect for the opinion and sentiments of the ‘Ulamā. In actual practice, however, it was as good as abolished, for it was never collected under him. The Sultān also cancelled another exaction which fell only upon the Hindus. The Hindus of Srīnagar had to pay a tax to the owner of the land near the junction of the Mār canal and the Jehlam where they cremated their dead. When the Sultān was informed of this, he, at the request of Śrīvara, abolished it.

The Sultān in order to win the goodwill of his Hindu subjects participated in their festivals. Thus when the monks of Śrī Jain monastery celebrated the worship of vessels, he took part in it, and fed the monks. Similarly every year, on the day of Nāgayātra and during the festivity of Gaṇacakra, he fed the devotees for five days with rice, meat, vegetables and fruits. He dismissed them on the twelfth

1. Śrīv., p. 143; Munich MS., f. 70a; B.S., ff. 48b-49a.
2. Śrīv., p. 142; Jonar., p. 87; Munich MS., f. 70a; B.S., f. 48b.
4. Jonar., (Bo. ed.), Nos. 1077-78. The Calcutta text and its English trans. by Dutt is vague and confused on this point. S.A., p. 30, says a very small sum was imposed as jizya on the non-Muslims.
5. Munich MS., f. 70a; Firishta, p. 657, and other Persian chronicles say that Jizya was abolished probably on the ground that it was not realised.
6. Śrīv., p. 143. 7. Ibid., p. 142.
day of the moon after presenting them with quilts, money and other things. On the thirteenth he saw the display of lamps on both sides of the river on the occasion of the worship held to celebrate the birth of the Jehlam. Seated in a boat on the river, the Sultān spent the whole night listening to songs and witnessing the worship performed by the citizens. Another festival in which he participated was that of Caitra, celebrated in spring. He visited a number of towns on the occasion in order to witness the display of flowers and to enjoy music and dancing.

During his reign non-Muslims held high positions and were trusted by him, for his criterion in making appointments was not the religion of the candidate but his ability. Šivabhaṭṭa, a Brahman, was his physician and a confidant whom he always consulted on important matters. Another person who was his counsellor and stood high in his favour was Tilakācārya, a Buddhist. Two other Brahmins, Simha and Rūpyabhaṭṭa, were the court astrologers. Karpūrabhaṭṭa was a Brahman physician, much respected by the Sultān. Šriyabhaṭṭa was the superintendent of the king’s court of justice. The Sultān was so much attached to him that on his death he distributed a large sum of money in charity.

**Patronage of Letters.**

Zainu’l-Ābidīn was a great patron of learning and surrounded himself with learned men with whom he was fond of holding discussions. He conferred upon them grants of land and other privileges and, in order to be able to enjoy their constant company, he made arrangements for their residence at Naushahr. That is why, attracted by his patronage, scholars like Sayyid Muḥammad Rūmī, Sayyid Aḥmad Rūmī, Qāżī Sayyid ‘Alī Shirāzī, Sayyid Muḥammad Luristānī, Qāżī Jāmāl, and Sayyid Muḥammad Sistānī left their countries and emigrated to Kashmir during his reign. Qāżī Jāmāl, who had come from Sindh, was made Qāżī by the Sultān. Maulānā
Kabīr had been Zainu'l-ʿAbidin's tutor, but had gone away to Herāt to seek knowledge. The Sultān recalled him, and made him Shaikhul-ʿIslām. Mullā Aḥmād was a court poet, and was much respected by him. Other poets attached to the court were Mullā Nādirī and Mullā Fāṭṭī. Mullā Aḥmād and Mullā Nādirī, besides being poets, were also historians, and each wrote a history of Kashmir. Other persons whose society the Sultān enjoyed were Mullā Pārsā Bukhārī and Sayyid Muḥammad Madāʾīn. Jonārāja and Śrīvara, authors of the Sanskrit chronicles, were also greatly trusted by the Sultān and were constantly in attendance. Yodhabhatṭa, another courtier of the Sultān, was not only a great Vedic scholar, but was also conversant with Persian, and had learned Firdausi's Shāh-nāma by heart. He wrote a book on music and a play in Kashmirī verse named Jainaprakāṣa giving an account of his master's reign. Notthosa Pandit was another Kashmirī poet who composed a book in Kashmirī verse called Jainacarita in which he described the life and achievements of Zainu'l-ʿAbidin. Bhāṭṭāvatāra, influenced by the Shāh-nāma and other Persian works which he had studied, composed the Jainavilāsa which contained the sayings of the Sultān. Muḥammad was a great scholar and wrote the Kifāya-i-Mujāhidiyah, a work on medicine, which he dedicated to Zainu'l-ʿAbidin to whose court he had been attracted by the widespread fame of his justice and liberality. He was also the author of the Tashriḥ biʿt-taṣwīr, a treatise on the anatomy of the human body with illustrations, which was dedicated to Mīrzā Pīr Muḥammad, grandson of Tīmūr.

Zainu'l-ʿAbidin established a translation bureau in which Persian works were translated into Sanskrit and Sanskrit works into Persian. In this way knowledge was made accessible to those who knew either

1. Hasan, f. 120a. 2. B.S., f. 56a. 3. Ibid., f. 46b.
7. Ibid., (Bo. ed.), BK. 1, chap. iv, No. 37; Munich MS., f. 72b.
8. Śrīv., (Bo. ed.), BK. 1, chap. iv, No. 39. In the Cal. ed. of the text as translated by Dutt, it is stated that he had "perused the Shāh-nāma." But the Bo. ed. says: "He had mastered the ocean-like texts that existed in the country of Shāh-nāma."
9. Rieu, ii, pp. 467b-68a, 470b; also Ethe, i, Nos. 2296-7.
of these languages.1 Śrīvara began the translation of Jāmi’s Yūsuf u Zulaikhā into Sanskrit in the Sultān’s reign, and completed it in 1505, and named it Kathā-Kautuka.2 Mullā Aḥmad, who was a scholar in both Persian and Sanskrit, translated by the Sultān’s order the Mahābhārata3 and Kalhana’s Rājatarangini4 into Persian. The latter work was also translated for Akbar by Shāh Muḥammad Shāhābādī. Later, the Persian translation was rewritten by ‘Abdu’l-Qādir Badā’uni by order of the Emperor.5

Education.

Zainu’l-Ābidīn took great interest in the spread of education in Kashmir. He opened a school near his palace in Naushahr, and placed it in charge of Mullā Kabīr. Sometimes he himself used to go there to attend the lectures of the Mullā. For its maintenance, and for granting scholarships to deserving students, he created an endowment with the Mullā as its trustee. The institution survived until the seventeenth century.6 Another place where education was imparted was the hospice of Shaikh Ismā’īl Kubravī, who later in the reign of Hasan Shāh became Shaikhulu’l-Islām. Students came from Herāt and Transoxiana to learn at his feet.7 A large madrasa was founded at Sir near Islāmābād, and Mullā Ghāzī Khān was made its principal.8 At Siālkot there was a Madrasatulu’l-‘Ulim to which the Sultān contributed six lakhs of rupees, while his queen gave away her valuable necklace.9 Zainu’l-Ābidīn also built a number of hostels where board and lodging were free for poor students.

The Sultān was very fond of books, and spent large sums of money in collecting them. Before his time the number of Persian and Arabic manuscripts in Kashmir was very small. He, therefore, sent his agents

1. Śrīv., p. 146; Munich MS., f. 73a.
2. Published in Bombay in 1901. See Śūfi, Kashīr, i, 167.
3. Munich MS., f. 73a. 4. Ibid.
5. M.T., ii, 380; see for more details, Śūfi, Kashīr, i, pp. 163-64. But Śūfi confuses Kalhana’s Rājatarangini with Bahru’l-Asmār which is a quite different work. (See Storey, Persian Literature, Section ii, p. 438).
6. Ḥasan, f. 119b; H.M., f. 119b.
7. W.K., f. 41a.
8. Śūfi, Kashīr, ii, 348. Sir is a large village about 7 miles north-east Anantnāg in Lat. 33° 47’ Long. 75° 17’.
9. Ibid.
to India, Persia, ‘Irāq, and Turkistān to purchase them. In case their owners refused to sell them, his instructions were to secure their transcribed copies and pay the copyists generously. Sanskrit manuscripts were also purchased in large numbers, and those works which during the reign of Sikandar had been removed to India, were by Zainu’l-‘Abidin’s efforts brought back. In this way the Sultan built up a big library which existed until the time of Fatḥ Shāh. It perished in the civil wars and foreign invasions of the later Shāh Mīr period.

Zainu’l-‘Abidin was not only a patron of learned men, he was himself a scholar and a poet. He knew Sanskrit, Persian, and Tibetan besides Kashmirī which was his mother tongue. Pandits read out to him from various Śāstras, while Śrīvara recited to him the Vaśīṣṭha Brahmadārśana of Vālmīki and the Samhitā along with their explanations and annotations.

The Sultan is said to have been the author of two works in Persian. One of them was on the manufacture of fireworks in the form of a dialogue—a method which became a model for the Kashmirī writers. Towards the end of his life, disillusioned on account of the revolt of his sons and the disloyalty of his ministers, he wrote another book named Shikāyat in which he discussed the vanity and transitoriness of this world.

The Sultan also composed poetry in Persian under the nom de plume of Quṭb, and was in the habit of exchanging repartees in improvised verse with his poet-laureate, Mullā Aḥmad. Once due to the intrigues of some of the courtiers, who were jealous of the poet, the Sultan turned against him and exiled him. On reaching Pakhlī, Mullā Aḥmad composed four couplets and sent them to the Sultan, who was so delighted with them that he immediately ordered his recall.

**Arts and Crafts.**

No Kashmirī ruler ever did so much for the promotion of arts and

1. B.S., f. 47b; Hasan, f. 120b; H.M., f. 120a.  
2. B.S., f. 48a.  
3. Śrīv., p. 145.  
4. Hasan, f. 120b; H.M., f. 120a.  
5. Munich MS., f. 73a; T.A., iii, p. 439.  
6. Śrīv., pp. 145, 166.  
8. Śrīv., p. 135.  
crafts as Zainu’l-‘Abidin. In fact it will not be too much to say that whatever arts we see in Kashmir today owe their existence to him. No doubt the Valley had been famous in Hindu times for its arts and crafts, but they had greatly suffered in the chaos which lasted for over two hundred years preceding the establishment of the Sultanate. Besides, a large number of artists and craftsmen had perished in the course of Zulju’s invasion.\(^1\) Zainu’l-‘Abidin, however, revived the old industries which had either disappeared or declined, and at the same time introduced new ones.

The Kashmiris were hitherto ignorant of the art of paper-making and book-binding. The Sultan, therefore, sent two persons to Samarqand at government expense to receive training in these arts; and in their absence he supported their families. During their stay in Samarqand one of them learnt the art of manufacturing paper, while the other learnt the art of book-binding. On their return to Srinagar they taught these arts to others.\(^2\) In the Phagpargana the Sultan made arrangements for one of them to make paper, and he was given a village as jagir. The book-binder was also assigned a village. The villages remained in the possession of the descendants of these craftsmen until the time of Haidar Malik, the historian, in the first half of the seventeenth century.\(^3\)

The great interest which Zainu’l-‘Abidin took in the development of arts and crafts is further evident from the fact that if he came to know that an artist or a craftsman from ‘Irāq, Khurasan or Turkistan was on a visit to the Valley, he would induce him to teach his people whatever he knew. In fact, sometimes, the Sultan would not permit him to leave Kashmir until he had done so.\(^4\) It was perhaps in this way that the Sultan introduced for the first time in Kashmir the use of the weaver’s brush and loom, and the weaving of silk cloth. The patterns on the silk cloth were so exquisitely made that the Valley became famous

---

\(^1\) Hasan, ff. 121a-b; H.M., f. 120b.
\(^2\) B.S., ff. 47a-b; Hasan, f. 120b; H.M., f. 120a.
\(^3\) Ibid.; Hasan, ff. 120b-121a. Lawrence, Valley, p. 380, says the paper-workers were settled by the Sultan in Naushahr (Srinagar) and in his time there were 30 such families.
\(^4\) B.S., f. 47a; Hasan, f. 120a; H.M., f. 120b.
for it. Kashmir also became well-known for its shawls in the Sulṭān’s time. From the account of Śrīvara it appears that Zainu’l-‘Abidin was endowed with a spirit of inquiry and inventiveness. Thus he knew how to make fireworks, and he trained one Ḥabīb in the art. Before his time the powder used for fireworks was imported from outside, and was not easily obtainable. But the Sulṭān taught the people how to manufacture it, and, as a result, it became a common thing. It was under his influence that his mechanics invented new weapons of war. However, there is no evidence to suggest that these weapons were guns or cannons using gunpowder.

Music.

Unlike his father Sikandar, who had banned music, Zainu’l-‘Abidin was a great patron of it, and, as we have seen, he used to spend some of his evenings in the company of singers and dancers. He liberally rewarded them, and in his reign Kashmir became famous for its musicians. Yodhabhaṭṭa was a well-known musician, and wrote a book on music which he dedicated to the Sulṭān. Mullā ‘Ūḍī, who had come from Khurāsān, was another great musician. Mullā Zāda too had come from Khurāsān, and was an expert in playing the lute made of tortoise shell. Śrīvara also played on the lute. He possessed a melodious voice and sang Persian songs in chorus. Jamīl was not only a poet and a painter, but also a musician and sang beautifully in Persian.

Buildings.

Zainu’l-‘Abidin was a great builder, but unfortunately, with the exception of the tomb of his mother and the tomb and mosque of Madani, which are in a dilapidated condition, not a single building of his time has survived. He founded the new town of Naushahr, now a

1. Śrīv., p. 151. 2. Ibid., p. 135. 3. Ibid., p. 105. 4. See for more details Chapter XI under section of Weapons. 5. B.S., ff. 49a-b; H.M., f. 113a. 6. Śrīv., p. 135; Munich MS., f. 72a. Śrīvara calls him Sujjya. It may be a corruption of Shujā’. But Persian chronicles call him Mullā ‘Ūḍī, perhaps because he could play well on the ‘Ūd. 7. Munich MS., f. 73a. 8. Ibid., f. 72a; Śrīv., pp. 135-6; T.A., iii, 439.
part of Srinagar, and made it his capital. He adorned it with splendid houses for his officers, courtiers, and learned men. But the most magnificent edifice which he constructed there was a palace of wood which, as described by Mirzâ Ḥaidar Dughlat, had twelve storeys, each containing fifty rooms, halls, and corridors. It was surmounted by a golden dome, and its spacious halls were lined with glass.

Besides Naushahr, Zainu’l-Ābidîn founded the towns of Zainapûr, Zainakôt and Zainagîr; and in all these places he constructed magnificent buildings. In Zainagîr a spacious palace was built and was surrounded by a picturesque garden. The construction of the Jāmi’ Masjid in Srinagar, started by Sikandar, was completed by Zainu’l-Ābidîn. The latter also, like his brother ‘Alî Shâh, constructed a bridge, and named it after himself as Zaina Kadal. A great achievement of the Sultan was the construction of a causeway along the Dal lake to the Phâg pargana. Another causeway was built from Andarkôt to Sôpûr, and the income of a village was set aside for its maintenance.

In ancient times there existed an island in the north-east corner of the Volur lake, but it had become submerged in water. Zainu’l-Ābidîn decided to reclaim the island in order to make it a storm-refuge for boats. He had stones poured into the lake, and in this way, after great efforts, land was raised above the water level. He named the island Zainalânk, and on it, in 847/1443-4, he built a palace, a mosque, and a garden. The palace had four storeys. The first was constructed of

1. B.S., f. 46b.
3. For Zainapûr and Zainagîr see p. 85 supra. Zainakôt is a village 4 miles west of Srinagar. Hasan Shâh in T.H., ii, f. 98a, gives the names of other villages like Zainadab in Naushahr (Srinagar), Zaina Danaib on the Volur lake and Zaina Kadal in Srinagar.
4. B.S., ff. 51b-52a. The statement in S.A., p. 38, that the royal buildings in Zainagîr were destroyed by the Chaks is not corroborated by other chronicles. They were probably destroyed in the course of civil wars and foreign invasions of the later Shâh Mîr period. Mirzâ Ḥaidar does not mention the existence of any building in Zainagîr during his time.
5. N.A., f. 45a.
6. Ibid.
7. Ibid., f. 46a.
8. Lawrence, Valley, p. 191.
Inscription on a stone slab to commemorate the founding of Zainalank.
stones; the second of bricks and the third and fourth of timber. The mosque was built of stones.\textsuperscript{1} The hānjīs, carpenters, masons and others who had been employed in the construction of the buildings, were awarded the income of the parganas of Khuyahīm in perpetuity.\textsuperscript{2}

During the later part of his reign the town of Sūpūr was destroyed by fire. The Sultān built there a palace with the materials of the one at Bārumula, which was pulled down. He also constructed in the town a swinging bridge.\textsuperscript{3} As already mentioned, he built for himself in important villages and towns rest houses where he stayed during his tours to the different parts of the kingdom.\textsuperscript{4} Besides, inns were constructed for travellers on the main roads. Villages were endowed for their maintenance, and food was supplied free.\textsuperscript{5}

\textsuperscript{1} S.A., p. 30. \textsuperscript{2} Hasan, f. 117b. \textsuperscript{3} Sriv., pp. 155-6. \textsuperscript{4} Hasan, ff. 117b-118a; H.M., f. 117a. \textsuperscript{5} Munich MS., f. 71a.
CHAPTER VI

DYNASTIC TROUBLES AND REBELLIONS

Haidar Shāh (1470-72)

UNDER Zainu’l-Ābidīn the Shāh Mīr dynasty reached the meridian of its power and glory. But after his death, under his weak successors, it started on its downward course until it met its final overthrow at the hands of the Chaks. Ḥājjī Khān ascended the throne under the title of Sulṭān Ḥaidar Shāh. To celebrate the occasion festivities were held in Sikandarpūr, and gifts were bestowed on nobles and tributary chiefs.1 Bahrām, his younger brother, was conferred upon the jagīr of Nāgām, while his son Ḥasan Khān was given the jagīr of Kamrāj and declared heir-apparent.2

Meanwhile, Adham Khān, who was in Jammu, proceeded to Pūnch and decided to invade Kashmīr. The Sulṭān was advised by Pūrna, the barber,3 who was his favourite, and by other counsellors, that it was at the invitation of Ḥasan Kachhī, the treasurer, that Adham was planning the invasion of the Valley. Ḥaidar Shāh, thereupon, sent for Ḥasan and his seven accomplices and had them put to death. The ministers of Sulṭān Zainu’l-Ābidīn, who had opposed Ḥaidar Shāh’s claim to the throne, were also executed.4

When Adham heard the news of Ḥasan’s execution, he was struck with fright, and returned to Jammu. Bahrām too became alarmed and decided to flee, but gave up the idea on being assured of safety by the

1. Ibid., f. 77b; Śrīv., pp. 183-4.
2. Śrīv. (Bo.ed.), BK. ii, No 15; Munich MS., f. 77b.
3. Śrīv., p. 186, calls him Rikketara, but subsequently he is mentioned as Pūrna. See also Śrīv. (Bo.ed.), Nos. 30, 52, where he is called Rikitara and Pūn apexa respectively. Munich MS. calls him Pūnī, while Nizāmu’d-Dīn a ld Firishta refer to him as Lūlī. In Arabic characters Pūnī can be easily read as Lūlī.
4. Śrīv., pp. 190-3; Munich MS., f. 78a.
Sultan who wanted to keep him near himself as he was useful in checkmating the designs of Adham.\(^1\) Soon after, news reached Ḥaidar Shāh that Adham Khān had lost his life while fighting along with his maternal uncle Mānik Dēv, the ruler of Jammu, against the Turks.\(^2\) The Sultan was grieved to hear this, and he caused his body to be brought from Jammu and had it buried near the grave of Sultan Zainu'l-Ābidīn.\(^3\)

Ḥaidar Shāh, like his father, pursued a liberal policy towards the Hindus. But some of the Brahmans, provoked by the barber, caused damage to the Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā\(^4\) and began to harass the Muslims of Srinagar.\(^5\) When the Sultan heard of this he inflicted severe punishments on the persons guilty of the outrage. Their arms and legs were cut off, and their properties were confiscated, including the lands which had been given to them by Zainu'l-Ābidīn.\(^6\)

Owing to the Sultan's neglect of the administration, the states of the Outer Hills, which had been tributary to Kashmir since the time of Shihābu'd-Dīn, now declared their independence. Prince Ḥasan was therefore despatched with an army to reduce them to obedience. Jai Singh, the ruler of Rajaurī, submitted without offering any resistance, and gave Ḥasan handsome presents and his daughter in marriage. The ruler of Jammu and the chief of the Gakkhars also submitted, and they were spared. But those chiefs who refused to recognise the sovereignty of the Sultan, were attacked, and after being defeated, were executed and their capitals were destroyed. After campaigning in this way for six months, Prince Ḥasan decided to return to Kashmir, as alarming news had reached him from Srinagar.\(^7\)

During the absence of Ḥasan, Bahram Khān had succeeded in strengthening his position by winning the confidence of the Sultan, and bringing him under his influence. Taking advantage of Ḥaidar Shāh's deteriorating physical and mental powers caused by excessive drinking,

\(^1\) Šrīv., p. 189.
\(^2\) Ibid., p. 194; Munich MS., f. 78a. It seems Adham Khān had married a Jammu princess. After his death his son Fath Khān was brought up by the Jammu Rajā. (Šrīv., p. 309).
\(^3\) Munich MS., f. 78a; T.A., iii, p. 447.
\(^4\) Šrīv. (Bo.ed.), BK. ii, No. 127, refers to Saida Khānqāh which must be the Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā.
\(^5\) Ibid., No. 122 sq.
\(^6\) Šrīv., pp. 195-6.
\(^7\) Ibid., pp. 198-9.
he even began to plot with the nobles to usurp the throne. It was on hearing this news that Ḥasan had returned by forced marches to Srinagar. But as he had come without the Sultān's permission, Bahrām and other interested persons succeeded in alienating the Sultān from him by insinuating that he had arrived in order to seize power.\(^1\) The result was that he was at first refused audience by the Sultān, and it was only at the request of the army chiefs that he was finally received. But his services in suppressing the refractory chiefs were ignored, and he was given only an ordinary _khil'at_.\(^2\) Soon after, Ḥaidar Shāh, while carousing on the top floor of the palace in a glass room, fell down and bled through his nose. As he had already been for some time past spitting blood and suffering from gout, he fainted and had to be carried to his bed. When his condition grew worse, and it became certain that he would not recover, his ministers headed by Aḥmad Aitū, the Wazīr, proceeded to Bahrām Khān and requested him to proclaim himself as Sultān and appoint Ḥasan as his heir-apparent.\(^3\) But he refused to accept the second condition. Thereupon Aḥmad, with the consent of the nobles, declared Ḥasan as ruler, and made preparations to attack Bahrām. The latter alarmed at this fled the city. Bahrām had in reality behaved in a cowardly manner and shown a great lack of energy and enterprise, for, if he had taken prompt action by seizing the treasury, the horses, and the palace, he would have secured the throne.\(^4\)

Ḥaidar Shāh died on April 13, 1472, after a reign of one year and ten months, and was buried near his father's grave.\(^5\) He was generous and cultured, and a patron of art and learning. He was himself a poet and wrote a book of songs in Persian.\(^6\) He was fond of the society of Mullā Dā'ūd, a great musician, whose pupil Khwāja 'Abdu'l-Qādir taught the Sultān to play on the lute. He acquired such proficiency in it that, according to Śrīvara, "he gave lessons even to the professors". He also learned to play well on other instruments from persons who were attached to his court.\(^7\)

---

\(^1\) _Ibid._, p. 199; Munich MS., f. 78b.

\(^2\) Śrīv., p. 200.

\(^3\) The story that Bahrām had the Sultān poisoned and prevented him from receiving proper medical treatment is unreliable. (See Śrīv., p. 203).

\(^4\) _Ibid._, pp. 200-3.

\(^5\) _N.A._, f. 49b.

\(^6\) Śrīv., p. 204.

\(^7\) _Ibid._, p. 188.
Like his father and uncle, Ḥaidar Shāh also built a bridge across the Jehlam in Srinagar and named it Nau Kadal. Like his father and uncle, Ḥaidar Shāh also built a bridge across the Jehlam in Srinagar and named it Nau Kadal. He was a man of tolerant disposition, and enjoyed the society of learned Brahmans who read out to him passages from the Purāṇas, the Dharmaśāstras and the Saṃhitās. Although very generous to the poor and liberal in bestowing gifts and jāgīrs on the courtiers, he was not of a forgiving nature and punished severely anyone guilty of even the most trifling offence. At the same time he possessed a weak nature, and allowed himself to be dominated by persons of a stronger will. In particular he was under the influence of the barber Pūrna who was rapacious, unscrupulous, and a great intriguer. He spent most of his time in his wine cups and in the society of women and musicians, and as a result left the management of the state to corrupt and worthless favourites who misgoverned the country.

Sultan Ḥasan Shāh (1472-84)

Ḥasan Shāh signalised his accession to the throne by leaving Sikandarpūr, the capital of his father, and proceeding to live at Naushahr. Since he had become ruler through the efforts of Aḥmad Aitū, he conferred upon him the title of Malik, gave him the jāgīr of Nāgām, and made him his Wazīr. His son Naurūz was appointed Amīr-i-Dar or Lord Chamberlain, given the title of Bahādur Mulk, and granted the jāgīr of Ikshikā. Jahāngīr Māgre was entrusted with the chief command of the army and given the title of Shaukat Jung, while Khwāja Nūru’d-Dīn was given the post of Shaikhul’Islām, and Khwāja Muḥammad ‘Ālam that of Ṣadr.

Soon after Ḥasan Shāh became Sultan, Bahrām, who had fled to

3. Śrīv., p. 208, calls it Zain-nagar.
4. B.S., f. 58b calls him Malik Aḥmad Aitū, but T.H., ii, f. 107a, calls him Malik Aḥmad Yatū. Niẓāmu’d-Dīn and Firishta refer to him as Malik Aḥmad Aswad. Aswad in Persian means black or powerful. G.A., f. 135b, says he was given the title of Quṭbu’d-Daula.
5. Śrīv., p. 208, uses the term Duṣṭapāla instead of Amīr-i-Dar or Ḥājib-i-Dar of Persian chronicles.
6. Ikshikā is the Sanskrit name for Yech pargana north of Nāgām pargana. (Stein, ii, 475).
India, invaded Kashmir at the invitation of some of the nobles and arrived in the province of Kamrāj. Learning of the invasion, Ḩasan Shāh, who was at this time at Avantipūr, at once proceeded to Sōpur. He, however, did not know what course to follow, as treachery was rife in his camp, and conflicting advices were being offered to him by his ministers. Some were even suggesting that resistance was futile, and that the Sultān should retire to the Punjāb. But Malik Aḥmad, the Wazīr, opposed all defeatist tactics and advised resistance to the enemy. The Sultān finally agreed with him and sent Tāzī Baṭ against the pretender. Thereupon Bahrām hastened to Dūlipūr to attack Tāzī Baṭ, expecting to be joined by the nobles who had invited him and promised him support. But on reaching Dūlipūr, he was disappointed to find that none came over to his side. He therefore had to fight without any allies. As a result, his forces were defeated and scattered and he himself escaped to Zainagīr. From there again he fled, but was pursued and, having been struck by an arrow, was captured along with his son. They were both brought before the Sultān who ordered them to be confined in Bahrām’s own palace. But soon after, apprehending that Bahrām might form a rallying point for the discontented nobles, Ḩasan Shāh had him shackled and blinded. Three years after this Bahrām died. He was mean, ungrateful, an opportunist, and an intriguer. Zainu’l-‘Abidīn had bestowed favours on him, yet he had opposed him and neglected him during his last illness; and to achieve his own ends he had tried to play his two brothers against each other. He had then conspired the overthrow of Sultān Ḥaidar Shāh, and finally attempted to seize the throne from his nephew, Ḩasan Shāh.

Meanwhile two persons, named Abhimanyu and Malik Zāda, had risen high in the Sultān’s favour. Abhimanyu had belonged to Ḥāji’s party, and had helped him in his rebellion against Zainu’l-‘Abidīn.

3. Srīv., p. 211. Dūlipūr is a village lying on the edge of the forest about 2 miles south-east of Shalūra, on the road to Sōpur.
6. Ibid., p. 219; T.H., ii, f. 107b; T.A., iii, 449. Firishta is wrong in saying that Bahrām died three days after. Cam. His. Ind., iii, p. 285, follows Firishta.
7. Srīv., p. 110.
Later he had served Haidar Shâh, and now Hasan Shâh reposed great confidence in him and placed him in charge of Divasar pargana. But Abhimanyu being ambitious, became jealous of Malik Aḥmad, and began to plot his overthrow. But the minister succeeded in countering his machinations, and by the Sulṭān’s order had him blinded and thrown into prison, where he died in great misery after two years.

The Malik Zāda, too, like Abhimanyu, had an unhappy end. He was dishonest and enriched himself by robbing the people. He was very friendly with Pûrna, the barber, and with his help organised a plot to overthrow the Sulṭān. But the conspiracy was discovered, and both he and the barber were thrown into prison where they died. Their ill-gotten wealth was confiscated by the Sulṭān.

Having removed his rivals, Malik Aḥmad turned his attention to making his position stronger by entering into marriage alliances with the important families in the kingdom. He adopted Tāzī Baṭ, a man of humble origin, as his son and married him to the eldest sister of Jahāngīr Māgre, the commander-in-chief, and then had him appointed minister and guardian of Prince Muḥammad. But the result of this was that Malik Aḥmad’s sons, particularly Naurūz, became jealous of Tāzī Baṭ. They accused him of arrogance, favouritism, and rapacity, and pointed out to their father that the advancement of Tāzī would lead to the ruin of their family. Their instigations had the desired effect, and Malik Aḥmad became hostile to Tāzī. He sent him to the Outer Hills against some of the tributary chiefs who had declared their independence and had not paid any tribute to the Sulṭān. He hoped...
thereby to keep him away from Srinagar, and in his absence to secure his overthrow.\textsuperscript{1}

Tāzī Baț, unaware of the designs of Malik Ahmad, marched with an army. He succeeded in reducing Jammu, Rajaurī, and other neighbouring states; and then, supported by the Jammu army, he marched on Śiālkōt, which belonged to Sulṭān Buḥlūl Lodī. The town being practically defenceless, Tāzī plundered it.\textsuperscript{2} When Tātār Khān, Buḥlūl Lodī's governor of the Punjāb, heard of this he set out with an army to invade Kashmir. He occupied some of the villages at the foot of the mountains, but owing to the high barriers which barred his passage, he did not advance any further. Moreover, as the prestige of the rulers of Kashmir was still great, he thought that serious resistance would be offered to him, and his invasion would end in failure. In reality however the country was no longer as strong as it had been in former days, and could have been easily overrun by an enterprising general.\textsuperscript{3}

Meanwhile, Malik Ahmad had succeeded in poisoning Ḩasan Shāh's mind against Tāzī Baț. He had the guardianship of Prince Muḥammad transferred from him to his own son, Naurūz;\textsuperscript{4} and although Tāzī Baț returned from the campaign successful with the spoils of war, he persuaded the Sulṭān not to confer any honours on him. Not satisfied with this, and still fearing Tāzī Baț as a rival, he decided to destroy him. For this purpose he recalled the Baihaqi Sayyids from India in spite of the opposition of some of the nobles who looked upon

1. \textit{Ibid.}, p. 239.
2. B.S., f. 59a; Ḩ.M., ff. 123b-24a. The statement in T.A., iii, 449 that there was an engagement between Tāzī and Tātār is not corroborated by Kashmir chronicles.
3. B.S., ff. 59a-b; Ḩasan, f. 123a; Ḩ.M., ff. 123b-24a.
4. Śrīvara is very confusing on this point. At one place he says that Tāzī was in charge of Prince Muḥammad, while at another place he says that he was in charge of Prince Ḥusain. Actually Tāzī was the guardian of Prince Muḥammad and Naurūz of Prince Ḥusain (See above, note 2). When Malik Ahmad became angry with Tāzī, he had the guardianship of Prince Ḥusain as well transferred to his son. He himself of course remained in charge of the education of Yūsuf till his fall.
all foreigners with suspicion, and entered in league with them. Finally he secured the Sultan's order by which Tāzī Bat's property was confiscated, and he was interned in his own house and given a small allowance.¹

After bringing about the fall of Tāzī Bat, Malik Ahmād directed his attention to other ministers whom he suspected of being his possible rivals. He had them dismissed, and in their place appointed his own favourites. As a result Ahmād's power enormously increased, and every one began to fear him. Even Jahāngīr Māgre, the commander-in-chief, was filled with apprehension.²

Ḥasan Shāh, who was watching these developments closely, did not approve of Ahmād's conduct and turned against him. Observing the change in the attitude of the Sultan, the minister's enemies felt encouraged, and suggested to him to take away the guardianship of Prince Yūsuf from Ahmād.³ The Sultan acted on their advice; but fearing rebellion, he won over the Sayyids and sought the support of Jahāngīr Māgre to crush Ahmād. The latter, hearing of these developments, marched with his followers to the palace and entered it. Meanwhile, Jahāngīr, having arrived from his estate, released Tāzī Bat, and set out with him and the Sayyids to attack Ahmād. Tāzī Bat's supporters set fire to the western gate of the palace, causing the destruction of a large number of houses in the neighbourhood. Ahmād, finding himself surrounded on all sides, and realising that he was not strong enough to resist Jahāngīr for his troops began to desert him, threw himself at the mercy of Ḥasan Shāh. The latter, remembering his past services, gave him protection against his enemies who would otherwise have put him to death. However, urged by Jahāngīr and other courtiers, Malik Ahmād and his sons and prominent followers were thrown into prison, and their properties were confiscated.⁴ In his place Sayyid Ḥasan Baihaqī, Ḥasan Shāh's father-in-law, was appointed Wazīr, and the jagir of Nāgām was transferred to him. Malik Ahmād had been Wazīr for ten years. He had been loyal to Ḥasan Shāh, who in turn had placed great confidence in him and acted on his advice. He was generous and tolerant, and granted villages to the Brahmans, while

¹ Srīv., pp. 241-44. ² Ibid., p. 245. ³ Ibid., (Bo.ed.), BK. ili, No. 373. ⁴ Ibid., pp. 246-8.
for the Muslims he built and endowed hospices. In the beginning he ruled the country well, but later on, filled with the lust for power, he became tyrannical, neglecting the administration and pursuing a policy of intrigue and nepotism.

Baltistān and Ladākh had again become independent, and so, in 1483, Ḥasan Shāh despatched Jahāṅgīr Māgre and Sayyid Ḥasan to reconquer them. Jahāṅgīr suggested to Sayyid Ḥasan to march together and act jointly. But the latter did not agree to this, and undertook the campaign separately. He invaded Baltistān, and having reduced its chief to obedience, returned to Srinagar in triumph. But Jahāṅgīr, who had proceeded to Ladākh, was defeated by its ruler Lhachen Bhagan (1470-1500). The Ladākhiīs (Bhauṭṭas) fell upon his rear and destroyed his army. Jahāṅgīr himself, however, succeeded in making good his escape and returning to Srinagar. The reverse was due to the disunity of the Kashmirī commanders, for if they had carried on the campaign jointly, Jahāṅgīr’s army would not have met with such a disaster. This defeat was taken advantage of by the Sayyids to incite the Sultān against Jahāṅgīr whom they regarded as a serious rival. Jahāṅgīr, disgusted with the court intrigues and alarmed for his life, went away to Loharkōṭī.

Like his father, Hasan Shāh also indulged in excessive drinking. This in the end undermined his health, and he had a serious attack of diarrhoea. Realising that he would not recover, he sent for Sayyid Ḥasan, his Wazīr and father-in-law, and asked him to recall Adham’s son Faṭḥ Khān, who was living in exile in the Punjāb, and appoint him his successor, as his own sons, Muḥammad, Ḥusain, and Yūsuf, were only minors. But in case the Queen did not approve of this, she was free to make any other arrangement. The Queen was at first agreeable to the Sultān’s suggestion, but, under the influence of her father, she changed her mind, and, when the Sultān died on April 19, 1484, she at once declared her son Muḥammad, who was seven years of age, as Sultān.

1. Ibid., p. 209.
2. I.A., li(1908), p. 191. Also Srīv., p. 253, but Srīvara wrongly calls Sayyid Ḥasan as Sayyid Naṣīr who had by this time died.
4. Ibid., p. 262; T.A., lli, 450.
5. Ibid., pp. 450-1; Srīv., pp. 263 sqq.
As a prince Ḥasan Shāh had shown some energy and enterprise but ever since he became ruler, he took little interest in public affairs, and not even once led an army. Instead, he applied himself more or less exclusively to pleasure. Malik Aḥmad, the Wazīr, at first governed the country well, but later, he too neglected his duties, and appointed to responsible positions in the government his own men who were corrupt and inefficient. Aḥmad's conduct aroused the anger and jealousy of the nobles, and led to an armed conflict. This weakened the administration, and adversely affected law and order. Taking advantage of this the outlying provinces of the kingdom became independent, and only the Valley was left in the possession of Ḥasan Shāh. An attempt to reduce Ladākẖ ended in disaster; and although Baltistān, Jammu, and Rajaurī were reduced, they soon relapsed into independence owing to the weakness of the central government.

Although politically Ḥasan Shāh's reign was a failure, culturally it was of great significance. Ḥasan Shāh was, next to Zainu'l-Ābidīn, the most cultured ruler of the Shāh Mīr dynasty. He patronised men of learning, and under him some Persian works were translated into Sanskrit. He was interested in the spread of education, and founded schools which were liberally endowed. He was not only a great patron of music, but was himself well versed in it. He possessed a sweet voice, and sang Persian, Kashmirī, and Sanskrit songs. His court was adorned with skilful musicians of whom some had come from distant places, attracted by the Sultan's love of music. In all, there were 1,200 musicians in his court.¹

Ḥasan Shāh's reign was characterised by great building activity. He built palaces at Didamar² and Sōpūr, and repaired those which had been erected by his predecessors at various places. In Srinagar he built a khānqāh and dedicated it to his father;³ and when his mother Gul Khātūn died, he constructed a new bridge of boats in her memory

¹. Ibid., pp. 130-2; B.S., f. 58b; H.M., f. 123b.
². The palaces at Didamar were built in 1474 (Srīv., p. 224). Didamar is Diddūmatha of Śrivara. It is now a quarter of Srīnagar and is situated below the seventh bridge on the right bank of the river. Stein, Bk. VI, No. 300n. wrongly says that it is between the sixth and seventh bridges.
at the end of Shihābu’d-Dīnpūr. But the most important edifices which he rebuilt were the Khānqāh-i-Mu’āllā and Jāmi’ Masjid, which had been erected by Sikandar, but a great fire had destroyed them in 1479.1

The example of the Sultan was followed by his nobles. The Wazīr, Malik Aḥmad, constructed a number of buildings at Didamar, including a khānqāh which was endowed with the village of Satipusha,2 and where foreigners were given free accommodation and food. His wife Shāh Bēgum also built a khānqāh on the road leading to Kheri.3 His sons, the nobles, and princes vied with each other in the erection of khānqāhs. Hindus and Buddhists too constructed many religious buildings. Sayyābhāndapatī built a vihāra at Bijbehara,4 while his brothers erected a beautiful stone temple of Gaṇeśa. Many other similar edifices were erected by the Hindus.5

Sultan Muḥammad Shāh (i) 1484-6

Muḥammad Khān ascended the throne under the title of Muḥammad Shāh. But as he was too young to exercise any authority, the affairs of the government were conducted by his maternal grandfather, Sayyid Ḥasan.6 Within a short period, however, Sayyid Ḥasan and other members of his family, owing to their foreign origin and the superior and arrogant attitude which they adopted towards the Kashmirī nobles,7 combined with their opposition to the caste system8 and their discouragement of the use of Sanskrit and Kashmirī,9 became very unpopular in the country.10 The Kashmirī nobles, therefore, organised a plot against them with the help of Paraṣurāṃ, the ruler of Jammu, who, apprehending an attack from Tātār Khān, had fled to

1. S.A., pp. 39-40; W.K., f. 36b; T.H., I, ff. 139a-b; Śrīv., p. 235.
2. The locality cannot be traced. Either its name has changed or it has disappeared.
3. The name Kherī is the older form of Khur used by both Kalhana and Śrīvara. Khur is a large village situated about 2 miles from the Vishokā, in Lat. 33° 37’ Long. 74° 56’ 45” (Stein, ii, p. 470).
4. This town was founded by Raṭā Vijay, and its ancient name was Vijayeshvara. It is 25 miles south-east of Sṛṅagar in Lat. 33° 48’ Long. 75° 9’.
5. Śrīv., p. 227. 6 B.S., f. 61a. 7 Ibid., f. 61b; Śrīv., p. 252.
8. Ibid., p. 302. 9. Ibid., p. 288. 10. Ibid., pp. 288-70; B.S., f. 61b.
Srinagar. One night about three hundred men, including some Jammu soldiers, secretly entered the fort of Naushahr by bribing the guards.\(^1\)

Early next morning, while Sayyid Ḥasan was holding court in the fort, they came out of their hiding places and attacked him and his followers, killing him and thirteen others. A servant, though seriously wounded, escaped through a drain in the fort, and informed Sayyid Ḥasan’s son, Sayyid Muḥammad, of the tragedy.\(^2\)

Hearing of this Sayyid Muḥammad with his brother Sayyid Hāshim at once attacked the fort and occupied it. He also seized all the treasure which was there, and distributed it among his troops.\(^3\)

Meanwhile, ʿĪḍī Raina tried to secure the release of Yūsuf Khān, the son of Bahram Khān, and to set him up on the throne. But Sayyid ‘Alī Baihaqī, one of the Sayyid nobles, came to know of the plot, and he immediately put Yūsuf Khān to death.\(^4\)

Sītan Devī, Yūsuf’s mother, kept the body of her son with her for three days, and then had it buried. Near his grave she built a cell where she passed the rest of her days.\(^5\)

Hearing of these events, Jahāngīr Māgre returned to Srinagar from Loharkōt at the request of the Kashmirī nobles. The Sayyids offered to come to terms with him. But he refused, and sent his son Dāʿūd, accompanied by Ṣaifdār, across the bridge to attack the Sayyids in Naushahr. But Dāʿūd was defeated and killed. To celebrate their victory, the Sayyids erected a minaret of the heads of the slain.\(^6\)

Encouraged by this success, the Sayyids themselves decided to take the offensive. Informed of this the Kashmirīs also advanced and encountered the enemy on the bridge. But suddenly it gave way, and as a result many soldiers from both the armies were drowned in the river.\(^7\)

\(^1\) Śīrv., pp. 270-1; Firishta, 668; B.S., ff. 62a-63a. But B.S., does not refer to the part played by the ruler of Jammu.

\(^2\) B.S., ff. 62a-63a. The number 30 given by Śīrv., p. 272, is exaggerated.

\(^3\) B.S., ff. 63b sqq.

\(^4\) Munich MS., f. 79a; T.A., iii, 452. See also Śīrv., pp. 274-5. Edarajānaka of Śrīvara is ʿĪḍī Raina of Persian chronicles.

\(^5\) Munich MS., f. 79a; T.A., iii, 452; Śīrv., p. 276, calls her Sobānā.

\(^6\) Munich MS., f. 79a; T.A., iii, 452.

\(^7\) Ibid., 453; Munich MS. f. 80a.
Realising that the Kashmirī nobles were getting bolder and stronger every day, the Sayyids sought the help of Tātār Khān, the Lodi governor of the Punjāb. The latter sent to their aid some troops. But when these reached Bhimbhar, its Rājā checked their advance, and compelled them to retreat. This news raised the spirits of the Kashmirīs whose attacks on the Sayyids became more frequent. But they were indecisive, being only in the nature of skirmishes. The victory sometimes lay with the Kashmirīs and sometimes with the Sayyids. After two months, however, the Kashmirī nobles with a large army crossed the Jehlam and attacked the Sayyids. The latter, being outnumbered, were defeated. They fled, but were pursued, and many of them were killed and the city of Naushahr was set fire to. The Kashmirī nobles entered the fort of Naushahr, and saluted Muḥammad Shāh as Sultan. The Sayyids were once again banished from the country. Their jāgīrs were confiscated and distributed among the nobles who had brought about their overthrow. Paraṣurām, who had played an important part in the conflict against the Sayyids, was given presents and allowed to depart. Jahāngīr Māgre was appointed prime minister.

The facade of unity in the country lasted as long as the Sayyids were in power. But as soon as the latter were overthrown, the nobles restarted quarrelling. Some of them invited Fath Khān, the son of Adham Khān, who was living in Jalandhar, and promised him support. On receiving the invitation, Fath Khān proceeded to Rajaurī, and although he was dissuaded from the step by Jahāngīr Māgre, he, in the middle of 1485, having won over Mas'ūd Nāyak, the Guardian of the passes, entered Kashmir via Hirapūr, where he was

1. Ibid., f. 80a; T.A., iii, 453.
2. Ibid., Munich MS., ff. 80a-b.
3. Ibid., Śrīv., pp. 302-3. The account in B.S., ff. 65b-66b is partial to the Sayyids. It is wrong to say that peace was brought about by the mediation of the 'Ulamā and that the Kashmirī nobles repented for their part in the assassination of Sayyid Muḥammad's father.
4. Śrīv., p. 302.
5. T.A., iii, 454, says that Fath Khān after Tātār Khān's death became governor of the Punjāb. But this is not supported by any other authority. Śrīv., p. 309 only says that after Tātār Khān's death his son gave protection to Fath Khān, who after some time went to live in Jalandhar. Munich MS., f. 80b says that after Tātār's death Fath Khān proceeded to Rajaurī. Probably this was done at the invitation of the Kashmirī chiefs.
joined by his supporters. Jahāngīr at once set out with Muhammad Shāh and encamped at Gūs Udar. But on hearing that Fath Khān had reached Kālampūr, he marched to attack him, leaving behind Muhammad Shāh at Gūs Udar. Heavy fighting took place at Kalampūr. The royal forces were on the point of being defeated, when Jahāngīr rallied them by spreading a false rumour that Fath Khān had been captured. This demoralised the latter’s followers and they fled. Fath Khān, despairing of success, also left the battle-field and finally managed to escape to the Punjab. Some of his leading supporters were, however, seized and thrown into prison and their houses were plundered.

Although defeated and driven out of Kashmir, Fath Khān organised his forces at Bahrāmgala, and again invaded Kashmir the following year. Jahāngīr Māgre encountered him on the karēwa in the Nāgām pargana. Meanwhile Zirāk Baṭ, a follower of Fath Khān, entered Srinagar with a small following and secured the release of Malik Šaīfdār and others who had been imprisoned because they had supported Fath Khān. Jahāngīr became alarmed at these developments and made peace with Fath Khān through the mediation of the Rājā of Rajaurī. Meanwhile he began his intrigues, and having succeeded in alienating the Rājā from Fath Khān and in separating the latter from his other supporters, he attacked him. Fath Khān, finding himself completely isolated, fled, pursued by Jahāngīr as far as Hirapūr.

1. Śrīv., pp. 311 sqq.
2. It is a plateau south of Srinagar, crossed by the road from Shupiyan. Śrīvara calls it Gusikoddāra. (See Stein, ii, 474).
3. Śrīvara calls it Kalyānapūra. It is situated in Lat. 33° 48′ Long. 74° 54′. Being on the high road from the Pir Panjāl Pass to Srinagar it has been the scene of many battles.
5. Munich MS., f. 81a.
6. It is a small village in Lat. 33° 36′ Long. 74° 27′ on the road between Bhimbhar and Kashmir. It is situated in a deep gorge at the foot of the Ratan Pir Pass. Its old name was Bhairavagala.
7. Śrīv., pp. 322-3; Munich MS., f. 81a; T.A., iii, 455.
8. Śrīv., p. 325.
9. Ibid., Munich MS., f. 81b. Zirāk Baṭ had also deserted to Muhammad Shāh. But later he was put to death by Jahāngīr Māgre. (Śrīv. p. 327).
From Hirapūr, Fath Khān proceeded to Jammu which he occupied, and then again made an attempt to seize the throne of Kashmir. Jahāngīr Māgre advanced to offer him battle with the support of Sayyid Muḥammad and other Sayyid chiefs whom he had recalled from their exile in India.1 Fath Khān being defeated at Gūs Udar, retired to Rajaurī along with his adviser and commander Šaifdār. However, he did not lose heart. A few months after he again organised an army and entered the Valley. He met the royal forces at Dāmadar Udar,2 and this time he was victorious. Jahāngīr escaped with a wound, Sayyid Muḥammad deserted and joined Fath Khān. Muḥammad Shāh tried to escape but was seized by Fath Khān’s supporters (October 14, 1486).3 He was confined in his own palace, but was provided with all comforts. Fath Khān was proclaimed ruler, and ascended the throne under the title of Sultān Fath Shāh. The Khašas who had come with him sacked the city; and although order was restored after three days, yet, for about six months, the kingdom was at their mercy.4

**Sultān Fath Shāh (i) 1486-93**

Fath Shāh was religious and possessed simple habits. He abstained from wine, did not play dice, and led a strictly moral life.5 He was intelligent, brave, and enterprising, and tried his best to curb the power of the nobles, but he was not successful. The result was that while he reigned the nobles ruled in his name, and the decline of the dynasty continued.

Since Fath Shāh had secured the throne through the efforts of Šaifdār, he made him his prime minister. Soon however he became dissatisfied with him for keeping all power in his own hands and treating him only as a figure-head. He therefore secured the support of Nuṣrat Raina, Sarhang Raina, Müsā Raina, and Shams Chak and decided to overthrow Šaifdār. In order to carry on his preparations undisturbed he destroyed all the bridges of the town, and

2. It is a plateau south of Srinagar and is called Damodaroddara by Śrīvara and Damodarasaūda by Kalhana (Stein, Bk. 1, No. 156n; vol. ii, 475).
3. Śrīv., pp. 328-32; also Munich MS., ff. 81b-82a.
4. Śrīv., pp. 334-5.
then, after a few days, attacked Šaifdār at the village of Ramīna.¹
A fierce hand to hand fight ensued. Šaifdār was killed by Sarhang
Raina, but the latter himself was mortally wounded by him. However,
Šaifdār’s death completely demoralised his troops, and they fled.
Fath Shāh was glad at this victory and rewarded Mūsā Raina and
Nuṣrat Raina with gifts, while Shams Chak was appointed prime
minister.²

Shams Chak was the son of Hilmat Chak who with his tribe had
come from the direction of Gilgit and had settled in Kopwārā. He had
served in turn Sayyid Muḥammad, Malik Naurūz, and Šaifdār. He
was brave and had earned fame in the civil wars. He married the
daughter of Pāṇḍū Chak’s son Ḫusain Chak who was living in
Gawārīl.³ This united the two families which had hitherto been hostile
to each other, and greatly strengthened the position of Shams Chak,
for all the followers of Ḫusain Chak joined him.⁴

After two and a half years of peace, dissensions among the nobles
revived. The relations between Sayyid Muḥammad and Shams
Chak became estranged. Ibrāhīm Māgre, the son of Jahāṅgīr Māgre,
and ‘Īdī Raina also turned against Shams Chak, and, with the help of
Sayyid Muḥammad, made preparations to overthrow him.⁵ They then
attacked him in the vicinity of Bulbul Shāh’s tomb and defeated him.
Shams Chak, however, succeeded in crossing the bridge of ‘Alī Kadal
over to Ziīlakar where he was joined by Kājī Chak who had also
fought his way through the ranks of the enemy. Shams Chak, at first,
thought of again making a stand, but as his forces were smaller and
many of his supporters had deserted him, he retired to Kamrāj. Since
Fath Shāh had allied himself with Shams Chak he had to give up his

¹. It was a village near Srinagar, but now it has disappeared and is not found
on the maps.
². B.S., f. 68a; H.M., ff. 124b-25b.
³. It is not traceable on any map. There is, however, a village of the name
of Garūra on the Volur lake.
⁴. B.S., ff. 67a-b.
⁵. B.S., f. 68a; H.M., f. 125b. N.A., f. 53b says that Fath Shāh was also a
party to the coalition against Shams Chak. But this is not corroborated
by earlier accounts.
throne and retire to Naushahrā. Mūḥammad Shāh, who had been confined in his own palace, was released and declared Sultān for the second time.

Sultān Mūḥammad Shāh (ii) 1493-1505

Immediately on ascending the throne, Mūḥammad Shāh, accompanied by his prime minister, Sayyid Mūḥammad, Ibrāhīm Māgre, and Mūsā Raina, set out against Shams Chak. When he reached the village of Trahgām, Shams Chak moved to Ļrāva. Mūḥammad Shāh, having destroyed the houses of Shams Chak’s partisans in and around Trahgām, proceeded to Sūpūr. When Shams Chak heard of this he returned to Trahgām; and since he had a smaller army than that of his opponents, he decided to make a night attack and marched to Sūpūr, reaching there early in the morning. Mūḥammad Shāh was taken by surprise and fled across the bridge, leaving behind some of his baggage which fell into the hands of the enemy. He then destroyed the bridge, and encamped on the other side of the river. But Mūsā Raina, being stationed at some distance from the main army, learnt of the night attack after the bridge had been destroyed, and so he could not cross the river. However, though he had a small force he refused to surrender, and when he was attacked by Shams Chak, he made a brave stand and, with the help of Kājī Chak, ‘Īdī Raina, and Sayyid Mūḥammad, defeated him. Shams Chak fled to Trahgām, and thence to Naushahrā, where he joined Fath Shāh. Mūḥammad Shāh returned to his capital in triumph, and conferred upon Mūsā Raina a jagīr in reward for his services. But this did not please Mūsā, as he felt he had been assigned a smaller jagīr than what he deserved. Moreover at this time arrived Shamsu’d-Dīn for the second time in Kashmir and Mūsā became his

1. It lies on the Pīr Panjāl route to Kashmir, and is distant about 122 miles south-west of Srinagar. It is situated in Lat. 33° 10' Long. 74° 18'.
2. H.M., ff. 125b-27a; B.S., ff. 68a-70a.
3. It is the modern name of the Kishanganga Valley from below Shardi as far as Karnāv. Its ancient name was Duranda, but the Persian chronicles call it Dārdū. (Stein, BK. viii No. 2709n).
4. B.S., ff. 70a-b; H.M., ff. 127a-b.
5. B.S., ff. 71a-b; H.M., ff. 127b sqq; N.K., ff. 30a-b.
7. Ibid.
8. See Appendix A for more details of his life.
devoted follower. But Sayyid Muḥammad did not approve of Shamsu’Dīn’s ideas, and compelled him to retire to Skārdū. Mūsā was therefore very angry with Sayyid Muḥammad, and having won over Ibrāhīm Māgre and Ḥājī Pādar, invited Fath Shāh, who was in Naushahrā, to Kashmir. Fath Shāh, accordingly, entered the Valley, and on reaching Hirāpur was joined by Mūsā, Ibrāhīm, and Ḥājī.\(^1\) Hearing of this Muḥammad Shāh accompanied by Sayyid Muḥammad marched against them, and defeated them at Zainakōt. The next day, however, Fath Shāh after reorganising his army again offered battle. He was on the point of losing when suddenly Sayyid Muḥammad was killed. This demoralised the royal forces, and they fled. Muḥammad Shāh nearly escaped capture, and succeeded in making his way to Naushahrā. Fath Shāh was thereupon proclaimed Sultān.\(^2\)

Sultān Fath Shāh (ii) 1505-14

On ascending the throne Fath Shāh raised Shams Chak, who had been with him in exile, to the office of prime minister. But partly out of jealousy and partly because of the arrogant attitude of Shams Chak, Ibrāhīm Māgre and Mūsā Raina resented his appointment. And shortly afterwards, they joined hands with Fath Shāh who also had begun to chafe under the yoke of his minister. A plot was therefore organised against Shams Chak and he was seized and thrown into prison. Since Shams Chak had been responsible for the assassination of Saifdār and the overthrow of the Dāngres, Mūsā Raina employed Bahrām Dār and Dāti Malik for putting him to death.\(^3\) Although Shams Chak was in chains, and had no weapons to defend himself with, except a small knife, yet he fought with his assassins like a tiger, killing three of them and wounding others. In the end, however, he was overpowered by a shower of arrows and killed along with his son. He had remained Wazīr only for four months.\(^4\)

The first act of Mūsā Raina, who now replaced Shams Chak, was

---

1. B.S., ff. 71b-72a; Tuhfatul-Aḥbāb, pp. 68-9; Majmu’a dar Ansab Mashāikh-i-Kashmir, f. 111b.
2. B.S., ff. 72a sqq; H.M., f. 129b.
3. B.S., f. 77a.
4. B.S., ff. 77a-b. H.M., f. 130a, says Shams Chak remained in office for two months.
to exile the Dangre tribe which had turned against him. He then recalled Shamsu’d-Dīn from Skārdū, and helped him in his missionary activities. Mūsā Raina was able and efficient and ruled Kashmir with a strong hand. But Ibrāhīm Māgre, who had so far been friendly with him, now became hostile. He won over Fāṭḥ Shāh as well as some of the nobles who did not approve of Mūsā’s religious policy. He then with his supporters proceeded to the palace at Sikandarpūr (Srinagar), and having destroyed the bridge of the city, prepared to attack Mūsā. The latter, on the other hand, encamped in the field of Zīāldakar; but finding that his forces were smaller than those of his rivals, he decided to retire to India. Meanwhile, Malik ‘Uṣmān and Dati Malik, chiefs of the Dangre tribe, who had been exiled by Mūsā Raina, set out towards Srinagar via Hirapūr at the invitation of Ibrāhīm Māgre. Mūsā, in order to avoid encountering them, took the route of Chira Hār, but on the way he was killed by a soldier.

Fāṭḥ Shāh now appointed Ibrāhīm Māgre his prime minister. But Ibrāhīm remained in power only for forty days, because the Dangre chiefs, whom he had recalled from India to his aid, became alienated, and, with the help of some nobles, succeeded in overthrowing him. Ibrāhīm fled to India. He was a past master in the art of intrigue, but was incompetent as an administrator; and during his short tenure of office there was utter lawlessness in the country.

After the flight of Ibrāhīm, Malik ‘Uṣmān became Wazīr. But two months after, Kājī Chak, Jahāngīr Padar, and Gadā’ī Malik formed a plot against him with the support of Fāṭḥ Shāh. They surprised Dati Malik, who was in the palace administering justice, and

1. B.S., f. 78a.
2. Ibid., H.M., ff. 131a-b. These chronicles state that Mūsā Raina remained in power for nine years, but this seems incorrect, for Fāṭḥ Shāh himself reigned for nine years, and during this period ministerial changes occurred seven times.
4. B.S., ff. 80b-81a; H.M., f. 131a.
5. H.M., f. 131b. B.S., ff. 81a-b says his death was caused by a fall from his horse. According to T.H., ii, f. 115b, his neck got entangled in a vine creeper and he fell from the horse and died on the spot. But this manner of death is also attributed to ‘Īdī Raina by Haidar Malik and Nārāyan Kaul.
6. B.S., f. 81b; H.M., f. 131b; I.A., xxxvii, p. 192.
killed him. They seized Malik 'Ušmān, who was in another room with Fatḥ Shāh, and threw him into prison. Thereupon, Jahāngīr Padar was set up as Wazīr. But only a month had elapsed when Ibrāhīm Māgre returned from the Punjab with an army, and defeated Jahāngīr Padar and Kājī Chak. The latter, accompanied by Fatḥ Shāh who had supported him, left for the Punjab. But Ibrāhīm recalled Fatḥ Shāh, who had reached as far as Hirāpūr, and acknowledged him as Suṭṭān. Coins were struck and the _khutba_ was recited in the name of Fatḥ Shāh.1

Ibrāhīm Māgre had enjoyed office only for a year, when Malik 'Ušmān, who had been released by him from prison, Shankar Raina, and Nuṣrat Raina formed a league in concert with Fatḥ Shāh and seized Abdāl and Fīrūz, the two sons of Ibrāhīm. This made the latter so demoralised that he fled to Pūnc. Thereupon Malik 'Ušmān became Wazīr, and the kingdom was divided into three parts among 'Ušmān, Shankar, and Nuṣrat.2

Peace, however, lasted only for five months, after which Ibrāhīm Māgre and the Chaks, who were in the Punjab, patched up their differences and decided to enthrone Muḥammad Shāh. They advanced from Pūnc to Bārāmüla, and established themselves at Sōpūr. Thereupon Malik 'Ušmān with Fatḥ Shāh set out towards Sōpūr, and encamped opposite the enemy forces with only the Jehlam between them. But as 'Ušmān could not cross the river and attack the enemy, he left behind Fatḥ Shāh and Shankar Raina to keep watch over their movements, while he himself marched by way of Khuyāshrama3 to attack them from the rear. But Lohar Māgre and Rēgī Chak came to know of his plan, and they tried to intercept him.4 They were however defeated at the village of Pushkaranāga,5 and retreated to join Muḥammad Shāh's forces. When Malik 'Alī Sarkhail heard of this

---

1. B.S., ff. 81b-82a; H.M., ff. 131b-32a.
2. B.S., ff. 83a-b; H.M., f. 132a; Prāj. pp. 343-4.
3. It is a pargana on the northern shore of the Volur lake. Śrīvara calls it Khuyāshrama.
4. B.S., ff. 83b-84a.
5. Ibid., f. 84a; H.M., f. 132b. Pushkaranāga is a village situated in Lat. 34° 2' Long. 74° 33' at the foot of the hill of the same name on its east side.
defeat, he decided to play a ruse. He spread the news through some of the trusted men of Fatḥ Shāh that Malik ‘Uṣmān had been defeated and killed, and that Muḥammad Shāh’s forces would cross the river next day to seize Fatḥ Shāh. The latter should, therefore, escape to Pūnic while there was still time. On being informed of this Fatḥ Shāh was seized with panic and, leaving behind part of his baggage, made good his escape in the night by the Tōshamaidān route. Thus the victory, which Malik ‘Uṣmān had gained over Lohar Māgre, was thrown away and turned into defeat by the pusillanimity of Fatḥ Shāh. This disheartened him, and he too fled. But he was pursued by Ibrāhīm Māgre and captured. He was then thrown into prison and there put to death. Shankar and Nusrat, however, having submitted, were pardoned.

Muḥammad Shāh (iii) 1514-15

After the flight of Fatḥ Shāh, Muḥammad Shāh became Sultān for the third time. He appointed Ibrāhīm Māgre his chief minister, because it was due to his efforts that he had secured the throne. Meanwhile Fatḥ Shāh, having again decided to invade Kashmir, sent his son Ḥabīb Khān to find out the chances of his success. Ḥabīb Khān was joined by Jahāngīr Padar, and was promised support by the Chak nobles who were related to his mother. With these assurances Fatḥ Shāh entered the Valley, and many nobles, including the Chak chiefs led by Kājī Chak, rallied to him. Owing to these defections Muḥammad Shāh and Ibrāhīm Māgre did not offer any resistance, and left Kashmir for the Punjāb. Fatḥ Shāh thus recovered the throne after nine months of exile.

Fatḥ Shāh (iii) 1515-17

Although Fatḥ Shāh was the Sultān, he was only a figure-head.

1. B.S., ff. 84b-5a; The route followed by Fatḥ Shāh is mentioned in B.S. as being via Jawail. I cannot find this place on maps. In T.H., ii, f. 117a it is the Tōshamaidān route. In Śuka, p. 346, it is the Hirapūr route.
2. B.S., f. 85a; H.M., f. 132b. Śuka, p. 347, calls Malik ‘Uṣmān as Uṣmān al Ulāa Malik.
3. N.A., f. 58b. 4. H.M., f. 132b. 5. Ibid., 85b.
6. B.S., f. 85b.
for the real power was in the hands of the nobles. Moreover, his prime minister, Jahāngīr Padar, and the two chiefs Shankar Raina and Kājī Chak had assigned him only the revenues of the crown lands, while they had divided the rest of the Valley among themselves.¹

In the autumn of 1515 Muḥammad Shāh with Ibrāhīm Māgre entered Kashmir to claim the throne. They were met by the royal forces at Bāngil. Ibrāhīm Māgre was killed with his two sons, but Muḥammad Shāh managed to escape to Pūnch. After wandering for nearly two years he proceeded to the court of Sulṭān Sikandar Lodi (1489-1517) to seek his help. He was received with respect and supplied with a force of 3,000 men. With these Muḥammad Shāh set out towards Kashmir.² When he reached Dānaor,³ he received messages of loyalty and promises of support from Kājī Chak, Shankar Raina, and Nuṣrat Raina.⁴ And shortly after, these nobles raised the banner of revolt against Fath Shāh and occupied the fort of Harshīn.⁵ Fath Shāh and Jahāngīr Padar besieged them, but were repulsed. Fath Shāh thereupon fled to the Punjāb.⁶ There he died in August 1517. His body was brought to the Valley, and Muḥammad Shāh had it buried with all due ceremonies near the grave of Sulṭān Zainu’l-‘Abidīn.⁷

**Muḥammad Shāh (iv) 1517-28**

Meanwhile, hearing the news of Fath Shāh's overthrow and convinced of the loyalty of his own supporters, Muḥammad Shāh decided to dispense with the aid of the foreign troops whose presence in the Valley would not only make him unpopular but would also be an unnecessary burden upon the country. He therefore left behind the

---

². B.S., ff. 86a-b; H.M., f. 133a; Šuka, pp. 348-9. Munich MS., f. 83a and T.A., iii, p. 458, wrongly state that Muḥammad Shāh proceeded to the court of Sikandar Khokar. T.A., borrowed it from Munich MS.
³. It is marked on Stein's map as lying north-east of Rajauri (R.A.S.B., 1, 1889).
⁴. B.S., f. 86a.
⁵. Harshīn is a village about 10 miles south-west of Shuplyan.
⁶. H.M., f. 133a. According to B.S., f. 85a, Fath Shāh's overthrow was brought about by Mīr Shamsu’d-Dīn.
⁷. B.S., f. 88a; H.M., f. 135a; Munich MS., f. 84a.
Indian troops at Danaor, and with 2,000 of his followers proceeded towards Srinagar. On arriving there he appointed Kaji Chak his Wazir, but suspecting Shankar Raina of treachery, he threw him into prison. He then returned to Danaor to dismiss the Indian troops. He accompanied them as far as Naushahrā, and there he bid them farewell. But as winter had set in, and the routes to Kashmir were blocked by snow, he himself decided to remain in Naushahrā.

During Mūhammad Shāh’s absence the Valley was plunged into civil war. Nutrat Raina was angry at the imprisonment of Shankar and the appointment of Kaji Chak as chief minister, and so he revolted with the help of Lohar Māgre. Kaji, on the other hand, was joined by Jahāngīr Padar who had hitherto been his rival. Each faction thus prepared for a conflict. Nutrat Raina finding himself not strong enough to fight a pitched battle with Kaji Chak, decided upon a night attack. But his plan miscarried, for Kaji came to know of it and was ready to oppose him. The engagement took place at Ziałdakar. Kaji was wounded, but Nutrat’s fall demoralised his supporters and they fled. The Chaks were thus victorious. Early in spring Mūhammad Shāh entered Kashmir accompanied by Sayyid Ibrāhīm, the son of Sayyid Mūhammad Baihaqi.

Kaji Chak’s friendship with Jahāngīr Padar was only short-lived. Early in 1520 he despatched his son Mas‘ūd with a large force to seize Jahāngīr Padar who was in the village of Pāmpūr. Jahāngīr warned of this fled to Dārdū, where he joined Gadā‘ī Malik. Mas‘ūd having plundered his house returned to Srinagar.

Next year in May 1521 there was another rising led by Malik Abdāl, the son of Ibrāhīm Māgre, Lohar Māgre, and ‘Īdī Raina. They

1. Shankar was later killed in prison (N.A., f. 60a). But Šuka, p. 355, says that he died a natural death. Rājāna Sriṅgārī of the Sanskrit chronicles is no other than Shankar Raina.
2. B.S., ff. 86b-7a; H.M., ff. 133a-b; also Šuka, pp. 351-3.
3. B.S., ff. 87a-b; H.M., ff. 134a-5a; Šuka, pp. 351-2.
4. H.M., f. 135a; T.H., ii, 119a. Pāmpūr is situated on the right bank of Jehlām about 8 miles south-east of Srinagar. Its ancient name was Padmapura.
5. H.M., f. 135b; N.A., f. 60b; B.S., f. 89b, says that Jahāngīr fled to Kamrāj.
joined Fatḥ Shāh’s son Sikandar, and, having proclaimed him ruler, seized the fort of Nāgām. Jahāngīr Padar and Gadā’ī Malik, who were in Dārdū, also set out towards Nāgām in order to support Sikandar. Kāji Chak sent Daulat and Masʿūd, to intercept them, while he himself marched to attack Sikandar. He defeated him at Lulpūr, and when Sikandar after this reverse retreated to the fort of Nāgām, he besieged him there. Meanwhile Daulat Chak attacked Gadā’ī Malik near Shādīpūr and killed him. But Masʿūd Chak did not fare well against Jahāngīr Padar. Being struck by an arrow in the eye, he fell from his horse and died. But in spite of this temporary setback the victory lay in the end with the Chaks. Daulat after defeating Gadā’ī Malik, crossed the river at Shādīpūr, and joined Sayyid Ibrāhīm and Tāzī Chak who had been sent by Kāji Chak to the help of Masʿūd. Together they prevented Jahāngīr Padar from crossing the river and joining Sikandar in the fort of Nāgām. Meanwhile Sikandar, finding his position untenable, since no help could reach him, made overtures of peace to Kāji and then fled to the Punjāb. Soon after Jahāngīr Padar too made good his escape. Lohar Māgre and ‘Īdī Raina however submitted and were pardoned by Muḥammad Shāh. Daulat Chak, Kāji’s nephew, received the jāgīr of Masʿūd for his success against Jahāngīr and Gadā’ī Malik.

In 1522 the Māgres again invaded and brought with them this time Fatḥ Shāh’s second son, Ḥabīb Khān, as pretender. But as their forces were small they failed to achieve anything. Moreover, ‘Īdī Raina went over to the enemy. This disheartened them, and they retired from the Valley. On the way Ḥabīb died. His body was brought to Srinagar and buried near the grave of his father. Soon after Kāji recalled the Māgre chiefs and entered into marriage alliances with them.

Kāji Chak having pacified his enemies became very powerful. But this aroused the resentment of Muḥammad Shāh who found himself

1. It is an important place near Chirār Sharīf in Badgām Taḥsīl, about 9 miles south of Srinagar. It is famous for its springs.
2. B.S., f. 89b; Munich MS., ff. 84a-b; Šuka, pp. 355-7.
4. B.S., f. 90b.
to be a ruler only in name. He therefore won over some of the important nobles like Malik Abdāl, Lohar Māgre, Malik ‘Alī Chādūra, and Rēgī Chak, and plotted Kājī’s overthrow. He left the city and proceeded to Lār with Naurūz Chak, a cousin of Kājī, to organise resistance. There was however no conflict, for when Kājī saw that the nobles on whom he depended had deserted him, he got disgusted and went away to Naushahrā in 1527.¹

Soon after these events, Kashmir was threatened by an invasion of the Mughals under Kūchak Bēg and Shaikh ‘Alī Bēg who were despatched by Bābur to help Sikandar in securing the throne.² When Kājī Chak heard of this his patriotism was stirred, and although he had received no orders from Muḥammad Shāh, he prepared to repel the invasion. He collected a force from the surrounding area and sent Tājī Chak, Ḥusain Chak, and his son Ghāzī, who was at this time only about eighteen years of age, against them. Both Ghāzī and Tājī fought bravely and defeated the Turks in the neighbourhood of Naushahrā. Kājī then seized Sikandar who had invited the Mughals.³

When Muḥammad Shāh heard of this, he expressed his gratitude to Kājī, and requested him to forget the past and return to Srinagar. Kājī accordingly returned in 1527, and brought with him Sikandar whom he handed over to Muḥammad Shāh. Sikandar was blinded by the Sultan’s orders, although Kājī Chak opposed the infliction of such a cruel punishment. Sikandar died in prison after a few days.⁴

Muḥammad Shāh again appointed Kājī his Wazīr. But this led to the revival of old feudal rivalries. The Māgres and Malik ‘Alī Chādūra revolted against Muḥammad Shāh for having shown favour to Kājī. They entrenched themselves in the village of Kichhāmā,⁵ and prepared for resistance. Muḥammad Shāh despatched Kājī and

1. B.S., 91a; H.M., f. 136a.
2. Bābur does not refer to this event in his Memoirs. But T.A., iii, 460, says that Sikandar returned with a party of the Mughals; and Firishta, 673, says that the Mughals belonged to Bābur. See also B.S., f. 91a.
3. B.S., ff. 91a-b; H.M., f. 136a. See also N.A., ff. 61b-2a. N.K., ff. 32a-b.
4. B.S., f. 91a; Munich MS., f. 85a; Šuka, pp. 361-2.
5. It is about 5 miles south-west of Bārāmūla. It is the point where the Jehlam is said to leave the Valley.
Sayyid Ibrāhīm against the rebels. The Māgre forces were completely routed, and Malik 'Alī was captured. He was made over to Tājī Chak who confined him in his house. But shortly after he managed to escape to the Punjāb with the connivance of Tājī. Meanwhile differences had arisen between Kājī and Mūḥammad Shāh. As a result Kājī deposed him in favour of his son Ibrāhīm. Mūḥammad Shāh with some of the nobles was imprisoned in the village of Lad.¹

Ṣūlṭān Ibrāhīm Shāh I (1528-29) and Nāzuk Shāh (1529-30)

Ibrāhīm Shāh² was a ruler only in name, for it was Kājī who exercised real power. Soon after Malik 'Alī Chādurā, Rēgī Chak, and the Māgre chiefs, who were in exile, conferred at Naushahrā and decided to send Abdāl Māgre to the court of the Emperor Bābur to seek his help against Kājī Chak. Abdāl proceeded to Delhi and was received with honour by the Emperor who gave him an army under his two commanders, Shaikh 'Alī Bēg and Mūḥammad Khān.³ With this Mughal force the Kashmiri chiefs set out to invade Kashmir. But realising that the people of the Valley would look upon the coming of the Mughals with distrust, Abdāl Māgre declared Nāzuk Shāh also called Nādīr Shāh, the son of Faṭḥ Shāh, as Sūlṭān.⁴

Early in the spring of 1528 the rebel chiefs with Nāzuk Shāh and the Mughal army entered Kashmir. Kājī Chak, hearing of this, at once

---

¹ B.S., f. 92a; H.M., (B.N.), f. 137a. Also Suka, p. 364, who calls Lad as Gaggada. But Munich MS., f. 86a, says Mūḥammad Shāh was imprisoned in Loharkōt. T.A., iii, 462, follows Munich MS.

Lad cannot be traced. Probably it is a nūr (narrow vale) with Lad as its local name.

² Ibrāhīm Shāh had accompanied his father to Ibrāhīm Lodi. Mūḥammad Shāh after receiving the aid had left, but Ibrāhīm had remained behind with the Lodi Sūlṭān. After the battle of Pānipat in which Ibrāhīm seems to have fought on the side of the Lodīs against Bābur, he returned to Kashmir. (Munich MS., f. 85a; Firishta p. 674; Suka, p. 363).

³ B.S., f. 92a; H.M., f. 137a; Munich MS., ff. 85a-b. T.H., ii, f, 120b, says that Bābur gave Abdāl 20,000 troops. But this is absurd. Suka, p. 364, gives the figure as 1,000. T.A. and Firishta do not give any figures.

⁴ Munich MS., f. 85a; Suka, p. 365. H.M. and B.S. do not mention Nāzuk Shāh at all. Firishta wrongly says that Nāzuk Shāh was the son of Ibrāhīm Shāh.
marched against them, and met them at Tāpar. Although he and his followers fought with great courage, they were defeated. Many of the Chak nobles, including Tāzi Chak, lost their lives. Kāji however succeeded in escaping to the Salt Range, while Sayyid Ibrāhīm, Ghāzī Chak, and Daulat Chak were made prisoners and sent under a guard to the city. But on the way, at nightfall, Daulat Chak escaped in a boat, and remained in the neighbourhood, immersed in water up to his chin with his head covered with water-lilies. His guards searched for him until midnight with the help of a large number of boats but without success. After the guards left, Daulat made good his escape. Ghāzī and Sayyid Ibrāhīm, however, remained in custody, and with them the Māgres and the Mughals entered the capital in triumph.

Owing to the victory of the Māgres, Ibrāhīm Shāh, who had been set up by Kāji and was the son of his sister Šāleḥ Māji, was deposed and Nāzuk Shāh was enthroned. Nāzuk transferred his capital to Naushahrā, and gave assurance of safety to the Kashmīris who were apprehensive of the Mughals. Abdāl Māgre assumed the office of Wazīr. But Nāzuk Shāh remained in power only for a year, for Muḥammad Shāh, who was in prison at Lad, was brought from there and enthroned in the summer of 1530. But he was a ruler in name, for the real power was wielded by the nobles who had been responsible for his recall. He was given the crown lands for his expenses, while the rest of the kingdom was divided equally among Abdāl Māgre, Lohar Māgre, Rēgī Chak, and Malik ‘Alī Chādura.

**Muḥammad Shāh (v) 1530-37**

After these changes the Mughal troops were given presents and

---

1. Briggs, iv. p. 491. Tāpar is a considerable village situated on the high road from Bārāmūlā to Srinagar in Lat. 34° 12' Long. 74° 34'. Its ancient name was Pratāpapura. (Stein, ii, 482). Sūka, p. 365, mentions Nilāshva as the place of the battle. This place cannot be identified. But according to Stein, BK. vii, No. 1631n, it was probably a territorial division in Kashmir. Fīrahta and T.A. have Shāh, but it is really Nilā. B.S., and H.M. merely say that the battle took place in Bāngil pargana. Nilā must have been situated near Tāpar.

2. B.S., ff. 92a sqq; H.M., ff. 137b-8a; Munich MS., ff. 85a-6a.


4. Munich MS., ff. 86a-b; T.A., iii, 462.

5. Munich MS., f. 86b.

requested to leave, for it was felt that their permanent stay in the
country would not be good for it. Malik ‘Alī was deputed to escort
them as far as Naushahrā.1 Meanwhile, Bābur died and was succeeded
by Humāyūn. When the Mughal commanders returned to Lahore they
informed Kāmān, Humāyūn’s governor of the Punjāb, that owing to
the disunity in Kashmir it was not difficult to conquer it.2 Kāmān,
therefore, in 1531, set out towards the Valley accompanied by Mahām
Bēg and Shaikh ‘Alī Bēg. On reaching Naushahrā, Kāmān sent his
two commanders with 3,000 horse to undertake the invasion, while he
himself stayed behind.3 Owing to the absence of any strong govern-
ment in the Valley the passes were left undefended, and so the Mughals easily
entered the country. However, the Kashmirīs tried to check their
advance on the capital, but were defeated, and had to retreat to the fort
of Chīraodar.4 The Mughals thereupon marched on Srīnagar and
occupied it. They sacked the city, set fire to it, and slew the Kashmirīs
who had come down from the hills to fight them.5 After this they
marched on the fort of Chīraodar, which was also occupied, the
Kashmirī forces having withdrawn to Athwājan6 without putting up a
fight. When Kāmān, who was still in Naushahrā, heard the news of
these victories he returned to Lahore, convinced that Kashmir had finally
been reduced, and that there would be no further resistance.7

At first the Kashmirī nobles thought that Kāji Chak was supporting
the Mughals, but learning that he was neutral, they appealed to him to
return from the Salt Range, where he was at the moment living, in the

1. Munich MS., f. 86b; B.S., f. 95b; H.M., f. 138b,
2. B.S., f. 96a; T.A., iii, 363. N.A., f. 64b, is wrong in saying that Bābur
sent Kāmān, because Bābur had died in December 1530.
3. B.S., f. 96a; H.M., f. 138b.
The date 937/1530 as given by B.S. and H.M. is incorrect, because when
the expedition took place Bābur was no longer alive. (See T.A., iii, 363).
The expedition therefore must have taken place in 1531.
4. B.S., f. 96a. Chīraodar is a karewa situated to the south-west of Srīnagar
on the road to Shuplyan. It is a local name not commonly known.
5. Šuka, p. 370; T.A., iii, 463.
6. It is a hamlet situated on the right bank of the Jehlam at the southern base
of Takht-i-Sulāmān.
7. B.S., ff. 96a-b; H.M., f. 139a.
hour of his country’s need, and save it from falling under foreign domination. Kājī, in response to this request, at once set out towards the Valley and joined the Kashmirī forces at Athwājan. His arrival raised their morale and spirit so that, when they were attacked by the Mughals at Athwājan, they put up a fierce fight and defeated them. Encouraged by this success, the Kashmirīs established themselves on the Takht-i-Sulaimān, and from there began to lead attacks on the enemy in the city. The Mughals resisted for some time, but as they could not hold out much longer, they made overtures of peace. After an hour’s negotiations carried out between Kājī Chak and Māḥram Bēg in a boat on the Jehlam, the Mughals agreed to quit Kashmir. They received presents, and after a few days left for Lahore via Bārāmūla, escorted by Daulat Chak and Jahāṅgīr Māgre up to Pakhī. After the withdrawal of the Mughals, the Valley was divided by the nobles into five parts, excluding the crown lands belonging to Muḥammad Shāh and the jāgīr of Sayyid Ibrāhīm. Abdāl Māgre, who continued as Wāzīr, Lohar Māgre, Kājī Chak, Rēgi Chak and Malik ‘Alī Chādura each received one part. But hardly had Kashmir recovered from the effects of the Mughal invasion when, after a year, it was subjected to another attack. This time from the north-east, from Kāshghar, by Mīrzā Ḥaidar Dughlat.

1. Munich MS., f. 87a; T.A., iii. 463-4; N.A., ff. 65a-b.
2. B.S., f. 96b; H.M., f. 139a.
3. B.S., ff. 97a-b. Šuka’s account of the invasion is very brief.
4. B.S., f. 97b.
CHAPTER VII

MIRZA ḤAIDAR DUGHLAT AND HIS CONQUEST OF KASHMIR

Mirza Muḥammad Ḥaidar Dughlat was born in 1499-500 at Tāshqand, the capital of the province of Shāsh, where his father was governor. He descended from the Dughlat tribe, a sub-division of the Chaghatāy branch of the Mongols. On his mother’s side he was related to Bābur, their mothers being sisters.

Mirzā Ḥaidar’s father possessed a treacherous and intriguing nature; and it was owing to his constant intrigues that Shaibānī Khān, the Uzbeg chief, had him assassinated at Herāt. Mirzā Ḥaidar, who had been with his father, was carried away to Bukhārā by some of the relatives who felt that his life was in danger. From Bukhārā he was taken to Badakhshān and thence, after a year, was brought to Kābul where he remained with Bābur for two years and accompanied him in his campaigns. Then, in the beginning of 1514, he was summoned by his uncle Sulṭān Aḥmad, the Khān of Mughalistsān. Shortly afterwards Sulṭān Aḥmad died, and Mirzā Ḥaidar entered the service of the Khān’s son, Sulṭān Saʿīd Khān, and remained with him for nineteen years.1

Mirzā Ḥaidar participated in Sulṭān Saʿīd’s wars against the Kirghiz, the Uzbegs and other tribes, and was sent to distant expeditions. But among these campaigns the most important was the one in which he was despatched along with Prince Sikandar Mirzā, Sulṭān Saʿīd’s second son, to conquer Ladākh which had already been many times raided by parties sent by Sulṭān Saʿīd.2

Mirzā Ḥaidar set out in July 1532.3 He occupied Nubra, a province of Ladākh, and then proceeded to Māryul, near Leh. Mean-

---

1. For more details of Mirzā Ḥaidar’s life, see T.R., Intro., pp. 1-27.
2. Ibid., pp. 403, 417.
while, severe winter had set in; and as there was no place in Ladākh which could be regarded as suitable for winter quarters, Kashmir was selected for the purpose. At this time Mīrzā Ḥaidar was informed that the Khān was proceeding towards Māryul, and that he was afflicted with *dam-gir*. Mīrzā Ḥaidar, therefore, leaving his troops behind advanced to meet him, and then together they entered Nubra. Mīrzā Ḥaidar pointed out that in Ladākh there was no district which could provide winter quarters for more than 1,000 men. Kashmir, on the other hand, could support a larger army; but, as the Khān was not strong enough to cross the high passes leading into the Valley, he should with 1,000 men proceed to Baltistān which could be easily reached without causing *dam-gir*. The rest of the troops, Mīrzā Ḥaidar suggested, should spend their winter in Kashmir under his command.¹

The total number of men which the Mongols had at this time was 5,000. Of these 3,000 belonged to the Khān, and 2,000 to Mīrzā Ḥaidar. The Khān, according to Mīrzā Ḥaidar’s advice, retained 1,000 and advanced towards Baltistān, while Mīrzā Ḥaidar with 2,000 men proceeded to join his own army of 2,000 and, having effected the junction, set out towards Kashmir.² On the road the Ladākhī chiefs submitted and joined him with their forces, while the Baltī Tibetans living in the villages of Kashmir acted as his guides. Mīrzā Ḥaidar crossed the Zōjī-Lā and entered Kashmir early in January, 1533.³ He then sent 400 experienced men under Tumān Bahādur Qābuchi against the Kashmirī forces which had advanced to offer resistance in the defile of Lār.⁴ At dawn they attacked the Kashmirīs, stationed as outpost at the upper end of the defile. Taken by surprise

4. T.R. (MS.), iii, f. 14b, but T.R., p. 423, has Kaluchī. The defile is about 3 miles above the village of Gagangīr. (See Stein, ii, 490).
the Kashmiris fled, and were pursued by the Mongols. When the main body saw this, they too fled. Meanwhile, Haidar's remaining force arrived and joined in the pursuit. The Kashmiris took refuge in the fort of Hānjik.2

The Mughals, having crossed the defile of Lār, marched on Naushahr, which they occupied without any difficulty. Mīrzā Haidar took up quarters in Zainu'l-Ābidin's palace of Rājdān and fortified it.3 After staying there for twenty-four days he proceeded towards Marāj. His followers set fire to the villages and towns and destroyed the grand edifices built by the former rulers of the country.4 They massacred the men, and made the women and children their slaves. They made no distinction between Muslims and non-Muslims, for all alike suffered at their hands. As a result of these atrocities many of the inhabitants fled from the Valley to the safety of the mountains.5

From the month of January to March 1533, Mīrzā Haidar's forces carried on their ravages. Meanwhile, the Kashmiris had recovered from the first shock of invasion and defeat. Their spirits were aroused by the 'Ulāmā who, from their refuge in the island on the Volur, issued a decree that the killing of the invaders was not only permissible but obligatory, and that any one who died fighting against them would be a martyr.6 This pronouncement provoked the Kashmiris to effective action, and they began to organise resistance. They hung on to the Mughal forces, and harassed them by cutting down stragglers and striking at their baggage and thus hindering their movements. Mīrzā Haidar tried to avoid the enemy, but early in spring his troops were forced into an engagement at Bāgh-i-Bavan.7 Bābā Sharq Mīrzā, his commander, with 500 horse encountered Malik

2. It is a village about 4 miles west of Srinagar in Lat. 34° 5' Long. 74° 47'.
4. B.S., f. 98a; Munich MS., f. 87b; T.A., iii, 464.
5. B.S., f. 98a; also Sūka, p. 371.
6. B.S., ff. 98b-9a.
7. T.R. (MS.), iii, f. 21b. Bāgh-i-Bavan was situated on the plateau of Mārtand. The village of Bavan, containing a magnificent spring, is situated on the left bank of the Lidar. It is in Lat. 33° 46' Long. 15°. The plateau is the Sahār-i-Bābāl of the Persian chronicles. Ross in his trans. of T.R., p. 438, wrongly calls it Bāgh-i-Navin.
'Alî Châdûra. But he was wounded and fled. Seeing this, Dâ'îm 'Alî from the right and Mîrzâ Ḥaidar from the left, each with 1,000 horse, advanced to attack. The Kashmirîs fought with great courage but, after Malik 'Alî Châdûra and some other chiefs were killed, they became demoralised and fled.¹

This defeat did not dishearten the Kashmirîs, who, under the leadership of Kâjî Chak and Abdâl Mâgre, again prepared for resistance. They however avoided pitched battles and, instead, began to harass the Mughals by descending from the hills and making surprise attacks. These tactics proved successful, for they began to wear down Mîrzâ Ḥaidar and his followers.²

Alarmed at these developments, Mîrzâ Ḥaidar took counsel from his officers. Mîr Dâ’îm ‘Alî, a distinguished noble, advised him to attack the Kashmirî chiefs who had established themselves on the mountains and from where they swooped down to harass the Mughals. But Mîrzâ ‘Alî Taghâ’î, another noble, was opposed to this plan on the ground that as the Kashmirîs were occupying strong positions, it would be disastrous for the Mughals to advance against them. He therefore suggested that the best course would be to attack their families in the Valley. The result of this would be that those whose families were in the Valley would come down to defend them, while those whose families were on the hill-tops would remain behind. Thus the enemy forces would be divided, and they could then be easily overpowered. Mîrzâ Ḥaidar followed ‘Alî Taghâ’î’s advice and rejected that of Dâ’îm ‘Alî. But the consequence was that he had to move from place to place chased by the Kashmirîs. In the end, however, he halted at Châdûra.³

Meanwhile ‘Alî Taghâ’î began suggesting that it would be difficult to conquer Kashmir, and the Mughals should therefore withdraw from the country. The soldiers, tired of continuous warfare and longing for their homes, were won over to this point of view. Mîrzâ Ḥaidar could have put ‘Alî Taghâ’î to death, as suggested by Dâ’îm ‘Alî, for carrying on these intrigues, and then completed the conquest of Kashmir. But he decided to quit the country, and accordingly made overtures of

---

¹ B.S., ff. 99b-100b; H.M., ff. 140a-41b; Munich MS., f. 88a.
² E.S., ff. 101a-b.
³ T.R. (MS.), iii, f. 22a. The trans. has Jarûra which is wrong.
peace to the Kashmiri nobles. As a result of the negotiations it was agreed that the *khutba* was to be read in the name of Sa’īd Khān; that Muhammad Shāh’s brother’s daughter was to be given in marriage to Prince Sikandar Sulṭān; that presents were to be given for Sa’īd Khān; that Kashmiris who were prisoners in the hands of the Mughals, were to be released; and that, in return, the Mughals were to give woollen cloth and other articles as presents to Muḥammad Shāh. After concluding the treaty Mīrzā Ḥaidar left Kashmir at the end of May 1533 by the same route by which he had come.

After the withdrawal of the Mughals Kashmir was visited by a severe famine, because owing to continuous fighting and the ravages of the Mughals not much cultivation had been possible. Fortunately, the famine lasted only for a year, and as during this period the nobles remained united, the sufferings of the people caused by starvation were not aggravated by civil war. Perfect peace reigned in the country for three years.

*Sulṭān Shamsu’d-Dīn* (1537-40).

In about the middle of 1537 Muḥammad Shāh died, and was succeeded by his second son, Shamsu’d-Dīn. Shortly afterwards the civil war flared up. Kājī Chak, who was living at his jāgīr of Zainapūr, proceeded to the city with his followers to attack the Māgres and Rēgī Chak. But the latter, learning of his approach, withdrew to Bārāmūla. Kājī Chak followed him, but as Daulat Chak and other chiefs, who were his supporters, went over to his enemies, he left for the Punjāb.

Early in the spring of 1538 Rēgī Chak went to Jammu to marry the daughter of its ruler. Kājī Chak took advantage of his absence and returned to the Valley, assisted by the Gakkhars, in order to overthrow the Māgre faction. He encamped at the village of Gaisū, and then

5. *Ibid.*; Also Suka, p. 373 for the terms of the treaty.
7. B.S., ff. 102a-b; Suka, pp. 373-74.
10. B.S., f. 102b. 11. B.S. (B.M.), f. 77a.
12. It is a village south-east of Nāgam.
proceeded to besiege the fort of Sōpūr, where Abdāl Māgre, Lohar Māgre, and the chiefs of Chādūra had shut themselves in, as they did not think they were strong enough to fight Kājī a pitched battle without the help of Rēgī. While the siege was in progress, Rēgī returned from Jammu. Kājī therefore left Daulat Chak, Ghāzī Khān, and Sayyid Ibrāhīm to blockade the fort, while he himself with a strong force marched against Rēgī who had arrived in Srinagar. Rēgī prepared himself for resistance in 'Alā‘u’d-Dīnpūr, but after a severe engagement he was defeated. Meanwhile the Māgres, hearing that Kājī had proceeded to the city, left Sōpūr. But they were attacked by the troops left behind by Kājī and routed. The Māgre chiefs tried to reorganise their forces, but failed and so fled to Rajaurī.¹

After the fall of Abdāl Māgre, Kājī Chak became prime minister; and when, shortly after, Shamsu’d-Dīn II died he set up Muḥammad Shāh’s another son, Ismā‘īl, who was his son-in-law, on the throne. Kājī was able and efficient, and ruled the country with justice. He promoted the welfare of the peasants and treated the nobles generously. In spite of this the latter conspired to assassinate him. But they were discovered and imprisoned. After some time, however, Kājī released them and restored to them their jāgīrs which he had confiscated.² He then divided the kingdom into three equal parts between himself, Sayyid Ibrāhīm, and Sultān Ismā‘īl Shāh. But Kājī could not remain long in power, for Kashmir was threatened by a fresh Mughal invasion.

Mirzā Haidar’s Conquest of Kashmir.

After his withdrawal from Kashmir Mirzā Ḥaidar carried on war in Tibet and Ladākh. Meanwhile, news reached him that Sultān Sa‘īd had died and had been succeeded by his son Rashīd Sultān, who had begun his reign by putting to death all those whom he suspected of plotting in favour of his brother Sikandar. Mirzā Ḥaidar feared that, since he was also known to be on friendly terms with the prince, he would incur the displeasure of Rashīd Sultān. He therefore gave up the idea of returning to Kāshghar or continuing the campaign. Instead he left Ladākh, and, after a hazardous journey, went to Badakhshān.³ From there he proceeded to Lahore and served

---

¹ B.S., ff. 103a sqq.; H.M., ff. 142a sqq.
² B.S., ff. 106a-b; H.M., f. 144b.
³ T.R., pp. 450 sqq.
Kāmrān for some time. He then entered the service of Humāyūn, who treated him with honour and called him ‘brother’ after the Mughal fashion.¹

While he was in Lahore, Mīrzā Ḥaidar had received an appeal for help from Abdāl Māgre and Rēgh Chak against Kājī Chak through Khwāja Ḥājī who was acting as their agent with the Mughals.² Mīrzā Ḥaidar wanted to help them, and pleaded on their behalf with Kāmrān, but without any success. When, however, Kāmrān marched to deal with the rebellion of his brother Hindāl, Mīrzā Ḥaidar accompanied him to Agra, and there managed to raise an army.³ This was placed under Bābā Jujak, one of Kāmrān’s superior officers,⁴ who was instructed to proceed with Khwāja Ḥājī. But as Bābā Jujak possessed neither courage nor initiative, he did not move beyond Lahore, and under one pretext or another postponed his march. And when he heard of Humāyūn’s defeat at the Ganges, near Qanauj, by Shēr Shāh (May 17, 1540), he finally gave up the expedition, keeping the Kashmiri chiefs waiting for him in vain in the hills of Rajaurī.⁵

After the retreat of the Mughals from Qanauj to Lahore as a result of Humāyūn’s defeat, Abdāl Māgre and Rēgh Chak again appealed for assistance through Khwāja Ḥājī, assuring Mīrzā Ḥaidar that Kashmir could easily be conquered and pointing out the advantages of such a conquest.⁶ At this time the Mughal nobles were discussing the general policy the Emperor should adopt. Mīrzā Ḥaidar proposed that he should be allowed to proceed to Kashmir which he knew from personal experience and from the assurances of Abdāl and Rēgh could be occupied in two months. After the conquest of the Valley the Mughals should send their families and baggage there for safety, while they themselves should take up strong positions on the Outer Hills

². *Ibid.*, p. 481. A.N., i, 359, is wrong in saying that the Kashmiri chiefs came down from Rajaurī to Lahore.
⁴. A.N., i, 359.
of Kashmir, extending from Sirhind to the Salt Range. This would be a safe position because Shēr Shāh would not be able to bring his infantry owing to the difficult nature of the terrain.1 Mīrzā Ḥaidar and the Mughal nobles in general agreed to the proposal, but Kāmrān rejected it and suggested that the women and baggage should be sent to Kābul, while the men should remain in the hills or go to Kashmir. Meanwhile news came that Shēr Shāh had reached the banks of the Beas. and as a result the Mughals were struck with panic. Mīrzā Ḥaidar, on being consulted by Humāyūn, again suggested the Kashmir plan. Humāyūn agreed and gave him 400 men and permitted him to proceed to Naushahrah. Mīrzā Ḥaidar was assured that as soon as the Kashmiri chiefs would join him, Sikandar Tūpchī, a fief-holder in the neighbourhood, would come to his assistance. When Mīrzā Ḥaidar would reach the pass, Khwāja Kalān, a high officer of Humāyūn, would enter Naushahrah. When Mīrzā Ḥaidar would enter Kashmir. the Khwāja would advance to the foot of the pass. Humāyūn would then himself proceed towards the Valley.2

In accordance with this plan Mīrzā Ḥaidar marched to Naushahrah and was joined by Abdāl and Rēgī. But neither Sikandar Tūpchī nor Khwāja Kalān moved to his help.3 In fact they did not render any aid even to Humāyūn when he, at the end of October 1540, proceeded from Lahore to Śiālkōt with the object of going to Kashmir. Khwāja Kalān went away from Śiālkōt and joined Kāmrān at Behra,4 while Sikandar Tūpchī, frightened at the news of Shēr Shāh’s approach near Lahore, took refuge in the Sārang hills.5 The cowardly and treacherous conduct of his officers greatly disgusted Humāyūn who, therefore, gave up the idea of going to Kashmir, and turned to the west.6 Mīrzā Ḥaidar was thus left with a handful of retainers in his own pay and about 400 men given to him by Humāyūn at Lahore.7 He was, however,

4. A.N., i, 402; Banerjee, Humāyūn, ii, 16.  
5. This is in the Gakkhar country, south-west of Kashmir. It lay on the Indus and extended from the Śiwałik hills to the borders of Kashmir. (I.A., xxxvi, p. 8).  
6. A.N., i, 360; Banerjee, Humāyūn, ii, 13.  
7. A.N., i, 402.
not disheartened, knowing that owing to the disunity in Kashmir he would be able to conquer it even with the small force at his disposal.

Kājī Chak, hearing that Mirzā Ḥaidar had arrived in Rajaurī and that he had been joined by Abdāl and Rēgī, at once proceeded to the Kapartal Pass1 to prevent his entry. But Mirzā Ḥaidar abandoned that route, and on the 22nd of November, 1540, entered Kashmir by the Pūnch Pass.2 Kājī was baffled at the turn of events, and so, instead of organising resistance to the invaders, he along with Ismā‘īl Shāh left the country via Hirapūr, and proceeded to Shēr Shāh to seek his help.3 As there was no one to offer him any opposition, Mirzā Ḥaidar occupied the Valley without even striking a blow.

Mirzā Ḥaidar set up Nāzuk Shāh on the throne and made Abdāl Māgre Wazīr. He then divided the kingdom into three equal parts between himself, Abdāl Māgre and Rēgī Chak. But early in spring, on the first day of Naurūz, Abdāl Māgre died of paralysis.4 Thereupon his son Ḥusain Māgre was given his jāgīr and the Wizārat.5

Meanwhile Kājī Chak had reached the court of Shēr Shāh.6 The Afghan ruler, impressed by the scars of numerous wounds which Kājī had received in various battles, welcomed him graciously and conferred upon him the title of Khān-i-Khānān and gave him 5,000 horse and two elephants under the command of ‘Ādil Khān and Ḥusain Khān Shērwānī.7 With these forces, early in the spring of 1541, Kājī entered

---

1. Kapartal Pass or Kandal is 9 miles east of Rajaurī. It is on the Hirapūr route. Another variant of Kapartal is Karanbal. (See A.N., iii, 746n. 3).
3. B.S., ff. 107a-b; H.M., f. 145a; also T.R., p. 485.
4. B.S., ff. 107a-b; also T.R., p. 485.
5. B.S., f. 107b.
6. A.N., i, 403, says that Kājī presented his niece, who was Muhammad Shāh’s grand-daughter, to Shēr Shāh. But Kashmirī chroniclers do not mention it. T.H., ii, f. 125b, follows A.N.
7. A.N., i, p. 403; S.A., p. 50. B.S., f. 108a says Kājī was given a small force. According to T.A., iii, 488, it numbered 5,000. The number given by A.N. appears to be correct.
Kashmir via Hirapîr. Hearing of this, Mirzâ Ḥaidar left his family in the fort of Andarkôt, and with Ḥusain Mâgre, Rêgî Chak and ʿĪdî Raina marched against Kâji. He encountered him at Watanâr, but the battle was indecisive. For a month after this the parties engaged with each other in skirmishes and then, owing to the floods and rains, they withdrew. While Kâji established himself at Gîrdâr, Mirzâ Ḥaidar encamped at Kôthêr. But after the floods had subsided, the combatants took their stand at Vahâr. and on August 13, 1541, fought a severe battle. Although the Chaks had 5,000 cavalry and several thousand foot-soldiers while Mirzâ Ḥaidar had only 3,000, they were defeated and Kâji with Daulat Chak, Sayyid Ibrâhîm, and the Afghans fled to India. But Malik Nâji, who had been wounded, submitted and was received with honour by Mirzâ Ḥaidar.

In the beginning, Mirzâ Ḥaidar’s relations with the Kashmiri nobles had been cordial. He had treated them with respect, and sought their advice on all matters of the state. But after some time he became arrogant and began to look down upon them and to ignore them. Rêgî Chak was the first to resent his attitude. Mirzâ Ḥaidar, apprehending mischief, won over Ḥusain Mâgre and ʿĪdî Raina, and set out to seize Rêgî Chak who was at the moment in his jâgîr of Kamrâj. But Rêgî, warned in time of his intentions, fled to the hills of Rajaurî and joined Kâji Chak (1543). Mirzâ Ḥaidar, not finding Rêgî at Kamrâj, razed to the ground his house, and then returned to Andarkôt.

1. B.S., f. 108a; also S.A., p. 80.
3. It is a village in a grassy valley in the range of hills between Shāhâbâd and Bring parganas.
4. It is a village situated in the Anantnâg Tahsîl, about 5 miles south-east of Idrisbâd.
5. B.S., f. 108a; N.K., f. 34b. Kôthêr (ancient Kapateshvara) is a village situated in Lat. 33° 40' Long. 75° 18'. It is in Kutahâr pargana.
6. B.S., f. 108a; H.M., f. 145b. Vahatâr is 7 miles south of Srinagar on the high road towards Shuplyan in Lat. 33° 58' Long. 74° 51'.
7. B.S., ff. 108a-b; H.M. ff. 145a-b; A.N., i, 403. Ross in his trans. gives the date of battle as 8 Rabi' ii, 948|Aug. 1, 1541.
8. B.S., f. 110a; H.M., ff. 146a-b. T.A., iii, 468, assigns the year 950|1543 for Rêgî’s flight.
Next year, early in spring, Rēgī and Kājī again entered Kashmir to drive out the Mughals, and encamped at Gulmarg. Mīrzā Ḥaidar with the Mughal and Kashmirī forces advanced against them, and having made a surprise night attack, defeated Kājī and Rēgī, who again fled to the Punjabi hills. On Friday, September 12, 1544, Kājī Chak died of fever at Thanna. Although left alone Rēgī again invaded Kashmir in 1546. But he was defeated and killed by a force sent by Mīrzā Ḥaidar. His head was cut off and brought before the Mīrzā. These victories made Mīrzā Ḥaidar the de facto ruler of Kashmir. He, however, retained Nāzuk Shāh as Sultān in whose name the khutba was recited and coins were struck. Mīrzā Ḥaidar’s relations with Ḥusain Māgre and ‘Īdī Raina also remained cordial.

After overpowering his enemies Mīrzā Ḥaidar decided to recover the territories which had been a part of the kingdom of Kashmir until the time of Ḥasan Shāh. He first attempted the conquest of Kishtwār and advanced from Lār in 1548. He himself remained in the village of Jhālū, and sent Bandagān Kōkā and ‘Īdī Raina with an army to reduce Kishtwār. On arriving at the village of Dahut, situated on the river Mārma, they found the Kishtwār army entrenched on the other side, ready to prevent their passage. There was an exchange of arrows and musket shots, but the Mughals could not cross the river. The next day, however, they tried to enter Kishtwār by a detour from the main road. When they arrived at the village of Dār it became dark and they were attacked by the enemy. Bandagān Kōkā, the commander of the Mughal force, Muḥammad Māgre and many others lost their lives. In fact the casualties on the Mughal side were so heavy that ever since the place has been called Mughal Maidān or Mughal

1. B.S., f. 110a.
2. Ibid., ff. 110a-111a. B.S. is wrong in saying that Kājī died at Dānagalla. (See H.M. (B.N.), f. 47b and N.A., f. 69b).
3. T.A., iii, 469.
4. B.S., f. 111a; N.K., f. 34b.
5. It is situated near the boundary of Kishtwār and is locally known, but cannot be traced on the maps.
6. Mārma is a rivulet in Kishtwār which swells during the rainy season. As regards the localities of Dār, Dahut, and Jhālū, they are locally known, but they cannot be traced on the maps.
Mazār. Only a few persons managed to escape and join the Mīrzā after suffering great privations.¹

Although Mīrzā Ḥaidar failed against Kishtwār, he was more fortunate in other directions. In 1548 he occupied Baltisṭān and Ladākh and placed them in charge of Mullā Qāsim and Mullā Bāqī respectively. He then conquered Rajaurī from the Kashmirī chiefs and entrusted it to Muḥammad Nazar and Ṣabr ‘Ālī. Finally, he reduced Pakhlī and appointed Mullā ‘Abdu’llāh as its governor.²

In 1549 Haibat Khān Niyāzī, the governor of Lahore, revolted against his overlord, Islām Shāh Sūr. Being defeated at Dungot,³ near Sambhal, he took refuge in the Sārang hills with the Gakkhars. Islām Shāh, thereupon, made war upon the latter and crushed them.⁴ Haibat Khān then fled to the outer mountains of Kashmir, pursued by Islām Shāh as far as Bhibhār. Mīrzā Ḥaidar was alarmed at the move of the Afghān chiefs, and so advanced to prevent them from entering the Valley. When Haibat Khān found that his way was blocked in the front by the Mughals and in the rear by Islām Shāh, he moved towards the hills of Rajaurī.⁵ There he met Daulat Chak and Ghāzī Chak,⁶ who proposed that he should accompany them to Kashmir in order to overthrow Mīrzā Ḥaidar.⁷ His followers were agreeable to the proposal, but Haibat Khān rejected it and sent a Brahman agent to Mīrzā Ḥaidar to come to terms with him. Having received a large sum of money from the Mīrzā, Haibat Khān gave up the idea of invading Kashmir and went away to Birna near Jammu. The Kashmirī chiefs, getting disgusted

1. J.P.H.S., iv, p. 37.
2. T.A., iii, p. 470. T.A. says Ladākh was placed under Muḥsin, while according to Firishta it was placed under Mullā Ḥasan.
3. It is a village on the Indus in Lat. 71° 40' Long. 32° 58'.
5. Taʿrīkh-i-Dūṭīḍī, f. 195a.
6. T.A., iii, 471. Taʿrīkh-i-Dūṭīḍī, f. 195b incorrectly mentions Muḥammad Nazar and Ṣabr ‘Ālī also, although they were loyal to Mīrzā Ḥaidar.
7. T.A., iii, 713 (trans), and Firishta, p. 680, are wrong in saying that the Kashmirī chiefs took Haibat Khān to Bārūmūla. There is no mention of this in either the Afghān or Kashmirī accounts. The Persian text of T.A., iii, 471 has, instead of Bārūmūla, Damlah which cannot be identified.
at his attitude, separated from him and went over to Islam Shah. But Mīrzā Ḥaidar, in order to win over the latter to his side, sent to him, in 1550, Khwāja Shams Mughal with a large quantity of saffron. After a year the Khwāja returned to Kashmir, accompanied by Yāsīn Afghān, with rich presents from the Afghān ruler. Mīrzā Ḥaidar presented Islam Shah's wakil with shawls and saffron, and then gave him leave to depart.²

Although a strong champion of orthodoxy, Mīrzā Ḥaidar had been, at first, owing to reasons of political expediency, very liberal towards the followers of the Nūrbakhshīya sect. In fact, to please Rēgī Chak and other chiefs, who were Nūrbakhshīyās, he had even visited the tomb of Mīr Shamsu’l-Dīn and paid homage like a devotee. But after the revolt of Rēgī Chak his attitude changed, for he became convinced that in order to maintain peace in the Valley, uniformity of religion was essential.³ He therefore, on the advice of Maulānā Jamāl and Shaikh ‘Umar, banned the Nūrbakhshīya sect.⁴ He then destroyed the tomb of Shamsu’d-Dīn, and in 1545 put to death Ḥaẓrat Rishi.⁵ He also executed Šūfī Dā’ūd, Mullā Ḥājīb Khaṭīb and many other Nūrbakhshīyas; while some like Qāẓī Mīr ‘Ali were exiled and their houses destroyed.⁶ Shaikh Dāniyāl, the son of Shamsu’d-Dīn, who had gone away to Skārdū owing to Mīrzā Ḥaidar’s intolerance, was brought back in 1549 and thrown into prison. After this false witnesses were obtained to testify that he had reviled the first three Caliphs, and on that charge, on March 14, 1550, he was executed by the decree of Qāẓī Ḥabīb, Qāẓī Ibrāhīm, and Qāẓī ‘Abdu’l-Ghafūr.⁷ His trunk and head were taken away by his followers and secretly deposited and,

1. Ta’rikh-i-Dā’ūdī f. 196a; T.A., iii, 471. But both these chronicles are incorrect in stating that Ghāzī Chak went to Mīrzā Ḥaidar. Ghāzī was against Mīrzā Ḥaidar and so he could not have gone to him.
2. T.A., iii, 472.
3. B.S., f. 111b.
4. See infra p. 144.
5. B.S., f. 111b. S.A., p. 51; T.H., ii, f. 193b and W.K., f. 45a, say that Shamsu’d-Dīn’s bones were taken out and burnt, and his tomb was turned into a public latrine. But B.S. and H.M. do not mention this.
6. N.A., f. 71a; N.K., f. 34b; T.H., ii, f. 127b.
7. B.S., ff. 111b-12a; S.A., p. 51; T.H., ii, f. 127b.
after Mîrzâ Ḥaidar’s death, they were collected and buried in the tomb of his father Shamsu’l-Dîn.¹

The execution of Dâniyâl was a great mistake committed by Mîrzâ Ḥaidar because he was a pious man and much respected in the country. The Mîrzâ had been warned by Mullâ ‘Abdu’l-lâh, one of his confidants, against this step, but he had ignored him replying that Dâniyâl’s execution was necessary for the stability and welfare of the kingdom.² In reality, however, the effect of his policy was contrary to his expectations. Malik ‘Idî Raina and Malik Muḥammad Nâjî, who had embraced Shi‘ism, became inimical towards the Mîrzâ for his persecution of their co-religionists and they decided to overthrow him.³ They won over Nâzuk Shâh. Ḥusain Mâgre and Khwâja Ḥâjî who not only disapproved of Ḥaidar’s intolerance but also his arrogance and nepotism. In the beginning he had treated the Kashmîrî nobles with respect and associated them in the government of the country, but later on he began to look down upon them, ignoring their claims, concentrating all power into his own hands, and appointing his own followers as governors of different provinces.⁴ The result of this policy was that even those Kashmîrî nobles who had hitherto remained loyal to him were now alienated and began to conspire his overthrow.

Meanwhile trouble had broken out in the Outer Hills, and therefore, in 1551, Mîrzâ Ḥaidar sent an army of Mughals and Kashmîrîs via Bârâmûla under his cousin Qârâ Bahâdur accompanied by Ḥusain Mâgre, ‘Idî Raina, and Khwâja Ḥâjî.⁵ When it reached Mânkôt⁶ the Kashmîrî chiefs decided to attack the Mughals,⁷ and having separated from Qârâ Bahâdur, they proceeded to the top of the hill and sent a small force supported by the hill people to cut off his communications

¹. B.S., ff. 112a-b. ². Ibid., f. 112b. ³. N.A., ff. 71a-b. ⁴. H.M., f. 146b. ⁵. H.M., f. 147, and T.A., iii, 472 assign the year 958/1551 for these happenings. But B.S., f. 112b gives Sept.-Oct., 1550. ⁶. A village and fort in the province of Pûncû and situated on the right bank of the Mandel stream in Lat. 33° 38’ Long. 74° 6’. ⁷. T.A., iii, 472, wrongly states that Ḥusain Mâgre sent his brother to inform Mîrzâ Ḥaidar of the treachery of the Kashmîrîs, for the Mâgres themselves were a party to the conspiracy against the Mîrzâ.
with Kashmir. Early next morning the Kashmiris descended from the hill and attacked the Mughals. The latter resisted till mid-day, but in the end fled, pursued by the Kashmiris who killed many of them and seized their baggage. Those who escaped took refuge in the fort of Barbal.1 Thereupon, Ḫdī Raina despatched about 500 horse under Ḥṣain Māgre, Nājī Malik, and Khwāja Ḥājī to besiege the fort, while he himself proceeded to Pūnch. As the Kashmiris, who were being helped by the hill people, outnumbered the Mughals, Qarā Bahādur got disheartened and decided to make peace with them, but some of the chiefs like Sayyid Mīrzā and Mīrzā 'Alī Kōkā were against it and wanted to fight their way to the Gakkhar country. Qarā Bahādur ignored their advice, and left the fort with some of his followers in order to negotiate with the Kashmiris. But as he advanced he was attacked by the enemy. Seeing this the rest of the garrison also came out of the fort and made for the Gakkhar country. Although they were pursued by the Kashmiris, they succeeded in making good their escape. But those belonging to Qarā Bahādur's party were either killed or taken captives. The latter were taken to Ḫdī Raina who was in Pūnch. Qarā Bahādur, Quṭb 'Alī Kōkā, and Muḥammad Naẓār were imprisoned while others had their hands cut off. After this victory Ḫdī Raina sent a message to Daulat Chak, who was in Naushahrā, to join him. Daulat at once set out and met Ḫdī Raina who had entered the Valley via Hirapūr. A large number of people flocked under their banner, and together they marched towards Srīnagar.2

These happenings caused great anxiety to Mīrzā Ḥaidar. After consulting his followers, he left his family in the fort of Andarkōt with a Mughal garrison and some Kashmiris, and then marched against Ḫdī Raina. But just at this time serious revolts broke out in Baltistān and Ladākh against Mullā Qāsim and Mullā Bāqī respectively. Mullā Qāsim with his followers was killed, but Mullā Bāqī succeeded in escaping and joining Mīrzā Ḥaidar near Andarkōt. Risings also took place in Pakhlī, and its governor, 'Abdu'llāh Samarqandī, was defeated

1. B.S., f. 113a; also H.M., ff. 147a-b where the account is given somewhat differently. Barbal was a fort near the Tūshamādān Pass on the route to Pūnch (See for more details, Stein, ii, 399 and n. 59).
2. B.S., ff. 114a-15a; H.M., ff. 147a-48a.
by the rebels. Meanwhile, learning of the disaster that had befallen Qārā Bahādur, he became so demoralised that he decided to withdraw to the Valley. But when he reached Bārāmūla, he was killed by the Kashmirīs.1 Similarly, Kōkā Mīr, who had been sent to establish order in Kistwar, was defeated and killed with 1,500 of his troops in the pargana of Adavin.2 On receiving these distressing news from all sides, Mīrzā Ḥāidar proceeded to Śrīnagar and thence moved to Vahātār,3 to engage with the Kashmirī chiefs who, led by ‘Īdī Raina, had fortified themselves in the fort of Manār, near Khāmpūr.4 But as Mīrzā Ḥāidar had a small force, he decided upon a night attack. Although some of his officers dissuaded him from such an hazardous undertaking,5 Mīrzā Ḥāidar ignored them, and after designating his brother ‘Abdu’r-Rahmān to succeed him, he marched against the enemy with about 700 or 800 horse. When he reached the base of the fort he left his troops behind, and with only thirty men proceeded to the top of the buttress. But on the way most of his followers fell out, and he was left with only seven men. While he was trying to enter the fort, he was killed by an arrow (October 1551).6

This is the only contemporary account of Mīrzā Ḥāidar’s death known to exist, and there is no reason to doubt its authenticity, for Sayyid ‘Alī, its author, was in the Mīrzā’s service, and participated in this campaign. It is true that he was not present on the spot when

1. S.A., p. 52; B.S., ff. 115b-16a; H.M., f. 147b.
2. H.M., f. 147b.
3. S.A., p. 52; B.S., f. 116a. H.M. has Aunpūr.
4. Khāmpūr is situated 10 miles south of Śrīnagar on the high road leading to the Pīr Panjāl Pass. T.A. and S.A. wrongly call it Khāmpūr. B.S. and T.H. have Khāmpūr Cunningham, according to Stein, is wrong in identifying it with the ancient Kanishkapura. (Stein, ii, 482n.).
5. S.A., pp. 52-3. Sayyid ‘Alī says that he and his father advised the Mīrzā not to make a night attack.
6. S.A., pp. 52-3. B.S., ff. 116a-b, agrees with this account. S.A. and B.S. give the date of Mīrzā Ḥāidar’s death as 6 Zūl-Qa’da 957/Nov. 18, 1550. But A.A. (Blochmann), p. 313, and T.R., p. 22, say that the Mīrzā was killed in Oct. 1551. See also T.A. and H.M. which give the year 1551. I have followed these authorities, for the chronology of S.A. and B.S. is not always reliable.
Mîrzâ Ḥaidar was killed, but he must have written on the basis of information gathered from reliable witnesses.

Besides the account of Sayyid ‘Alî, there are other versions also about the manner of Mîrzâ Ḥaidar’s death. According to one version, he was slain by Kamâl Dübî with a sword;¹ according to another, a butcher is said to have shot an arrow which hit him in the thigh and killed him.² Ḥaidar Malik, however, relates that Mîrzâ Ḥaidar was killed with an axe by a butcher who suspected him to be a Mughal spy.³ All these versions, it must be remembered, are based on hearsay, and may therefore be discounted as spurious. However, there may be some truth in the tradition contained in the Ṭabaqāt-i-Akbârî that, while he was leading the attack, Mîrzâ Ḥaidar was accidentally struck by an arrow discharged by Shâh Nażâr, a cuirassier, belonging to his own army.⁴ This statement does not in any way conflict with that of Sayyid ‘Alî, who is silent over the question whether Mîrzâ Ḥaidar lost his life at the hands of the enemy or one of his own men.

When in the morning Mîrzâ Ḥaidar’s body was discovered, the Chaks wanted to insult it, but Ḥusain Mâgre and Sayyid Muḥammad Baihaqî had it buried near the grave of Sulṭân Zainu’l-ʿĀbidîn, and protected it for a month.⁵ The Mughals, on Mîrzâ Ḥaidar’s death, had fled to Andarkôt. There they were besieged by the Kashmirîs. But after three days of fighting Mîrzâ Ḥaidar’s widow decided to make peace with the enemy saying that, as the Mîrzâ was dead, it was useless

---

¹ A.N., i, 406; see also T.A. (trans.), iii, 718n. 1.
² T.A., iii, 475.
³ According to H.M., f. 148a, Mîrzâ Ḥaidar set out alone to find out the condition of the enemy force. A butcher, who was skinning a cow, saw him and questioned who he was. The Mîrzâ replied that he was neither a Persian nor a Kashmirî. The butcher, suspecting him to be a Mughal spy, delivered such a severe blow upon his head with his axe that he fell down from his horse and died. But this story appears to be apocryphal. In the first place it is incredible that a butcher should have been engaged in his work in the night near the scene of conflict. Secondly, Mîrzâ Ḥaidar who was a brave soldier and was well armed, could not have been killed by a butcher with an axe.
⁴ T.A., iii, 475.
⁵ S.A., p. 53; W.K., f. 46a; T.H., ii, f. 130a.
to continue the conflict. She accordingly sent Amīr Khān, the architect, to negotiate the terms of surrender. Ḥusain Māgre exercised a moderating influence on those Kashmirī nobles who were in favour of continuing hostilities, and finally secured a settlement. Qarā Bahādūr and others who were in prison were released. The Kashmirīs gave an undertaking that they would not molest the family and followers of Mīrzā Ḥaidar. After this his family was brought from Andarkot to Srinagar and treated with respect. They were then sent via Pakhli and Kābul to Kāshghar. But some of the Mughals, like Ṣabr ‘Alī and others, who took the route via Lādākh, were killed by the Ladākhīs.¹

The exploits and career of Mīrzā Ḥaidar is reminiscent of his cousin Bābur. Like him he possessed great adventurous spirit, and was always active both in body and mind. Like him also he was generous and affectionate, a fearless fighter and a great general.² But he did not have the same insight into human nature, and he lacked the tact and prudence and the broad humanity of his great cousin. He was, however, not petty-minded and could rise to great heights of magnanimity. Thus he could have easily declared himself as Sultān of Kashmir, but did not do so as an act of self-denial. Instead, he raised Nāzuk Shāh to the throne as a stop-gap until Humāyūn’s return from exile. And as soon as, in 1545, he heard that Humāyūn had occupied Kābul and Qandahār, he transferred to him the sovereignty with which he had invested Nāzuk Shāh. He read the khutba and struck coins in the name of Humāyūn, and even invited him to Kashmir, suggesting that it would serve as a useful base for the invasion and reconquest of Hindustān.³

In the beginning Mīrzā Ḥaidar ruled Kashmir with justice and ability. He recovered some of the territories which had been subject to Kashmir in the time of Zainu’l-‘Ābidīn. He established good government, and tried to promote trade, agriculture and industry. But later on, with the worsening of his relations with the Kashmirī

1. T.A., lii, 478; see also H.M., ff. 148b-49a.
2. Rāzī, Haft Iqām, f. 365a. Author of Ta’rīkh-i-Dūrūdī, f. 196a says Mīrzā Ḥaidar was “a courageous youth”.
nobles, the administration gradually deteriorated, and he failed to protect the peasants from the high-handedness of the Mughals.¹

Few medieval rulers of Kashmir did so much for the promotion of art and culture of Kashmir as Mirza Ḥaidar. He was, in this respect, a great admirer of Zainu’l-ʿAbidin, and tried to follow in his footsteps. He sent for artists and craftsmen from different countries, and revived arts which had been languishing due to continuous civil wars.² He patronized men of learning, and appointed teachers in every village for the education of children.³ He built a number of mosques in Srinagar with baths, which kept the prayer-rooms warm in winter so that even in extreme cold weather people could pray there and take rest. He also constructed magnificent edifices, and laid out beautiful gardens in Andarkōt. He introduced new types of windows and doors, and made innovations in dress and food.⁴

Mirza Ḥaidar was very versatile and a man of many accomplishments. He excelled in penmanship, painting, and various kinds of handiwork.⁵ He was a great lover of music, and introduced into Kashmir various types of musical instruments.⁶ According to Jahāngīr, Mirza Ḥaidar’s court was celebrated for skilled musicians.⁷ Mirza Ḥaidar was also an excellent poet in Türkī and a good poet and prose writer in Persian.⁸ Besides the Ta’rikh-i-Rashidi which he composed in Persian while he was in Kashmir, he is also regarded as the author of the anonymous Jahān-nāma, a metrical treatise on Geography in Türkī, which he is said to have written during his stay in Badakhshān in 1508-9.⁹

But these qualities of Mirza Ḥaidar were offset by his excessive religious fanaticism. In his zeal to preserve the Islamic orthodoxy he banned Shi’ism and the Shāfī’ite school.¹⁰ Moreover, he secured a

decree from the 'Ulamā of Hindustān that the Nūrbakhshīyas were heretics, and that it was perfectly lawful to destroy them if they persisted in their beliefs and refused to accept the teachings of Abū Ḥanīfa. Accordingly he began to persecute them, and put to death many of their leaders. He also placed a ban on other Ṣūfī orders on the ground that Ṣūfīs led immoral lives, ate and drank forbidden things, and spent their time interpreting dreams, displaying miracles, and prostrating themselves before one another. In this way Mīrzā Ḥaidar compelled every Muslim to conform to the Sunnī faith. But his success was only short-lived, for the Kashmirī nobles resented his religious bigotry and joined hands to bring about his overthrow.

During his stay in Kashmir Mīrzā Ḥaidar felt as if he was in exile, and the thought of his own country never left his mind. In 1547, when an ambassador arrived from Kāshghar, he proceeded to Lār to welcome him. In fact all through the period he kept himself in touch with his relations and friends in Kāshghar. This failure to regard Kashmir as his home and to identify himself with its people proved disastrous for him. For it made him arrogant, and prevented him from making serious efforts to win the affection and good-will of the Kashmirīs. He began to lean more and more upon the support of his own followers, thereby alienating the Kashmirī chiefs. This eventually led to his downfall.

1. T.R., pp. 435-6; Flrishta, 646-7; also B.S., f. 120b
3. Ibid., p. 469
CHAPTER VIII

END OF THE SHĀH MĪR DYNASTY AND
THE CHAK ASCENDANCY

NAZUK Shāh, who had been raised to the throne by Mīrzā Ḥaidar, was allowed to continue as Sultān by the nobles. But it was in reality Īdī Raina, his prime minister, who was the virtual ruler. The latter treated the nobles with respect, and did his best to win their favour. Since the Chaks had suffered considerably under Mīrzā Ḥaidar and were in economic difficulties, he rewarded them generously.¹ The pargana of Divasar was allotted to Daulat Chak, the pargana of Vihi was given to Ghāzī Chak and Kamrāj to Yūsuf Chak and Bahrām Chak, while Khwāja Ḥājī received one lakh kharwārs of paddy.²

In about the middle of 1552 news came that Haibat Khān Niyāzī, whom the Gakkhars could no longer give protection, was advancing to invade Kashmir. Thereupon Īdī Raina, Daulat Chak, and Ḥusain Māgre marched against him, and met him in the Bānihāl pargana. Severe fighting continued from morning till sunset. The Afghāns fought valiantly. Bibi Rabi'a, the wife of Haibat Khān, in particular displayed great courage. But in the end, owing to their inferiority in numbers, the Afghāns were routed. Haibat Khan, Bibi Rābi'a, Shahbāz Khān and many other chiefs were slain. Their heads were sent by the Kashmīrī nobles to Islām Shāh.³

Soon after this, civil war flared up in Kashmīr. Already before the invasion of the Niyāzīs, the nobles under the leadership of Daulat Chak and Īdī Raina had fought one another in Srīnagar. Īdī Raina

¹. H.M., f. 150a.
². T.A., iii, p. 476.
³. Ta'rikh-i-Dāvūdī, ff. 196a-b; T.A., iii, 478-9; also Ta'rikh-i-Khān-i-Jahānī, f. 109b and B.S., f. 117b. Ta'rikh-i-Dāvūdī wrongly states that it was Mīrzā Ḥaidar who sent the Kashmīrī chiefs against the Niyāzīs. M.T., i, 500, however, does not refer to Mīrzā Ḥaidar in this connection.
had even employed the help of Qarā Bahādur and other Mughals who had not yet left the country. Bābā Khalīl, the Shi'ite divine, however, by explaining to 'Īdī Raina the disastrous consequences of placing trust in foreigners, had brought about peace between him and Daulat Chak. But in reality it was nothing more than a truce, for, after the destruction of the Niyāzīs, dissensions in the Valley were revived. On the one side were the Māgres, the Kopwārā Chaks and the Baihaqī Sayyids headed by 'Īdī Raina, and on the other were the Chaks led by Daulat Chak.

Towards the end of 1552, 'Īdī Raina decided to overthrow Daulat Chak. But the latter anticipated his move by taking Ḥusain Māgre and Sayyid Ibrāhīm prisoner. The rest of 'Īdī Raina's followers, however, managed to escape and join their chief. After a few days 'Īdī with the Māgres and Yūsuf Chak set out to attack Daulat. But before they could do so, Daulat forestalled their move by himself crossing the Jehlam in Srīnagar and attacking them. 'Īdī Raina was defeated and put to flight. But at Rāwalpūr, while in a hurried flight on horseback, his neck got entangled in a vine creeper and he was killed on the spot. Thereupon, Daulat Chak assumed the duties of prime minister. He deposed Nāzuk Shāh and set up in his place Ibrāhīm Shāh, the son of Muḥammad Shāh, who, before Mīrzā Ḥaidar's invasion, had already once reigned for a short time. Nāzuk Shāh, finding no hope of recovering the throne, left for the Punjāb.

1. T.A., iii, 478.  
2. B.S., f. 117b.  
3. B.S., f. 118b gives the year 958 but it should be 959/1552. (See J.R.A.S., 1918, p. 462).  
4. B.S., f. 118a.  
5. It is a village about a mile south-west of Srīnagar, on the road leading to the aerodrome.  
6. H.M., f. 151b; N.K., f. 35b. The statement in B.S., f. 118a, that 'Īdī Raina, having fallen ill on the way, returned to Srīnagar where he died, appears to be apocryphal.  
7. Fīrishta, p. 685, says that Ibrāhīm was the son of Nāzuk Shāh. But this is incorrect. Daulat Chak would not have raised to the throne a person belonging to the collateral branch which was hostile to the Chaks. Ibrāhīm Shāh was in fact the son of Muḥammad Shāh. (T.A., iii, 480). He was the same person who had reigned before from 1528-29. (See p. 121, supra). B.S. and H.M. skip over the reign of Ibrāhīm Shāh, and state that Nāzuk Shāh was succeeded by Lsmā'īl Shāh.  
8. B.S., f. 121b.
Daulat Chak's rise to power marks the beginning of the Chak ascendancy in the Valley which lasted for over thirty years. The Chaks, as we have seen, had entered Kashmir in the time of Suhadeva and were raised to prominence by Sultan Shamsu'd-Din I. But it was not until the time of Muhammad Shah that they began to play an active part in the affairs of the kingdom. They increased their prestige and power by entering into marriage alliances with the principal landowning families of the Valley and the ruling dynasty; and by their tact, energy, perseverance, and valour they eventually succeeded in defeating all their rivals and making themselves supreme in the country.

Mirza Haidar had banned Shi'ism, the Nurbakhshiya sect, the Shafi'ite school and the various Sufi orders, having declared that no religion except the Hanafite was to be practised. But Daulat Chak lifted the ban, and issued a proclamation that people were free to profess any religion they liked, and that no one was allowed to impose his own beliefs upon others.¹

Daulat Chak then built three mausoleums. One for Shaikh Diniyil, whose body was brought there and buried. Another he constructed over the grave of Mir Shamsu'd-Din, which had been destroyed by Mirza Haidar, and endowed it for the maintenance of Shamsu'd-Din's descendants and the servants of the hospice. In the third mausoleum the body of Baba 'Ali Najjar was brought and buried. An endowment was created, and his son Baba Hasan was made its trustee.²

The ruler of Ladakh had not paid his tribute for many years. Moreover, his subjects had entered the Valley and driven away the flocks of sheep from the pargana of Khawarpara, which was included in the jagir of Habib Chak, brother of Nu'rat Chak. Daulat Chak therefore sent Ibrahim Chak and Ghazi Chak's son Haidar Chak to invade Ladakh. Meanwhile Habib Chak had himself invaded Ladakh. He defeated the Ladakhis and, after occupying a number of their forts, compelled them to pay a tribute of 3,000 horses, 500 pieces of leather, 100 sheep, and 30 yaks.³

¹. Ibid., ff. 120a-21b.
². Ibid., ff. 120b-21a.
Daulat Chak treated the nobles kindly; and to win over the rival faction he released Ḥusain Māgre and Sayyid Ibrāhīm whom he had imprisoned for joining ‘Īdī Raina against him. However, some members of his own family, incited by interested persons, became jealous of him. Matters came to a head when he married Ghāzī Chak’s mother, the widow of his uncle, Kājī Chak. Ghāzī Chak, Ḥusain Chak and other of his relations greatly resented this marriage and made up their minds to overthrow him. Towards the end of 1555, when Daulat Chak had gone in a boat for shooting on the Dal lake, Ghāzī made a sudden attack on his troops who were in Ḥusainābād. Taken by surprise, they fled. Thereupon, Ghāzī seized all the Horse and set out in pursuit of Daulat Chak. But the latter escaped to the hilly parts of the Phāg pargana. He was, however, seized by a shepherd and brought before Ghāzī, who had him blinded. Ghāzī now replaced Daulat Chak as prime minister.

In the spring of 1556, some chiefs, headed by Nuṣrat Chak and Yūsuf Chak, conspired to put Ghāzī and his brother Ḥusain Chak to death. But Ghāzī discovered the plot and sent for the leaders. Not suspecting any danger they obeyed the summons. He remonstrated with them for their treacherous conduct and then detained them for the night. Hearing of this Ḥabīb Chak, Shams Raina, and Muḥammad Māgre took up arms against Ghāzī. They destroyed the bridge of the town and assembled in the field of Ziāldakar. Ghāzī proceeded to the river on the opposite side; and for a few days there was exchange of arrows and musketry between his forces and those of the enemy. But finding that the rebels were daily gaining in strength by fresh reinforcements, Ghāzī crossed the river and attacked them in Ziāldakar. After heavy fighting he defeated them. Ḥabīb Chak was killed, Yūsuf Chak, the son of Rēgī Chak, was seized and thrown into prison, while Shams Raina and others escaped to India.

1. H.M., ff. 151a-b.
2. Ibid., f. 152b; B.S., f. 122a. The date assigned to this event in H.M.(I.O.) as 961 A.H. is wrong. H.M.(B.N.), f. 51a, and B.S. give the year 9621/1555. T.A. agrees with them.
4. B.S., f. 122b.
5. Ibid., f. 123a; H.M., ff. 155a-56b.
Not long after these events, other Chak nobles like Ghāzi’s own brother Shankar Chak, Bahrām Chak and Fath Chak organised a rising in Sōpūr. But Ghāzi marched against them and defeated them. Bahrām escaped to Khuyahōm, but was captured there. He was brought to Srīnagar and put to death. Ibrāhīm Chak, another son of Rēgī Chak, was also seized and executed. But Fath Chak and Shankar Chak escaped. Orders were given to blind Yūsuf Chak, who was in prison, but he managed to escape.

The Kashmiri chiefs, who had fled to India, sought the help of Humāyūn. The Emperor was willing to give them assistance, but soon after he died on January 24, 1556. Thereupon, they made advances to Abū’l-Ma‘ālī. He had been a great favourite of Humāyūn, who had called him his son. But Akbar after his accession ordered Abū’l-Ma‘ālī’s imprisonment owing to his arrogance, and sent him to Lahore. From there, however, Abū’l-Ma‘ālī escaped to the territory of the Gakkhars. Although he was seized by Kamāl Khān Gakkhar and thrown into prison, he managed to escape with the help of Yūsuf Chak to Naushahrā. There he entered into an alliance with Shams Raina, Fath Chak, Khwāja Ḥājī, and the blind Daulat Chak; and, having collected a force of 300 Mughals and 800 Kashmiris, he entered Kashmir via Pūnch and Bārāmūla and encamped at Patan (1558).

When Ghāzi heard of this he released Nuṣrat Chak and Sayyid Ibrāhīm, and

1. B.S., f. 123a. See also T.A., iii, 485, where the account is given with slight variation.
2. B.S., f. 123a.
3. For Abū’l-Ma‘ālī’s career see A.N., ii, 154-56; M.T., ii, 2-6; and T.A., ii. 127 sqq.
4. T.A., iii, 486; A.N., ii, 153-4; M.T., ii, p. 10, is wrong in saying that Abū’l-Ma‘ālī was treated with honour by Kamāl Khān, and the two set out to conquer Kashmir. Kamāl Khān was loyal to Akbar and so could not have welcomed Abū’l-Ma‘ālī. See A.A. (Blochmann), pp. 507-8; T.A., ii, 161; and Ma‘āṣirul-Umara’, ii, 144 sq. for Kamāl Khān’s relations with Akbar.
5. A.N., ii, pp. 154-5. H.M. wrongly places the invasion of Abū’l-Ma‘ālī before the rebellion of the nobles. The date of the invasion assigned by B.S., T.A., and M.T., is 965/1558.

Patan is a large village in Lat. 34° 10’ Long. 74° 36’ distant 17 miles north-west of Srīnagar on the high road between Srīnagar and Bārāmūla.
with them set out against the enemy. He encountered Abū’l-Ma‘ālī at Hānjīvera. After heavy fighting, which lasted from morning till sunset, the invaders gave way. Shams Raina, realising that Abū’l-Ma‘ālī would fall into the hands of the enemy, sent him away with an escort of twelve men, and himself continued to resist, in spite of the severe wounds he had received. He then tried to commit suicide, but did not succeed. He was captured alive; and although his daughter was married to Ghāzi’s son, he was not spared but was executed. A number of Mughals were also taken prisoners. They were beheaded, and their heads built up into minarets.

After this victory Ghāzi sent Nuṣrat Chak on a goodwill mission to Akbar. Nuṣrat was received with honour by Bairam Khān. Meanwhile, the Emperor had received a request for help through Qarā Bahādur from the Kashmirī nobles who were opposed to Ghāzi. He welcomed this opportunity, and gave a large force to Qarā Bahādur, who had previous experience of Kashmir, to lead the invasion. Qarā Bahādur marched via Naushahrā in the summer of 1560. But he did not get any response from the nobles. On the contrary,Fatḥ Chak and Lohar Chak, who were in Pūnch, deserted and went over to Ghāzi. Similarly Nuṣrat sent a message to Ghāzi that he was not on the side of the Mughals. The nobles who had promised to help Qarā Bahādur, now backed out because they found that his army was not strong and he would be defeated. But the result of their attitude was that Qarā Bahādur got disheartened, and did not move from Rajaurī.

1. Hānjīvera is a large village in Lat. 34° 8' Long. 74° 38', 2 miles east of Patan on the road towards Srinagar.
2. H.M., ff. 154a-55a. A.N. and T.A. say that Abū’l-Ma‘ālī’s life was saved by a Mughal.
3. Kashmirī accounts say that 4,000 were killed on both sides, and 1,700 Mughals were taken prisoners. But these are exaggerated estimates. According to A.N. Abū’l-Ma‘ālī had only 300 Mughals with him.
5. Suka, p. 384 says that Nāṣuz Shāh also joined Qarā Bahādur. But he wrongly calls the latter as the son of Humāyūn.
6. T.A., ii, 488; A.N., ii, 197. Suka wrongly places the invasion of Qarā Bahādur before that of Abū’l-Ma‘ālī and in the summer of 1561. He also wrongly says that Qarā twice invaded Kashmir.
Chak, however, marched to Hirapūr, and thence proceeded via Thanna to Loharkōt. He sent a force of infantry which defeated the Mughals near Rajaurī. He then himself attacked Qarā Bahādūr who had marched to Danaor. Here, after a severe engagement lasting from morning till sunset, he routed the Mughals. Qarā Bahādūr escaped and joined Akbar at Agra. The Kashmirī chronicles say that Ghāzī Chak had announced before the battle that anyone who brought the head of a Mughal would get an ashrafi, and so over 700 heads were brought. Ghāzī Chak gave them the promised reward, and in some cases even five times as much. He then returned to Srinagar, and constructed a bigger minaret of the skulls of his enemies.

Ghāzī Chak, on seizing power from Daulat Chak, deposed Ibrāhīm Shāh and enthroned his brother Ismā‘īl, another son of Muḥammad Shāh. But when Ismā‘īl Shāh died in 1557, he proclaimed his son Ḥabīb Shāh, who was his own nephew, as king. In the year 1561, however, under the pretext that Ḥabīb Shāh was incompetent, Ghāzī Chak set him aside, and with the consent of the nobles himself ascended the throne, assuming the title of Sulṭān and laying the foundation of the Chak dynasty.

In 1560-61, again, the nobles revolted under the leadership of Fath Chak and Lohar Chak. Ghāzī despatched his brother, Ḥusain Chak, against them. Meanwhile, winter had set in, and as a result many of the rebels perished in snow. The rest proceeded to Kishťwār, but as they were in great distress they surrendered to Ḥusain Chak. He mediated on their behalf with Ghāzī Shāh who pardoned them and granted them jagirs.

1. B.S., ff. 124a-b; A.N., ii, 197-8; T.A., iii, 488.
2. H.M., f. 157a; also Suka, pp. 384-6.
3. T.A., iii, 482-83.
4. B.S., f. 125a; T.A., iii, 483. According to H.M., f. 151b, it was Daulat Chak who had enthroned Ḥabīb Chak. Suka’s account is confused and unreliable.
5. B.S., f. 125a; H.M., f. 153b. See T.A. for dates which, I think, are reliable. According to N.A., f. 76b, one day in the court, ‘Ali Khān, Ghāzī’s younger brother, removed the crown from Ḥabīb’s head and placed it on Ghāzī’s. Ḥabīb Shāh was imprisoned. From an inscription outside the walls of the Mazār-i-Salāṭīn it appears that he died in 1573.
In 1562-63 Ghāzī proceeded to Lār, and from there sent his son Aḥmad with Fath Chak to the conquest of Ladākh. Fath Chak leaving Aḥmad behind on the frontier, raided the country and returned safely. As the Ladākhīs did not want to fight they sent tribute. But Aḥmad became jealous of Fath Chak's exploit and decided to emulate him. And although he was dissuaded by him, he invaded Ladākh with only 500 men. But he was defeated by the Ladākhī troops and pursued. This made him so panic-stricken that he did not even stop at the camp of Fath Chak to unite with him in order to resist the enemy. His example demoralised the followers of Fath Chak and they also fled. Fath Chak tried to rally them against the enemy, but was slain. When Ghāzī Shāh heard of the disaster, he remonstrated with his son.¹

In his old age Ghāzī Shāh was afflicted with leprosy which affected not only his general health but also his eyesight. He, therefore, entrusted the work of government to his brother Ḫusain Khān, who had been his constant adviser during his rule, and designated him to be his successor.² He then divided equally all his personal belongings into two portions. One half he gave to his son while the other half he sent to the merchants for sale. But as the merchants regarded the price demanded by him as too high, they appealed to Ḫusain Khān. The latter prohibited them from paying the price asked for. This angered Ghāzī Shāh so much that he decided to regain his powers and to nominate his son Aḥmad as heir-apparent. But his plan miscarried for Ḫusain Khān deposed him and himself ascended the throne at the end of 1563.³ Ḫusain Shāh then issued orders for putting out the eyes of Aḥmad. Ghāzī Shāh interceded on his behalf, but without success. He lingered henceforth a futile wreck for four years until he died in 1566-67⁴ at the age of fifty-eight.⁵

Ghāzī Shāh possessed all those qualities necessary to found a

¹. Ibid., 489-90.
². B.S., ff. 125a-b; H.M., ff. 158a-b.
³. T.A., iii, 490-1.
⁴. Ibid., iii, 493.
⁵. Ghāzī Chak was 18 years of age in 1527 when Bābur's troops invaded Kashmir in 1527. (see p. 120, supra). He was thus 58 years of age at the time of his death in 1567.
dynasty—vigilance, courage, energy, tenacity of purpose, and ability to take advantage of opportunities. He began his career as a soldier under his father, Kājī Chak, at the age of eighteen. He fought in all his wars, and shared with him exile and all kinds of privations. After Kājī's death he served under other senior members of his family, and impressed the Chaks so much with his abilities that when they became dissatisfied with Daulat Chak they chose him as their leader. On assuming power Ghāzī Chak suppressed the refractory chiefs and established law and order. But his most notable service to his country was that he successfully protected it from the Mughal invasions, which, twenty years later, overwhelmed his successors. Ghāzī Shāh had a rough exterior, but he was a cultured man and composed verses in Persian. He was generous to those who were loyal to him, but he showed no mercy to traitors, and inflicted cruel punishments on them. He was the first Sulṭān of Kashmir to have introduced the practice of blinding the political opponents and cutting off their limbs. At the same time he was brave and admired brave men, and forgave them even if they were his enemies. Thus when Kūchak Bahādur, belonging to Qarā Bahādur's army, was taken prisoner, having been seriously wounded by an arrow, Ghāzī Shāh spared his life, treated him with kindness, and made him over to the physicians.

Ghāzī Shāh had a high sense of justice. Once a servant of his favourite son, Ḥaidar Kān, while accompanying him, picked up a jujube from the ground. He observed this and had the hands of the servant cut off. When Ḥaidar Kān heard of this, he was so angry that he refused to visit his father. Ghāzī Shāh felt hurt, and sent Ḥaidar's uncle, Muḥammad Malik, to remonstrate with him. Ḥaidar got enraged and stabbed his uncle to death. Ghāzī Shāh, thereupon, caused Ḥaidar to be hanged. His body was exhibited on the gibbet for eight days, and then thrown into the river.

Ghāzī Shāh was a Shi'ite, but he allowed freedom of belief to persons of all religions. The author of the Nawādiru'l-Akhdār says that Ghāzī Shāh was intolerant, and because of this many Sunni chiefs like Nuṣrat Chak, Yūsuf Chak, and Nājī Malik proceeded to Kāshghar.

and brought Qarā Bahādur in order to overthrow him. But there is no reliable evidence to support the view that the Kashmir nobles ever went to Kāshghar. Moreover, when Qarā was sent by Akbar to invade Kashmir, many of the Sunnī nobles refused to help him and professed their loyalty to Ghāzī Shāh. Similarly it is wrong to say that rebellions in the latter’s reign were due to religious differences. Their main cause was the scramble for power among the nobles. Neither from Ḩaidar Malik’s account nor from the Bahāristān-i-Shāhī does it appear that Ghāzī Shāh was a fanatical Shī’ite.

Sulṭān Ḥusain Shāh (1563-70)

On ascending the throne Ḥusain Shāh was called upon to deal with a number of conspiracies and risings one after another. The first conspiracy against him was organised by Ghāzī’s son, Aḥmad Khān, Muḥammad Māgre, and Nuṣrat Chak. But Ḥusain Shāh discovered it, and sent for the malcontents under the pretext of obtaining pledges of loyalty from them. When they came he had them seized and thrown into prison.

In 1565, Ḥusain Shāh was faced with the revolt of his younger brother, Shankar Chak, who fled from Kashmir and began to create trouble in the Naushahrā area by occupying villages and oppressing the peasants. Ḥusain Shāh thereupon sent Muḥammad Nājī and his younger brother ‘Alī Khān Chak to Pūṇch. They attacked Shankar and defeated him. But soon after he again raised the banner of revolt. He was once more defeated by ‘Alī Chak near Rajaurī.

In 1565-66, while Ḥusain Shāh had gone away shooting on the Vethnār lake, Fathi Khwāja Baqqāl and his son, on whom the Sulṭān had conferred the titles of Khān-i-Zamān and Bahādur Khān respectively, decided to seize power with the help of Fathi Chak, Shams Dūnī, and other nobles. Their plan was to enter the palace, put to

1. N.A., ff. 78b.
2. B.S., ff. 125a-26b; T.A. iii, 491-2.
4. Ibid., iii, 492. In the trans. of T.A., iii, p. 742, ‘Alī Khān is wrongly referred to as ‘Ālam Khān.
5. A lake lying on the left bank of the Jehlam, about 5 miles south-east of Srinagar.
6. From B.S., f. 126b it appears that Khān-i-Zamān was the Wazīr.
death their rivals, and secure the release of Aḥmad Khān, Muḥammad Māgre, and Nuṣrat Chak. But Nājī, who was in charge of the capital, came to know of the plot, and so, when the rebels entered the palace, they met with stiff resistance, and were finally repulsed. Fath Chak and Bahādur Khān were killed, while Khān-i-Zamān was taken prisoner. Meanwhile, Ḥusain Shāh saw from a distance the fire in the palace caused by the rebels. He immediately returned and ordered the limbs of Khān-i-Zamān and his accomplices to be cut off.¹

Soon after, the Wazīr Mubāriz Khān hatched a plot against Ḥusain Shāh in collaboration with Lohar Chak. But the conspirators were seized and their hands and feet were cut off. Nuṣrat Chak, who was in prison, was blinded.²

After the fall of Mubāriz Khān in 1567-68, Malik Lūlī succeeded him, but on the charge of embezzling 40,000 kharwārs of paddy belonging to the government he was dismissed and in his place ‘Alī Kūkā was appointed.³ It was during ‘Alī Kūkā’s term of office that an incident took place which had far-reaching effects on the subsequent history of Kashmīr.

One day, in 1568-69, Qāẓī Ḥabīb, a fanatical Sūnnī, while riding along in Srinagar, came across one Yūsuf Aindar, an equally fanatical Shī‘ite. The Qāẓī vilified the Shī‘ites; Yūsuf retorted by abusing the Qāẓī. Thereupon, Qāẓī Ḥabīb struck him with a whip. Yūsuf retaliated by drawing his sword and wounding the Qāẓī, who fell from his horse. When ‘Alī Kūkā, who was a staunch Sūnnī, heard of this he at once brought the matter to the notice of Ḥusain Shāh, and with his permission called a council of important ‘Ulamā like Qāẓī Mūsa, Mullā Yūsuf Almās, and Mulla Fīrūz Ganāt. This body passed a decree condemning Yūsuf to death.⁴ The execution of Yūsuf created great resentment among the Shī‘ite divines. Some of the Sūnnī ‘Ulamā also did not approve of the decision, contending that none of the Four Schools sanctioned death penalty for the offence committed by Yūsuf.⁵ Even Qāẓī Ḥabīb was opposed to the infliction

¹. *Ibid.*, ff. 126a-b; T.A., i i i, 492. H.M. says Khān-i-Zamān was only reprimanded.
². B.S., f. 126b.
³. T.A., i i i, 493-4.
⁴. B.S., ff. 127a-b; T.A., i i i, 494.
⁵. B.S., f. 127b.
of such a punishment on the ground that he had not died of the wound.¹

It was at this time that Akbar sent Mîrzâ Muqîm as his ambassador to Kashmir. Ḥusain Shâh sent his high officials to meet him at Hirapûr, and then he himself came out of Srinagar to receive him.³ As he was at the moment very perturbed by the controversy over the execution of Yûsuf, he referred the matter to Mîrzâ Muqîm. The Mîrzâ sent for all the prominent ‘Ulamâ, including those who had condemned Yûsuf to death. Everyone came except Qâzî Mûsâ, who fled from the city and hid himself. Qâzî Zainu’d-Dîn and Mulla Râzî questioned Mulla Yûsuf Almâs and Mulla Fîrûz as to the justice of the penalty of death inflicted on Yûsuf, when Qâzî Ḥâbîb had not been killed. They replied that they had given their verdict at the suggestion of Husain Shâh, who wanted Yûsuf’s execution on account of political reasons and had sent them word through ‘Alî Kûkâ. But the Sultân denied having had anything to do with the affair, except that, instead of deciding the case himself, he had entrusted it to the Qâzîs. In the end, the Sunnî and Shi’ite ‘Ulamâ decreed the execution of Mulla Fîrûz and Mulla Yûsuf Almâs according to the Shâfi’î law. Qâzî ‘Abdu’l-Ghafûr, a Hanafite, and Qâzî Zainu’d-Dîn, a Shâfi’ite, agreed with this judgement.³

Soon after Mîrzâ Muqîm left Kashmir. Ḥusain Shâh sent with him Ya’qûb Mîrzâ,⁴ the son of Bâbâ ‘Alî, as his wakîl with valuable presents for the Emperor and his daughter to be married to Prince Salîm. Meanwhile, ‘Alî Kûkâ had despatched some nobles and ‘Ulamâ headed by Mulla ‘Abdu’l-lâh to the Imperial Court to complain to Akbar against Mîrzâ Muqîm. By misrepresenting the whole affair of Qâzî Ḥâbîb and Yûsuf, they succeeded in stirring Akbar’s anger to such a pitch that as soon as Mîrzâ Muqîm returned to Agra, he was at once put to death on the advice of Shaikh ‘Abdu’n-Nabî and other ‘Ulamâ.

¹. T.A., iii, 494.
2. Ibid.; B.S., f. 128a.
3. B.S., ff. 128a-29b. T.A. says Zainu’d-Dîn was a Shi’ite.
4. B.S., f. 130a; M.T., ii, 128. T.A., iii, 404 is wrong in stating that Ya’qûb had been sent by Akbar. Ya’qûb was the son of Bâbâ ‘Alî, a Shi’ite divine of Kashmir.
The Emperor also ordered the execution of Ya'qūb, though he was an envoy, and sent back the presents and Ḥusain Shāh’s daughter to Srinagar.1

Towards the end of his reign, while Ḥusain Shāh was seriously suffering from the cancer of the mouth, ‘Alī Kōkā and Nājī Malik advised him to set up one of his sons on the throne and imprison his brother ‘Alī Khān along with Sayyid Mubārak. But before Ḥusain Shāh could act, ‘Alī Khān, warned of the plan, fled to Sūpūr where he was joined by Sayyid Mubārak and other disaffected chiefs. Then, having gathered a sufficient force, he marched on Srinagar and encamped at Fathyārī. He repelled a night attack of the royalists, and the following morning entered the capital. As Ḥusain Shāh was not strong enough to offer resistance, he decided, on the advice of Nājī Malik and ‘Alī Kōkā, to abdicate, and sent the crown to ‘Alī Khān through Bābā Khālīl.2

Ḥusain Shāh was by far the best ruler of the Chak dynasty. His rule, though efficient and strong, was tempered with mildness and justice, so that his subjects called him Nūshiravān-i-‘Ādil after the great Sāsānīd Emperor of Persia. He attended to their complaints, protected them from robbers and rapacious officials, and endeavoured to promote their prosperity.3 He was of a generous disposition, and every day, after morning prayers, he distributed money to the poor and needy.4 Though a Shī‘ite, he allowed the practice of the Ḥanafite law, and appointed Sayyid Ḥabīb, a Sunnī jurist from Khwārizm, as Qāzī of Srinagar and Preacher of the Jāmi‘ Masjid.5 His attitude towards his non-Muslim subjects was also very liberal. He granted them complete freedom to practice their religion and customs and to celebrate their

---

1. B.S., f. 130; M.T., li, 128; see also Briggs, Rise of Muhammadan Power in India, iv, 519. T.A. and Fīrishta mention only of Mīrzā Muqīm’s execution, but it is not improbable that Akbar in a fit of anger may have also put to death the envoy of Ḥusain Shāh.
2. B.S. ff. 131a-32b.
3. Ibid., f. 125b; H.M., f. 158b; Šuka, pp. 391-2.
4. H.M., f. 159b.
5. W.K., ff. 52a, 60a. N.A., ff. 81a sq. unjustly accuses him of intolerance towards the Hindus.
festivals. In fact, in some of the festivals, like the Spring and Śrīpancamī, he himself participated. He was a man of cultured tastes. He was fond of music, wrote verses in Persian, and enjoyed the society of artists and scholars. He divided the day in the following manner: On Monday he attended court with the Qāzīs and Mīr ‘Adls. On Tuesday he went out hunting. Wednesday he spent with his army. Thursday he passed in the company of musicians and friends. On Friday he held discussions with the ‘Ulamā. Saturday was passed in the society of Hindu and Buddhist priests, and Sunday he spent with the Sufis.

The last days of Ḥusain Shāh’s reign were clouded with personal grief and public anxiety. First there was the affair of Yūsuf Aindar and Qāzī Habīb which caused him endless worries. Then his brave and able son Ibrāhīm, whom he was very fond of, died of small-pox. This affected him so much that he became consumptive. After his abdication some of the courtiers advised ‘Alī Shāh to imprison and blind him. But ‘Alī Shāh refused to listen to them and gave Ḥusain Shāh complete freedom of movement and the use of his treasure. Ḥusain Shāh went to live in Zainapūr, and there he died of fever after a year.

Sultān ‘Alī Shāh (1570-78)

On his accession ‘Alī Shāh made Sayyid Mubārak Baihaqī, who had been for a long time his faithful friend, his Wazīr. To strengthen further the bonds of friendship with him he gave his daughter in marriage to Mubārak’s son, Sayyid Abū’l-Ma‘ālī. For about two years peace reigned in the kingdom. But at the end of 1571, ‘Alī Khān Chak, son of Naurūz Chak, entered into league with some nobles in order to seize the throne. Warned of the plot, ‘Alī

1. Śuka, p. 393. 2. W.K., f. 52b. 3. H.M., f. 159b. 4. B.S., f. 128a; H.M., f. 165a. 5. H.M., f. 165a. 6. B.S., ff. 133b-34a; Śuka, p. 393. According to B.S. it was Sayyid Mubārak who advised Husain Shāh not to blind his brother. 7. Śuka, p. 393, says Husain Shāh died of epilepsy, but this is not supported by other authorities. The Sultān was consumptive, and probably died of fever. 8. B.S., f. 133a.
Shāh decided to execute him. But Sayyid Mubārak interceded on his behalf and sent him away to his home in Kamrāj. ‘Alī Khān, however, did not stay there long. He fled to Lahore and sought the help of Ḥusain Quṭb Khān, Akbar’s governor of the Punjāb.1 When this news reached Srinagar, some of the courtiers who were jealous of Mubārak, made him responsible for ‘Alī Chak’s escape, and accused him of treason. Meanwhile ‘Alī Chak, having failed to get on well with Ḥusain Quṭb Khān, had fled to Mānkāt. A force was, thereupon, at once despatched against him by ‘Alī Shāh. He was seized, brought to Srinagar, and thrown into prison. But after a year and a half he was released on presenting the Sultan one hundred gold dīnārs.2

In 1572-73 took place the revolt of Prince Yūsuf Khān, ‘Alī Shāh’s son and successor. As Aiba Khān, Ghāzī Shāh’s son, was also a claimant to the throne, Yūsuf’s relations with him became inimical. Incited by Muḥammad Baṭ he proceeded to Aiba Khān’s house with his followers and assassinated him, and then out of fear of the Sultan he went away to Sōpur, where he raised the banner of revolt. ‘Alī Shāh was very angry with Yūsuf for causing Aiba Khān’s death and organising a rising. He, therefore, sent a force under his brother Abdāl Khān against him. Abdāl was anxious to attack Yūsuf and destroy him in order to clear the way for his own succession. But Sayyid Mubārak opposed this fratricidal war and brought about reconciliation between father and son. Muḥammad Baṭ, however, was not forgiven, but was thrown into prison.3

Soon after this event Shams Dūnī and Muḥammad Marāj, two nobles of Kashmir, began to create trouble in the country. But when ‘Alī Shāh sent an army against them, they got frightened and took refuge with Sayyid Mubārak. The latter interceded on their behalf with the Sultan who forgave them.4

1. Ḥusain Quṭb Khān was Bairam Khān’s sister’s son. He was treated with great favour by and held high offices under Akbar. He was governor of the Punjāb from 1569 to 1576. See for more details of his life, Ma’ṣūrī’l-Umarā’, i, pp. 645 sqq.
2. Ibid., f. 134a; also T.A., iii, 498.
3. B.S., f. 135a; T.A., iii, 499, wrongly calls Aiba Khān as Ibrāhīm Khān.
4. B.S., ff. 136a-b.
In 983/1575-76 'Ali Shāh was faced with a serious danger on account of the invasion of Kashmir by Nāzūk Shāh’s sons, Ḥāji Ḥaidar Khān and Salīm Khān.¹ They were living in exile in the Punjab, but having entered into correspondence with some Kashmirī chiefs who promised to help them, they set out towards the Valley in order to contest the throne. ‘Ali Shāh, learning that the pretenders had reached Naushahrā and had been joined by their supporters, at once sent a force under his brother Lohar Chak and Muḥammad Chak against them. When the army reached Thanna, Muḥammad Chak took Lohar prisoner, and surrendered him to the enemy. On hearing this ‘Ali Shāh became greatly alarmed, and despite the fact that Nājī Malik assured him that Muḥammad was not a traitor, but a loyal servant, his fears were not dispelled. But events turned out as Nājī had foreseen. Muḥammad Khān, having lulled Ḥāji Ḥaidar and Salīm into a false sense of security by surrendering Lohar, made a surprise attack on them at Singapūr while they were proceeding to Rajaurī from Naushahrā. Salīm Khān was killed, but Ḥāji Ḥaidar succeeded in making good his escape to India. Muḥammad Khān then secured Lohar Chak’s release and with him returned to Srinagar.²

In 1572 ‘Ali Shāh decided to reduce Kishtwār whose ruler Bahādur Singh had renounced his authority. Accordingly, he sent three armies, each under the command of Abdāl Khān, ‘Ali Khān, and Naurūz Chak, to invade Kishtwār from three sides, while he himself encamped at Singapūr.³ Bahādur Singh, realizing that he would not be able to resist the Kashmirī forces, decided to come to terms. He acknowledged ‘Ali Shāh as his suzerain, agreed to pay tribute, and presented the wife of one of his relations with whom the Sultān was in love. ‘Ali Shāh married her and named her Fath Khātūn.⁴ But as Bahādur Singh did not pay his tribute, ‘Ali Shāh, in 1574, again sent a force under Ismā’īl Ganā’ī against him. But as before Bahādur Singh agreed to come to

---

¹. H.M., f. 165b. According to T.A., iii, 499, Ḥaidar Khān was the son of Muḥammad Shāh while Salīm Khān was his cousin.
². H.M., ff. 165b-66b; also T.A., iii, 499-500.
³. It is a small village in Lat. 33° 28’ Long. 75° 37’, situated above the left bank of the Kasher Khol stream on the Kishtwār side of the Marbal Pass.
⁴. H.M., f. 167a. According to T.A., iii, 498, she was Bahādur Singh’s daughter.
terms. He promised to pay his tribute regularly in future, and sent his sister Sankar Devi to be married to ‘Alī Shāh’s grandson, Ya’qūb.¹

On about July 3, 1578,² Akbar, from the neighbourhood of Kalānaur, sent Mullā ‘Ishqī and Qāzī Ṣadrud-Dīn as ambassadors to Kashmir ostensibly with the object of proposing a marriage between Prince Salīnī and Ḥusain Shāh’s daughter, but in reality to find out if the conditions were favourable for a Mughal invasion of the country. ‘Alī Shāh accepted the proposal and sent his wakil Muḥammad Qāsim with his niece and presents of shawls, musk, and saffron to the imperial court. He also had the khutba recited and the coins struck in the name of Akbar.³

‘Alī Shāh was an able and just ruler, and looked after the welfare of the peasants. When the rabi‘ crops failed in 1578 owing to the heavy fall of snow and caused famine in the country, he brought out his treasure, and distributed it freely among the poor and needy.⁴ He was kind and of a humane disposition, and forgave even those who took up arms against him. He discontinued the practice of the blinding and cutting of limbs of political opponents prevalent since the time of Ghāzī Shāh.⁵ He was a liberal ruler and did not discriminate between Shi‘ites and Sunnis. He appointed Sayyid Mubārak, a Sunnī, as his Wazīr and held the Şūffīs like Ḥamza Makhdūm and his two disciples, Bābā Dā‘ūd Ganā‘ī and Bābā Rishī Ḥarvī in great respect. Shaikh Ya’qūb Ṣarbī and Khwāja Muḥammad Rafīq were also respected by him.⁶ He was fond of playing polo every morning and afternoon. But one day, early in 1579, during a game, he was mortally injured. He returned to the palace and, realizing that his end was near, he crowned his eldest son, Yūsuf Khān, as Sultan.⁷

¹ H.M., ff. 167a-b; J.P.H.S., iv, 37.
² A.N., iii, 356; Elliot, v, 411; Badā‘ūnī, ii, 276. The date 980/1572-3 as given by Firuzšta and T.A. is incorrect.
³ W.K., f. 53a; T.A., iii, 498-99. T.A. is wrong in stating that the lady sent was ‘Alī Shāh’s nephew’s daughter.
⁴ H.M., ff. 167b-68a.
⁵ B.S., f. 137a.
⁶ N.A., ff. 87a-88a; A.A. (Blochmann), p. 651 and n.2.
⁷ H.M., ff. 168b-69a; B.S., ff. 137b-38a.
CHAPTER IX

YŪSUF SHĀH AND AKBAR

On 'Alī Shāh's death his brother Abdāl Chak decided to contest the throne. Sayyid Mubārak, however, tried to avert hostilities, and, with the consent of Yūsuf Shāh, sent Bābā Khalīl, a Shi'ite divine, to Abdāl, requesting him to give up all thoughts of war and to come and participate in the burial ceremonies of 'Alī Shāh. But as Abdāl did not trust Yūsuf on account of his part in the assassination of Aiba Khān, he refused to go. Thereupon, Sayyid Mubārak himself went to Abdāl accompanied by Muḥammad Baṭ and Bābā Khalīl. On behalf of Yūsuf and on their own behalf they gave a pledge to Abdāl guaranteeing his personal safety if he attended the funeral ceremonies. They also pleaded with him to give up the idea of contesting the throne, for Yūsuf had a better claim to it than anyone else. But their requests fell on deaf ears. Having thus failed in their mission, they returned and advised Yūsuf to immediately attack Abdāl. Yūsuf, accordingly, organised an army with the advance-guard under Muḥammad Khān, the centre under Sayyid Mubārak, and the rear under himself. Hearing of this Abdāl moved out to Nauhattā, and there encountered Muḥammad Khān. Although he was wounded by a bullet he kept on fighting. Meanwhile, Mubārak came up to the help of Muhammad Khān with over 2,000 horse. After a heavy engagement Abdāl was killed by Sayyid Mubārak. This demoralised his followers. Shams Chak and Ḥabīb Chak escaped. Sayyid Jalāl, son of Sayyid Mubārak, lost his life while pursuing them. Yūsuf Shāh, who was in the rear

1. B.S., ff. 138a-b; also H.M., ff. 169b-70b.
2. H.M., f. 171a; A.A. (Blochmann), p. 535. A.N., iii, 408, says that he was killed by a bullet. But according to B.S., ff. 140b-41a Abdāl was hit by an arrow from Sayyid Abūl-Maʿālī, and was finally killed by Sayyid Ḥusain Khān. But B.S. is inclined to exaggerate the exploits of the Baihaqi Sayyids.
3. Shams Chak was the son of Daulat Chak and Ḥabīb Chak was the son of Abdāl Chak.
with a small force, came up to the battle-field after the fighting was over and forbade the burial of Abdāl’s body. But Qāẓī Mūsā, the Qāẓī of Sōpūr, defied the order, and buried it in the ancestral graveyard the same day. The next day Yūsuf Shāh, after performing the last rites in connection with his father’s death, proclaimed himself Sultān.¹

Yūsuf Shāh had been in power only for two months² when he was faced with a serious revolt which brought about his abdication. The leader of the uprising was Abdāl Bat who had become alienated because instead of him Muḥammad Bat had been made Wazīr.³ He won over the nobles who were dissatisfied with Yūsuf Shāh for spending his time in the society of women and singers and neglecting the administration of the country.⁴ He then decided to depose Yūsuf and enthrone Mubārak in his place. The latter at first refused to take up arms against Yūsuf, and tried to reconcile the two groups through the good offices of Bābā Khalīl. But having failed in the attempt, owing to the intransigence of Yūsuf, who refused to forgive his opponents, Mubārak agreed to join the rebels.⁵ At this time Nājī Malik advised Yūsuf to open his treasury, and distribute it among the people who would rally to his support. But Yūsuf did not follow the advice.⁶ Nājī also suggested to Yūsuf that he should himself march against the rebels instead of entrusting the command to Muḥammad Khān who was young and inexperienced. Despite this Yūsuf sent a force under Muḥammad Khān to the ‘Īd-gāh where the rebels had assembled, while he himself proceeded to the field of Ziāldakar.⁷ Muḥammad Khān crossed the

1. B.S., ff. 139a-42b; H.M., ff. 170a-71b.
2. B.S., f. 142b. Firishta and T.A. also say that Yūsuf remained in power for two months. But H.M., f. 171b gives the period of one month and two days.
3. B.S., f. 142b.
5. Ibid. B.S., ff. 143b-44a.
6. H.M. says that Yūsuf Shāh ignored the advice because he was a miser. But no other authority holds the view that Yūsuf possessed a miserly disposition. Haidar Malik is inclined to run down Yūsuf in order to exalt his grandfather, Nājī Malik.
7. H.M., ff. 172b-73a; see also B.S., f. 144a. But B.S., unlike H.M., completely ignores the part played by Nājī Malik in these events.
bridge of Naukadal and attacked the enemy. But after hard fighting in which both sides lost 300 men, he was killed. This spread panic among his followers who fled. Some escaped and joined Yusuf in the field of Ziiildakar, while others went over to the enemy. According to the Bahārīstān-i-Shāhī Yusuf Shāh's position was so precarious at this time that, if Mubārak had attacked him as advised by some of his supporters, he would have easily seized him. But Mubārak refrained from this step. In fact, when Yusuf sent him Mullā Ḥasan Aswad, 'Alī Shāh's tutor, to ask forgiveness for his previous mistakes, he forgave him and advised him to leave Kashmir, assuring him that he would be recalled after a few months. Yusuf Shāh, therefore, went away to Thanna. But this account is very partial to Mubārak, for, as his subsequent attitude towards Yusuf Shāh shows, he could not have played the magnanimous role assigned to him by the author of the Bahārīstān-i-Shāhī. In reality Yusuf left for Thanna because his forces had been defeated and he found further resistance to be useless.

Mubārak, who now replaced Yusuf Shāh as Sulṭān, led a very simple life, being averse to all pomp and show. He sold off the crown and the royal parasol (chatr), which were studded with precious stones, and distributed the money among the poor and the soldiers. He was just and generous, and though a good soldier, he was a man of peace, and only in the last resort unsheathed his sword. He detested the shedding of blood, and, as we have seen, always advised 'Alī Shāh and Yusuf Shāh to forgive the malcontents.

The nobles had set up Mubārak in order to rule in his name. But when they found that he would not allow himself to be dominated by others, they turned against him and invited Yusuf Shāh to return to Kashmir. Assured of their support, Yusuf left Thanna, but when he reached the village of Barbal, he received proposals of peace from Mubārak through Dā'ūd Mīr. He, therefore, sent his sons, Yaʿqūb and Ibrāhīm, to Mubārak, accompanied by Dā'ūd Mīr and Mullā Ḥasan Aswad, and then he himself got ready to meet him. Meanwhile, Abdāl Baṭ, the leader of the faction against Mubārak, became alarmed

1. H.M., ff. 173a-74a; B.S., ff. 145a-b.
2. B.S., ff. 146a-47a.
4. B.S., f. 148b.
5. H.M., f. 174b.
at these developments and sent Yūsuf a message, warning him against trusting Mubārak’s words or meeting him. Yūsuf believed Abdāl and broke off the talks.\(^1\) However, when he was attacked by Mubārak, the Chak nobles, despite their promises, did not come forward to help him. The result was that he was defeated, and had to return to Thanna via Barbal.\(^2\)

Abdāl had foiled the peace negotiations between Yūsuf and Mubārak, but as the latter was still in power, he made another plan to bring about his overthrow. On the one hand he had ‘Alī Khān, son of Naurūz Chak, treacherously seized and imprisoned by telling Mubārak that it was he who had invited Yūsuf Shāh to invade the Valley and had thus been responsible for causing so much chaos. On the other hand he told the Chak nobles that it was by Mubārak’s order that ‘Alī Chak had been imprisoned, and warned them that their lives too were in danger. In this way Abdāl Baṭ tried to incite the rival parties against each other.\(^3\) Deceived by his machinations, the Chak nobles again invited Yūsuf to return, and meanwhile they prepared for a revolt. Hearing of this Mubārak, although ill, marched to the Īd-gāh and sent a challenge to Abdāl for a personal combat. Abdāl knew that he was no match for Mubārak in personal valour and so he decided upon a ruse. He sent Bābā Khalil to him with a message that the Chak nobles were anxious for peace, but were driven into hostility because of ‘Alī Chak’s imprisonment, and suggested negotiations in the hospice of Bābā Khalil. Mubārak was beguiled by these words, and, having released ‘Alī Chak, proceeded to the hospice.\(^4\) There the Chak nobles, who had gathered in large numbers on the occasion,\(^5\) compelled him to abdicate, and in his place set up Lohar Chak, son of Shankar Chak, on the throne, with Abdāl Baṭ as Wazīr. The latter in order to consolidate his position at once threw ‘Alī Chak and his son Yūsuf into prison, and sent word to Yūsuf Shāh not to come to Srīnagar.\(^6\) Yūsuf Shāh was

1. B.S., ff. 149a-50a.
2. Ibid., f. 150b. According to H.M., f. 174b, Yūsuf Chak retired without giving a fight.
3. B.S., ff. 151a-b.
4. Ibid., ff. 152a sqq.
5. H.M., f. 175a.
6. B.S., ff. 155b-56a.
disgusted with the insincerity of the Kashmirī nobles, and so decided to invoke the aid of the Emperor Akbar. He proceeded to Lahore to Rājā Mān Singh and Mīrzā Yūsuf Khān, who took him to Agra, and there in January 1580 he was presented to the Emperor.1

Akbar received Yūsuf Shāh cordially, and deputed Rājā Mān Singh and Mīrzā Yūsuf Khān to help him in the recovery of his throne.2 Accordingly, in the month of August, 1580, Yūsuf Shāh proceeded to Lahore with them. When Muhammad Baṭ, his former Wazīr, got this news he left his force of one thousand men at Buhlūlpūr and joined him at Lahore. There it was decided not to employ the Mughal troops who would be unpopular in the country, and who, after its conquest, would take over the administration and enforce their own laws.3 Yūsuf Shāh, therefore, borrowed some money from the merchants of Lahore and with about 800 men, whom he enlisted there, he marched towards Buhlūlpūr under the pretext that he was going to find out the conditions existing in Kashmir.4 At Buhlūlpūr he managed to raise another body of 3,000 men with the help of some Kashmirī nobles, and then set out to Bhimbhar. After defeating Yūsuf Dār,5 who was posted at Naushahrā by Lohar Chak, Yūsuf Shāh advanced on Rajaurī. Its ruler, Rāi Bahādur, seeing how Yūsuf Dār had fled, submitted to him. He was received with honour and made commander of the vanguard of the army.6 Yūsuf Shāh then moved to Thanna. Lohar Chak now sent Yūsuf Khān, the son of Ḥusain Shāh Chak, and Nāzuk Baṭ, the son of Abdāl Baṭ, against Yūsuf Shāh. On reaching

2. B.S., f. 157a; T.A., iii, 503. According to H.M. (B.N.), f. 57b and N.A., f. 92b Yūsuf was refused help. But this is wrong.
3. B.S., f. 157b. According to A.A. (Blochmann), p. 535, the Mughal army accompanied Yūsuf as far as Pinjar; according to T.A., iii, 503 it went up to Siālkot.
5. H.M. (I.O.), N.A., and N.K. call him Yūsuf Dār, but H.M. (B.N.) calls him Muḥammad Yūsuf, while B.S. calls him Yūsuf Khān. His father was ‘Ali Khān, who was the son of Naurūz Chak.
6. H.M., f. 176a; See also H.M. (B.N.), f. 58a, where additional information is given.
the village of Sidau, Yūsuf Khān, having seized Nāzuk Baṭ, handed him over to Yūsuf Shāh, and himself entered his service. Owing to the defection of Yūsuf Khān, Lohar Chak’s army became demoralized and began to disintegrate. Shams Dūnī, Malik Ḥasan and many other chiefs fled and joined Yūsuf Shāh at Thanna.

Lohar had stationed Ḥaidar Chak at Hirapūr with a large force, thinking that Yūsuf Shāh would follow the Pīr Panjāl route. But Yūsuf Shāh left behind a small force to conceal his movement, and with the rest of his army moved towards Pūnch and entered Kashmir through the Tōshamaidān Pass. He defeated Lohar’s forces at Chīra Hār and again at Sōpūr. He then crossed the Jehlam, and after destroying the Sōpūr bridge, occupied the surrounding country. When Lohar heard the news of the defeats of his armies and the desertion of his officers, he became extremely anxious. He, therefore, on Abdāl’s advice, released ‘Alī Chak from prison in order to secure his help in the war against Yūsuf Shāh. He then recalled Ḥaidar Chak from Hirapūr to Srīnagar, and having collected his forces from all sides, set out with a large army towards Sōpūr. But finding that the Sōpūr Bridge had been destroyed, he tried to cross the river by means of boats. However, owing to the resistance of the enemy from the other bank he was not successful. He therefore, detached a force of 2,000 men under Ḥaidar Chak by the route of Khuyahōm to attack Yūsuf Shāh from the rear, while he himself stayed behind to watch the movements of the enemy. Meanwhile, he sent a message to Yūsuf Shāh through Bābā Khalīl that, since he would soon be attacked both from the front and from the rear and defeated, he should leave Kashmir in return for which he would be given the jāgīr of Dachūn-Khovūr. Yūsuf

1. It is a village in Lat. 33° 40’ Long. 74° 50’, situated at the foot of the ascent to the Būdil or Sidau Pass.
2. H.M., f. 176b. These defections were due to Abdāl’s despotic rule. (B.S., f. 157a).
3. H.M., ff. 176b-77a; B.S., f. 158a.
5. B.S., f. 158b; H.M., f. 177a.
6. B.S., f. 159b.
7. H.M., ff. 177a-b.
8. Ibid., f. 177b; B.S. 160b.
Shāh for a moment became nervous because of the numerical inferiority of his forces, but encouraged by Ḥasan Malik, who assured him of victory, he rejected Lohar's overtures. And in the early morning of November 8, 1580, he crossed the Jehlam in order to make a surprise attack on the enemy. A force of over 2,000 men under 'Alī Baṭ tried to prevent the crossing, but was beaten back. Yūsuf Shāh's army then proceeded to attack Abdāl Baṭ. As the flower of Lohar Chak's force had been sent away under Ḥaidar Chak, Abdāl was at a disadvantage. After a severe fight he was defeated and killed. Lohar retreated and made a final stand at the village of Bratham. But having again suffered a reverse, he fled to Srīnagar. Yūsuf Shāh at once marched on the capital, which he entered without any opposition. Hearing of Lohar's defeat, the forces under Ḥaidar Chak became demoralized, and dispersed. Ḥaidar Chak himself escaped by way of Chīra Hār.

On occupying Srīnagar Yūsuf Shāh entrusted Muḥammad Baṭ with the duties of prime minister, and ordered a search to be made for Lohar Chak and his followers. Lohar was discovered concealed in the house of Qāżī Mūsā, Qāżī of Sōpūr; Lohar's brother, Muḥammad, was seized in Bārāmūla, and Ḥasan Chak was captured in Mamosa in the pargana of Bāngil. Besides these many other chiefs were also seized, and they were brought before Yūsuf Shāh. He accused them of having joined Lohar Chak in spite of the fact that both he and his father had treated them kindly and bestowed favours on them. He pointed out that several times they had called him to Kashmir, yet on each occasion they had betrayed him. Under the circumstance pardon was out of the question. Lohar Shāh, his brother, Muḥammad Khān, and Ḥusain Chak were blinded. Some had their limbs amputated, while others were executed. 'Alī Khān Chak and his son Yūsuf Khān

5. It is in Badgām Taḥṣīl, about 3 1/4 miles north-west of Srīnagar.
8. It is a village about 11 miles north-west of Srīnagar, on the road connecting Srīnagar with Gulmarg.
9. Ibid., f. 164a; H.M., ff. 180a-81b. 10. B.S., ff. 164b-65b.
were, however, imprisoned. But a general amnesty was given to the common soldiers and villagers who had joined Lohar Chak.¹

Haidar Chak and Shams Chak Kopwārā² had fled to Karnāv after Lohar Chak’s defeat. Haidar Chak had pointed out to Shams Chak that it would be dangerous for them to stay there long, as Yūsuf Shāh would soon send a strong army which they would not be able to resist. But Shams Chak did not accept this advice and stayed on. Haidar, however, separated from him and proceeded to Ladākh.³

As Haidar had foreseen, Yūsuf Shāh ordered Lohar Malik Qorchi to march against Shams Chak. Learning of this, Shams left Karnāv⁴ and occupied the fort of Fīruz near Pakhlī.⁵ But as he had antagonised the garrison by his cruelties, the commandant sent a message to Lohar to come immediately and seize Shams. Lohar made a rapid march, and arrived before the fort. Shams Chak was surrendered and taken to Yūsuf Shāh, who had him blinded.⁶

Early in 1581, Shams Chak, son of Daulat Chak, ‘Ālam Shēr Māgre, and other nobles began to make plans for the overthrow of Yūsuf Shāh. Informed of this, the latter threw the conspirators in prison. Alarmed at these developments, Ḥabīb Khān fled to the hills and was joined by Haidar Chak. Yūsuf Khān, who was in prison, succeeded in escaping and joining the rebels.⁷ They then approached the ruler of Ladākh named Jamyang Namgyal (1560-90),⁸ and secured from him the aid of about 4,000 horse. When Yūsuf Shāh heard of this he sent an army against them. As there was no unity among the rebel

². Shams Chak belonged to the Chaks of Kopwārā and should not be confused with Shams Chak, son of Daulat Chak, who was related to the ruling dynasty.
³. H.M., ff. 181a-b.
⁴. Ancient Karnāha. This territory lies between the Kishangangā and the Kājnāg Range.
⁵. H.M., f. 181b; N.A., f. 95b.
⁷. B.S., ff. 166b-67b; T.A., iii 504.
⁸. He was the ruler of Ladākh at this time. (See Francke, *History of Western Tibet*, p. 90). But the Ladākhi chronicles do not refer to his relations with Haidar Chak.
chiefs, they failed to put up any resistance. They were seized with panic and dispersed. The Ladakhī forces also withdrew. Haidar Chak went away to Kishtwār, while Hābīb Chak, finding his way blocked on all sides by the royal forces, secretly returned to Srinagar, and began to foment trouble there.¹ But he was seized in the village of Sonawar.² Yusuf Khān was captured with his brothers in the Bring pargana. Yusuf Shāh ordered Hābīb Chak to be blinded, while Yusuf Khān and his brothers had their limbs cut off.³

Soon after these events, Yusuf Shāh had to deal with the revolt led by his chief minister, Muḥammad Baṭ. The latter wanted to punish Shams Dūnī because of some personal grudge; but since Yusuf Shāh opposed him, he decided to assassinate him with the help of Yusuf Khān. But as the plot was discovered, Muḥammad Baṭ fled. He was pursued by Yusuf Shāh who seized him and some of his followers. But the rest escaped to swell the forces of Haidar Chak in Kishtwār.⁴

Meanwhile Prince Ya‘qūb, who was only a youth, came under the influence of the malcontents and escaped with Aiba Khān, son of Abdāl Baṭ, to Kishtwār. He was, however, brought back by Mullā Ḥasan Aswād deputed for the purpose by Yusuf Shāh. But Aiba Khān remained with Haidar Chak.⁵ Another important person to join Haidar Chak at this time was Shams Chak who had escaped from prison while Yusuf Shāh was away in Lār.⁶

These defections greatly alarmed Yusuf Shāh, and so in 1582 he despatched Shēr ‘Alī Baṭ and Nājī Malik with a large force against Haidar Chak in Kishtwār. But Shēr ‘Alī was killed and Nājī Malik captured in a night attack by Haidar Chak.⁷ Thereupon, Yusuf Shāh himself advanced with his son Ya‘qūb, who was entrusted with the command of the advanceguard, to crush the rebels. As the latter were in a defile occupying a strategic position, Ya‘qūb’s forces, which encountered them, suffered reverse and fled to join the main army.

1. B.S., ff. 167b-68a.
2. It is now a part of Srinagar, and is situated to the south-east, near Takht-i-Sulaimān.
3. B.S., f. 168b; T.A., iii, 504.
4. B.S., ff. 169a-b.
5. Ibid., ff. 169b-70a.
6. Ibid., f. 170a; T.A., iii, 505.
7. B.S., f. 170b. T.A., iii, 505 wrongly says that the royalists were victorious.
However Ya'qūb rallied them and, after a severe engagement, defeated Ḥaidar Chak who fled together with Shams Chak and Aība Khān. Yūsuf came up to the battle-field after the victory had been won. He rewarded Ibrāhīm and Abūl-Maʿāli, the sons of Sayyid Mubārak, with khilṭats and jāgīrs for the courage they had displayed in the battle.¹

This defeat convinced Shams Chak and Aība Khān of the futility of resistance, and so they opened negotiations with Yūsuf Shāh who, on the mediation of the Rājā of Kishtwār, pardoned them and gave them jāgīrs.² Ḥaidar Chak, however, refused to surrender, and leaving Kishtwār, proceeded to Lahore, where he received the protection of Rājā Mān Singh, and was assigned the jāgīrs of Bhimbhar and Naushahrā.³ When Yūsuf Shāh learnt of this he sent Khwāja Qāsim, the grandson of Khwāja Ḥājī, to counteract the intrigues of Ḥaidar Chak. But Khwāja Qāsim returned unsuccessful to Srīnagar. Rājā Mān Singh, being angry with Yūsuf Shāh for not having employed the Mughal troops in the recovery of his throne, wanted to use Ḥaidar Chak as a pawn to promote the imperial interests in Kashmīr.⁴

Towards the end of 1581, Akbar, on his return from Kābul, sent from Jalālābād Mīrzā Ṭāhir and Šāliḥ ‘Āqil as ambassadors to Kashmīr. They were received by Yūsuf Shāh at Bārāmūla with every mark of respect, and then brought to Srīnagar.⁵ They delivered to him an imperial command that he had not kept the Mughal court informed of the conditions in Kashmīr, and that if there was no internal trouble he should immediately proceed to do personal homage to the Emperor.⁶ When Yūsuf Shāh discussed this order with his ministers, they advised him that, since Akbar appeared to be anxious to annex Kashmīr, he should prepare for resistance, give up the life of ease and luxury which he was leading, and strengthen the frontier forts.⁷ But Yūsuf Shāh paid no heed to these words, and instead tried to placate the Emperor by sending him costly presents and his third son Ḥaidar Khān with Mīrzā Ṭāhir and Šāliḥ ‘Āqil, who shortly after left Srīnagar.⁸

---

1. B.S., ff. 170b-71a.
2. T.A., iii, 505; also B.S., f. 172a.
3. B.S., f. 172a; H.M., f. 182a.
4. B.S., ff. 172a-b.
5. T.A., iii, 504.
7. Ibid., ff. 183a-b.
8. Ibid., f. 183b; A.N., iii, 550; T.A., iii, 504.
But these professions of loyalty failed to satisfy Akbar, who insisted that Yūsuf Shāh should himself come to court. After a year, therefore, he sent back Prince Ḥaidar with Shaikh Ya'qūb Šarfi with a farman that Yūsuf Shāh should at once proceed to Fathpūr Sīkri, otherwise an army would be sent against him. Shortly after Timūr Bēg was despatched by Rājā Mān Singh as Mughal ambassador to Kashmir, carrying the same order. Yūsuf Shāh got frightened by these repeated summons, and so, when Timūr Bēg took leave of departure from Srinagar, he sent with him his eldest son Prince Ya'qūb and the choicest articles of Kashmir to Akbar. Ya'qūb arrived in Fathpūr Sīkri and was presented to the Emperor on February 9, 1585. But instead of expressing his approval, Akbar was displeased and complained that, although he had twice ordered Yūsuf Shāh to appear at court, he had not come. Yūsuf Shāh had at first sent his third son Ḥaidar, a mere boy, who was unfit for military service, and had then deputed Ya'qūb, who was both mad and wicked. He had been spending his time in ease and luxury ever since he had recovered his throne, and had not given any proofs of his loyalty to the Emperor.

Akbar had always regarded Kashmir as part of the Mughal Empire. This was probably because it had been conquered by Mīrza Ḥaidar Dughlat on behalf of Humāyūn. Although Mīrza Ḥaidar had been overthrown, the Mughal title to the Valley had not been allowed to lapse. In 1560, as we have seen, Akbar sent Qarā Bahādur against Ghāzī Chak in order to "uproot that tyrant" whose injustices had been brought to the notice of the Emperor. But Qarā Bahādur's invasion of the Valley ended in a fiasco. Despite this, the Chak Sulṭāns continued to send occasionally to the Emperor rich gifts, which were looked upon by him as tribute and recognition of his suzerainty. Moreover, in 1580, Yūsuf Shāh, who had been driven out of his kingdom, was given assistance by Akbar to recover his throne; and although the help was not employed, and Yūsuf Shāh regained his kingdom by his own efforts, yet the very fact that a Mughal force had been placed at his disposal

1. A.N., iii, 576; T.A., iii, 504; see also H.M., ff. 184b-85a.
2. B.S., ff. 173a-b; also H.M., f. 185a.
3. A.N., iii, 676.
5. A.N., ii, 197.
was a sufficient justification for the Emperor to regard him as his vassal. But such a view was not held by Yūsuf Shāh, and that is why he had repeatedly evaded Akbar’s summons to court. However, in order not to antagonise the Emperor, he had sent him valuable presents and his sons to represent him at the imperial court. Akbar resented his attitude, and would have liked to send an army for the conquest of the Valley, but his hands were too full with the affairs of Hindustān. It was not until about 1585 that he found himself sufficiently free to adopt a more active policy towards Kashmir. He knew that there was disunity in the country which he could exploit to his own advantage. Moreover, Mīrzā Ḥaidar had shown that, although the Valley was surrounded by huge mountain barriers, its conquest was not difficult.

On August 22, 1585, Akbar left Fathpūr Sīkri in order to effect the settlement of the province of Kabul, as his half-brother Mīrzā Muḥammad Ḥakīm had died and there was a danger of an Uzbeg invasion.¹ When he reached Kalānaur on the 1st October, he deputed Ḥakīm ‘Alī Gīlānī and Baha’u’d-Dīn Kambū to proceed to Srinagar and bring Yūsuf Shāh with them. They were to tell the Kashmir Sulṭān that he had until now made distance a pretext for not coming to court; but now that the Emperor was in the Punjāb, he should at once come to pay his homage.²

Yūsuf Shāh had been receiving reports from his son Ya’qūb, who was at the Mughal court,³ about the Emperor’s plans with regard to Kashmir. They had caused him considerable anxiety. But when he came to know that Akbar had despatched two envoys, he completely lost his nerves and consulted his counsellors. They begged him, as before, to pay more attention to public affairs, to organise his army, and be ready to defend his country against a Mughal invasion.⁴ But Yūsuf Shāh was opposed to resisting the Mughals. He argued that Akbar’s army was too numerous and strong to be fought successfully, and that it could overrun the whole of the Valley in a few days’ time.

¹. A.N., iii, 705; T.A., ii, 396.
². A.N., iii, 707. B.S., f. 174a, mentions Ṣāḥib ‘Aqlī also as one of the envoys.
³. According to Persian chronicles of Kashmir, Ya’qūb remained at the imperial court for 2 years. But A.N. and T.A. give the period of his stay as one year.
⁴. H.M., f. 185b.
Moreover, Prince Ya'qūb was with Akbar who, if displeased, might order his execution. Under these circumstances it would be better if he should himself proceed to Lahore, and by submitting to the Emperor save his country from an invasion. But the nobles and high officials warned him against following such a course, pointing out that, if he left Kashmir, he would never again get back his throne. At this time there was a general upsurge in the country, and everyone, rich and poor, old and young, was ready to fight against the invaders to the last man, and they appealed to Yūsuf Shāh to remain in Kashmir. But their appeals fell on deaf ears, for Yūsuf Shāh had lost the will to resist and had made up his mind to wait on Akbar.

While these discussions were in progress, Ya'qūb suddenly appeared in Srinagar. On account of the disrespect shown to him by Akbar, and the petty allowance of thirty or forty rupees which he had received for his expenses, he had been very unhappy at the Mughal court. Moreover, having despaired of Yūsuf Shāh's appearance at court, he had become alarmed for his own safety. He had, therefore, when the imperial camp had reached Khawāspūr, secretly escaped from the custody of his guards. He had proceeded towards Naushahra, but finding that it was in the hands of Ḥaidar Chak, he had skirted the town on his right, and taken another route to Rajaurī. He had then entered Kashmir and had reached Srinagar before Ḥakīm 'Alī, Yūsuf Shāh was very angry with Ya'qūb for having come away without the Emperor's permission and wanted to imprison him, but was dissuaded by his ministers.

Shortly after Yūsuf Shāh heard of the arrival of the Mughal envoys in Kashmir. He went to receive them at Khāmpūr, and gave

1. Ibid., f. 186a.
2. Ibid., f. 186b.
3. Akbar was angry with Yūsuf Shāh for not coming to court and so wrecked his anger on Ya'qūb by calling him wicked and mad. (See H.M., f. 186a).
5. H.M., ff. 186b-87a; also B.S., f. 173b. But B.S. says Ya'qūb escaped from Buhlūlpūr. The statement in A.N., iii, 707, that Ya'qūb escaped first and the envoys were sent afterwards, is not corroborated by other authorities.
them a warm welcome. He promised to accompany them, and send back Ya'qūb to the imperial court with his hands and feet bound. However, owing to the opposition from the public, the nobles, and the army his plans were checkmated. In fact, he was even threatened that if he attempted to leave Kashmīr, they would kill him and set up Ya'qūb in his place.

Hakīm ‘Alī and Baha’u’l-Dīn remained for two months in Śrīnagar, but did not succeed in their mission owing to the hostile attitude of the Kashmīrī people who would not let Yūsuf Shāh go with them. They, therefore, took their leave, and joined the imperial camp at Ḥasan Abdāl on December 13, 1585.

When Akbar heard of their report his anger was aroused, and on December 20, 1585, from the neighbourhood of Attock, he despatched an army of about 5,000 horse under Mīrzā Shāh Rukh, Rājā Bhagwān Dās, and Shāh Qulī Maḥram to invade Kashmīr, and deputed Ḥaidar Chak and Shaikh Ya'qūb Ṣarṭī to act as guides. The Mughal commanders wanted to undertake the invasion early in spring when the passes would be clear of snow. Moreover, they preferred the Bhimbhar route partly because it was easier, and partly because the chiefs along that route were favourably disposed towards the Mughals. Akbar was, however, opposed to any delay and ordered them to immediately march via Pakhlī, pointing out that since the Kashmīrīs did not expect any invasion from that direction at that time of the year, the passes would not be well-guarded. The Emperor's forecast proved to be correct, for, when the Mughal force advanced, it practically met with no resistance and easily entered Kashmīr.

1. Ibid., f. 187b; FIRISHTA, ii, 699 says that Yūsuf came as far as Thanna. But this seems wrong, for the nobles would not have allowed him to proceed so far.
3. Ibid., f. 188a.
5. A.N., iii, 714; also T.A., iii, 504. H.M., f. 187b is wrong in stating that Yūsuf dismissed Hakīm ‘Alī when he heard that Bhagwān Dās had been appointed to invade Kashmīr. Actually the appointment was made on Hakīm ‘Alī’s return.
6. A.N., iii, 715; T.A., ii, 398; M.T., ii, 360. H.M., f. 187b says that the Mughal troops numbered 50,000. But this is an exaggeration.
When this news reached Srinagar, the people came to Yusuf Shâh and reminded him of the sufferings which the Kasmîris had endured at the hands of the Kâshgharianians, and how his ancestors had delivered the country from their oppression. He should also, they urged, prepare to resist the enemy in the narrow defiles and passes. Yusuf Shâh ostensibly agreed with them, but in reality he had become convinced of the futility of resistance, and had resolved to surrender himself to the Mughals.¹

However, in order to conceal his plan, he made arrangements for the defence of the kingdom. He released Muḥammad Baṭ and 'Ālam Shēr Mâgre from prison and proceeded with the latter to Bârmûla, leaving the former in charge of the capital.² At Bârmûla he organised three armies. The advance-guard was placed under Ḥasan Malik and 'Ālam Shēr Khân; the right was commanded by Ya'qūb and Abūl-Maʿālī; and the left was under Bâbâ Ṭâlib Isfahānî³ and Ḥasan Baṭ, the brother of Muḥammad Baṭ. After making these appointments Yusuf Shâh proceeded to Koh Kuārmast.⁴

When the Mughals arrived at the pass of Būliāsa,⁵ the Kasmîris moved forward to check their advance. The Mughal forces, partly owing to the stiff resistance which was offered to them, and partly because of snow, rain, and scarcity of supplies, failed to make any progress.⁶ Râjā Bhagwân Dās therefore sent two of his agents with a letter to Yusuf Shâh.⁷ But they were seized by the Kasmîrī soldiers who wanted to kill them, but they were rescued by the army chiefs, who pointed out that according to the common usage the life of an envoy was sacred. The letter stated that although

---

¹ H.M., f. 188a; Šuka, pp. 400-1.
² B.S., f. 174b.
³ See A.A. (Blochmann), p. 676 and n. 3.
⁴ H.M., ff. 188a-b. Kuārmast is the last pass on the road to Srinagar, and is described by Murray as the Bârmûla Pass. (A.A. iii, 724n. 1).
⁵ Būliāsa or Peliāsa, formerly Bolyasaka, lies on the right bank of the Jehlam, about 50 miles away from Bârmûla. Jahângir called it Bhûlbâs (Tuzuk, ii, 131) and A.N., iii, 723, calls it Bûlyâs. See Stein, ii, 403, for the strategic importance of this pass.
⁶ H.M., f. 189a.
⁷ Ibid. (B.N.), f. 62a.
the Mughals had been defeated at present owing to snow and rain, yet another army would soon arrive, and then it would be impossible for the Kashmiri forces to continue resistance. Yusuf Shāh should, therefore, proceed with the Rājā to the Emperor’s presence. Yusuf Shāh held talks with the envoys the whole night, and finally entered into an understanding with them. Early next morning, under the pretext that he was going to inspect the troops, he left the Kuārmast Pass, and went to the village of Barzala. After cheering up the inhabitants and the soldiers there, he proceeded to Būliāsa where he inspected the army, and was told by the Mīr Bakhshī that it consisted of 15,000 horse, 25,000 foot and 7,000 musketeers. He then with a few horsemen escaped to the Mughal camp, which he joined on February 14, 1586.

Although the Kashmiris had been betrayed by their ruler, their spirit was not broken. In place of Yusuf Shāh they set up Ya’qūb as their Sultān and resumed the struggle against the invaders. The Mughals suffered great hardships on account of snow, cold, rain, and scarcity of food. Taking advantage of this Bābā Ṭālib Isfahānī, Muḥammad Salīm Kāshgharī, and other Kashmirī commanders inflicted great loss upon them. Realising the terrible state of his army and also affected by the news of Zain Khān’s defeat in the North-Western Frontier, Rājā Bhagwān Dās made peace overtures to Ya’qūb by sending Mīrzā Akbar Shāhī to him. Ya’qūb agreed to cease hostilities, but the final treaty was concluded by the Rājā with Yusuf Shāh. It was

2. *Ibid.*, f. 189b. H.M. and A.N. do not give the names of the envoys. But B.S. refers to one envoy as Mīrzā Qāsim, the grandson of Khwāja Ḥūjī.
3. It is in the Badgām Tahsil, Bārāmūla dist.
4. H.M., f. 189b; A.N., iii, 724. But A.N. wrongly says that it was Yusuf who sent an envoy to the Mughal camp expressing his desire to submit.
5. B.S., f. 176a. Fighting mostly took place in the pass of Būliāsa. Jahāngīr in his *Tuzuk*, ii, 132, says that it was in this pass that Ya’qūb fought against Bhagwān Dās. According to B.S., f. 177b, the Mughal camp was established in the village of Būliāsa.
6. B.S., f. 177a; H.M., ff. 199a-b; T.A., ii, 401. A.N., iii, 725, is incorrect in stating that “Kashmirīs came forward with entreaties and proposed peace.” See also M.T., ii, 363.
agreed that Yusuf Shah would retain his throne, but that the coins would be struck and the *khutba* recited in the name of the Emperor; that the mint, saffron cultivation, shawl manufacture, and game laws would be placed under the control of three imperial officers, Khwaja Mirak, Qalandar Beg, and Mullâ Mazhari; that the daughter of Mubârak Khân Gakkhar would be given in marriage to Prince Ya‘qūb; and lastly, that Yusuf Shah would be responsible for bringing Prince Ya‘qūb to the presence of the Emperor. Akbar did not approve of the treaty, but realising the conditions under which it had been concluded, he accepted it.

After the conclusion of peace the Mughal army withdrew from Kashmir, and on March 28, 1586, at Attock, Yusuf Shah was presented to Akbar by Râjâ Bhagwân Dâs. He was received with respect, but was imprisoned, and given in charge of Râm Dâs Kachwâhâ. This was a clear violation of the treaty according to which Yusuf Shah, after paying homage to the Emperor, was entitled to return to his country. Bhagwân Dâs was so much affected by this breach that he attempted suicide to vindicate his honour as a Râjpût. When Akbar reached Lahore, Yusuf Shah was placed in charge of Râjâ Todar Mal, and for two and a half years he remained in his custody. But when Râjâ Mân Singh returned from Kabul, the Emperor at his request released Yusuf Shah. He conferred on him a *manṣab* of 500 horse, a rank

2. B.S., f. 177a; A.N., iii, 725.
3. A.N., iii, 725 and n.2.
5. B.S., f. 177b.
6. According to M.T. ii, 363, Akbar did not accept the treaty. T.A., ii, 401 even says that the Emperor so much disapproved of the treaty that he did not allow the officers to appear before him. However, it seems that afterwards Akbar accepted the treaty. (A.N., iii, 725).
7. A.N., iii, 738; see also T.A., iii, 506. Smith, Akbar, p. 239, is incorrect in saying that Ya‘qūb also surrendered along with his father. Smith is sometimes wrong in his sequence of events.
9. B.S., f. 177b; M.T., ii, 364. But A.N., iii, 745, says he committed this in a fit of insanity. Smith, Akbar, p. 240 regards it as a correct explanation.
10. Mân Singh was replaced as governor of Kabul by Zain Khân and was appointed to the government of Bihâr.
carrying a salary ranging from 2,100 to 2,500 rupees a month, and sent him with Rājā Mān Singh to Bihār.¹

Of handsome appearance, an expert in the, science of music, fond of Persian and Kashmiri poetry, patron of poets, scholars and musicians, and himself a poet, Yūsuf Shāh was one of the most cultured rulers of the Sultanate period. Though not possessed of any personal valour, he displayed, when he first ascended the throne, promptness and energy in suppressing the revolt of his uncle Abdāl Chak. On being driven out of Kashmir, he again displayed enterprise, initiative, and resource in his attempts to recover the throne. After regaining the kingdom he tried to promote the welfare of his people. He prohibited the soldiers from taking corvée from the peasants, and, unlike his predecessors, he gave up the practice of exacting corvée and Zakāt from the hānjīs. He also abolished Jizya and taxes of an oppressive nature imposed on gardens, cattle, and artisans.² But despite all this he brought about his downfall through his own follies. Finding himself secure on the throne, he began to neglect the administration, spending more and more of his time over the wine cups and in the company of women and musicians. Moreover, he became so obsessed with the threat of a Mughal invasion that no amount of assurances of loyalty from his people could dispel the fear from his mind. But instead of adopting measures for the defence of the country, he was convinced that resistance was futile, and that only by a policy of submission could he save his kingdom. This was, however, a mistake, for he should have realised that Akbar was longing to annex Kashmir, and that once he was in his power he would lose both his freedom and his throne.

In exile, the lot of Yūsuf Shāh was very tragic. The allowance which he received from the Emperor, though enough to support a life of comfort, was not sufficient to maintain his dignity; and, being of a generous nature and accustomed to luxury, he found himself always short of money. Moreover, in the scorching heat of the plains of Bihār, he longed for the cool and bracing climate and the picturesque

1. Smith, Akbar, pp. 240-1; H.M., f. 191a. According to H.M. (B.N.), f. 82b Yūsuf received Rs. 100|- a day for his expenses.
2. H.M., f. 182b. Zakāt was not realised from the hānjīs probably because of their poverty.
sceneries of the Valley. In exile he missed the society of poets, scholars and musicians, but, above all, he pined for his beloved queen, Habba Khātūn. She was the daughter of a peasant of the village of Chandahār in the Vihi pargana. She had been unhappy with her first husband who was a drunkard and a debauchee and who ill-treated her. A poetess and a musician, possessed of a sweet voice, she captivated the heart of Yūsuf Shāh who fell in love with her and married her. 1 He built for her mountain resorts in Gulmarg, Sonamarg and other beautiful spots, which he was wont to visit with her.2 But now as a royal prisoner he knew he would never see her again. All this so much affected him that his mind gave way and he died on Wednesday, the 14th Zūl-Hijja, 1000/22nd September, 1592, after an illness of six days, and was buried in the pargana of Biswak.3

1. T.H., ii, f. 142b. It is strange that contemporary authorities like B.S. and H.M. do not mention Habba Khātūn at all. Our information about her is based on local tradition. But unfortunately all kinds of romantic tales are current about her in the Valley, so that it is difficult to separate fact from fiction.


3. A.A., ii, 121 (Niwal Kishore) has Biswak. A.S.B., 1885, p. 166, has also Biswak, and the place is still called by this name. But A.A., ii, 166 (English trans.) has Basok, while B.S. has Basang or Basank. I am extremely grateful to Professor Hasan 'Askari of Patna University for taking the trouble of visiting Biswak and obtaining information for me from the local people about the graves of Yusuf Shāh and Ya'qūb Shāh. Here is what he says:—

"Biswak is situated some 3 miles north-east of Islāmābād (Patna dist.). Adjacent to the village there is a mound which is said to have been a garh, although no historical information is available about it. The site has often yielded copper and gold coins in the course of minor diggings for domestic purposes. In one instance clay chukkas containing gold mohurs of Shāhjahan's reign are reported to have been found. There are two tombs of "Pir-Shāh Ya'qūb" and "Yusuf Shāh" respectively near this garh. The villagers know nothing about the antecedents of these two personages. At a short distance from Biswak there is a village called Kashmiri-chak, which is now completely deserted and in ruins. According to local tradition, however, the Muslims belonging to this village came from Kashmir, as is indicated by the name which the place bears. There is a mosque in this village near which the tomb of Yusuf Shāh is situated. Only a mound now remains which, some time ago, the peasants tried to level
with the ground in order to bring the land under cultivation. On finding, however, that it was a tomb, they, out of superstition, left it half demolished. If local tradition is passed together with the relevant historical information, it can definitely be established that these tombs are those of Yusuf Shāh, the ruler of Kashmir, and his son and successor, Ya'qūb Shāh. According to the Akbar-nāma and other chronicles Akbar defeated Yusuf Shāh and imprisoned him. He was released later and granted a jāgīr in the pargana of Biswak, where both he and his son Ya'qūb settled and died. The existence of a village named Kashmirichak with a Kashmirī Muslim population is also suggestive and significant. Authentic history and tradition thus corroborate each other, and there is no doubt that these tombs are those of Yusuf Shāh and Ya'qūb Shāh."
CHAPTER X

FALL OF THE SULTANATE

SINCE the treaty had been concluded with the Mughals by Yūsuf Shāh, who had fled the country and ceased to be the Sulṭān, Ya‘qūb Shāh and the Kashmirī nobles did not regard it as binding on them. And so when, after the Mughal withdrawal, Ya‘qūb Shāh returned to Srīnagar, he had the coins struck and the *khutba* recited in his own name. He however did not rule with tact, ability, and justice. He made the mistake of appointing ‘Alī Dar, who was incompetent and addicted to intoxicants, his prime minister.1 Ya‘qūb Shāh also became arrogant,2 treating the nobles with disrespect, and ignoring their advice. Moreover, having defeated the Mughals he was lulled into a false sense of security, and neglected the defence of the passes leading into Kashmir.3 But the greatest mistake which he made was that he adopted a hostile attitude towards the Sunnīs. He sent Mullā ‘Aīnī, whom he had given the title of Khān,4 to Qāżī Mūsā with the message to mention henceforth the name of ‘Alī in all public prayers. As the Qāżī refused to comply with it, Ya‘qūb Shāh sent for him and tried to argue with him. Qāżī Mūsā pointed out that rulers should not concern themselves with religious matters, but should devote their time and attention to the affairs of state. Furthermore, they should be tolerant, for intolerance leads to chaos and confusion in the kingdom. Ya‘qūb Shāh was greatly displeased by these insolent replies, but for the time being he spared Mūsā, contenting himself only with showering abuses on him.5

1. B.S., f. 178a.
2. A.N., iii, 762, says that Ya‘qūb became so arrogant as to adopt the title of Shāh Ismā‘īl. This he probably did in imitation of the founder of the Safavid dynasty.
5. H.M., ff. 192a-b; N.A., ff. 106b-107a. Śuka, p. 403 also refers to these religious discords.
Owing to Ya'qūb’s arrogance and religious fanaticism, some of the nobles like Shams Chak, Malik Ḥasan Chadura, ‘Ālam Shēr Māgre, and the Wazir, ‘Alī Dar, were driven into hostility against him, and they decided to proceed to Lahore to seek the help of Akbar. But when they reached Hirapūr, Ḥasan Malik suggested that, since the rainy season was about to commence, they should give up the idea of going to India, and, instead, march on Srinagar and occupy it as Ya'qūb was absent in the village of Phag. Ya'qūb, hearing of the plan, released Muhammad Baṭ, and appointed him Wazir in place of ‘Alī Dar, and on his advice immediately set out to the capital, which he reached before the rebels. The latter encamped at Zīlādakar, while Ya’qūb established himself in the field of ‘Īd-gāh. But after a week of desultory fighting Shaikh Ḥasan, son of Mīr Shamsu’d-Dīn, and Bābā Khalīl, who were the pīrs of Ya’qūb Shāh, brought about a settlement. The rebels were given the province of Kamrāj and they left for Sōpūr which was to be their seat. But on the way Shams Chak and ‘Ālam Shēr Māgre decided to put Bābā Khalīl and Shaikh Ḥasan, who were accompanying them, to death in revenge for Ya’qūb’s policy of intolerance towards the Sunnīs. But Ḥasan Malik intervened, and sent them back safely to Srinagar. When Ya’qūb heard that Shams Chak and ‘Ālam Shēr Māgre had made an attempt on the lives of the Shi‘i divines, he was furious. Moreover, he came to know that Shams Chak had destroyed the Sōpūr Bridge and was preparing for hostilities. He, therefore, set out from Srinagar with a large force, and having crossed the Jehlam near Sōpūr, he attacked the rebels and routed them. Shēr Māgre escaped to the hill of Kichhāmā, while ‘Alī Dar fled to Barbal. Shams Chak took refuge in Srinagar, but was captured and imprisoned.

After suppressing the rebellion, Ya’qūb once more began to press Qāzī Mūsā to include the name of ‘Alī in the prayers. But Mūsā was adamant, and refused to comply. Partly due to this refusal, and partly because Ya’qūb regarded Mūsā as being solely responsible for

1. H.M., f. 192a.  
2. Ibid., f. 193a.  
3. Ibid., B.S., f. 179a.  
5. Ibid., f. 194a. But B.S., f. 178a sq. gives a slightly different version of the conflict.  
6. H.M., ff. 194a-b; B.S., f. 180a.
the recent rising, he, contrary to the advice of his counsellors, ordered Mūsā's execution.¹ This was an extremely unwise act on his part, for it antagonised the Sunnīs and paved the way for the Mughal annexation of Kashmir.² Another mistake which he committed was that, on the advice of Mullā Ḥasan Aswad, he dismissed Muḥammad Baṭ, his prime minister, who was a capable man, and threw him into prison. Nāzuk Baṭ, who was appointed in his place, was not competent enough to solve the problems, both internal and external, which faced the country.³

Owing to Ya'qūb Shāh's intolerance and harshness, Bābā Dā'ūd Khākī with his followers went away to Multān, while a number of chiefs headed by Shaikh Ya'qūb Ṣarqī proceeded to the court of Akbar and requested him to invade Kashmir and annex it. They entered into the following agreement with the Emperor:—⁴

1. There shall be complete freedom of worship and no interference in religious affairs.

2. There shall be no interference with the purchase and sale of commodities, and the rates of cereals.

3. Kashmirīs shall not be made slaves.

4. Kashmirīs shall not be molested or oppressed; nor will they be required to do begār (corvée).

5. Those Kashmirī nobles who are a source of mischief shall not be associated with the administration of the country.

We have seen that Akbar did not approve of the treaty concluded by Rājā Bhagwān Dās with Yūsuf Shāh, but that he had accepted it is a matter of expediency. When, therefore, he learnt of the dissensions in Kashmir and was assured by Shaikh Ya'qūb Ṣarqī of the support of Kashmirī chiefs, he resolved upon its conquest. He first sent an army under Mīrzā Shāh Rukh, but as the latter did not prosecute the campaign effectively owing to his anxiety to return to India, he was relieved of the command,⁵ and in his place Mīr Qāsim Khān Mīr Baḥr⁶ was appointed along with Fath Khān and Mīrzā 'Alī

1. Ibid., f. 195a.
2. Ibid.
3. B.S., f. 181b.
5. A.N., iii, 747.
6. For his career, see A.A. (Blochmann), pp. 412-3.
Akbar Shāhī, while Ya‘qūb Šarīf and Haidar Chak were deputed to act as their guides and to win over the Kashmirīs to the side of the Mughals. Qāsim Khān set out from Lahore on June 28, 1586, and passed through the defile of Bhimbhar on the 1st of September, 1586. When he reached Rajaurī, Bahārām Nāyak, Ismā‘īl Nāyak, and Shanki Chādura, who were entrusted with the defence of the passes leading into Kashmir, came and submitted, and assured him of the support of the Kashmirī nobles.

Learning of the Mughal invasion, Ya‘qūb Shāh marched towards Hirapūr to repel it. But on all sides he saw nothing else but defection. He had sent a force under Bahādur Khān Chak and Naurang Khān Chak, but Bahādur Chak imprisoned Naurang Chak and proceeded to join the Mughals. He was, however, met by Zafar Khān Nāyak who rescued Naurang Chak; but Bahādur Chak succeeded in going over to the Mughals at Karanbal. Since there were other defections besides, Yusuf Khān, Aiba Khān, and Sayyid Mubārak found it impossible to check the Mughal advance, and returned to join Ya‘qūb Shāh at Hirapūr. Ya‘qūb was so disheartened by these developments that he decided to retire to Kishtwār. By the time he reached the pargana of Bring only a few of his followers had remained with him.

Qāsim Khān felt encouraged by these desertions. Moreover he was assured by Ya‘qūb Šarīf that many other chiefs too were waiting

1. A.N., iii, 747; also B.S., f. 182a.
2. B.S., f. 182a.
3. A.N., iii, 752; also B.S., f. 184b; and M.T., ii, 364-65. The difference between the dates of A.N. and M.T. is only of a few days. B.S. also says that Qāsim occupied Srinagar in 994/1586. But according to A.N. (Blochmann) p. 412, and T.A., ii, 403, Qāsim Khān left Lahore in early Sha‘bān 994/1st half of July 1587.
4. A.N., iii, 764.
5. Abūl-Fażl’s Ėrwarah is the village of Chādura, the home of Haidar Malik.
6. A.N., iii, 764; B.S., f. 182b; see also Šuka, pp. 405-6.
7. H.M., f. 195b. According to H.M. (B.N.), f. 64a, only 30 or 40 horsemen remained with Ya‘qūb by the time he reached Hirapūr.
9. B.S., f. 182b. Aiba Khān, son of Abdāl Khān, is the same person as Abiya Khān of A.N., iii, 768.
10. H.M., f. 183b. Bring is in the Anantnāg dist.
to join him at Hastivanj. He therefore sent a force under Ya'qūb Šarfī and Jai Tawāchībashī, with instructions to effect a junction with them. During their march the Mughals suffered great privations on account of snow and cold, and then when they reached Hastivanj, they discovered to their surprise, instead of friendly Kashmirī nobles, a hostile force determined to check their advance. What had happened is that the Kashmirī chiefs like Ḥusain Khān, Shams Ganāī and others, having felt ashamed for causing the defeat and flight of Ya'qūb, had changed their minds and decided not to submit to the Mughals. Accordingly they had marched to Hastivanj to check their advance. They defeated the Mughals and took Ya'qūb Šarfī and Jai Tawāchībashī prisoners. But thinking that their victory had been decisive, they did not follow it up; and, instead of making arrangements for the defence of the passes, they returned to Hirapūr. Here they enthroned Ḥusain Khān Chak, the son of Aiba Khān, in place of Ya'qūb Shāh.

Meanwhile Shams Chak, who had been imprisoned by Ya'qūb, taking advantage of the chaos escaped from prison, and set out towards Kamrāj. But when he reached Chādura he was met by Malik Ḥasan who advised him to proceed towards Hirapūr, and fight the Mughals. He accepted the advice, and with Malik Ḥasan marched to Hirapūr. On arriving there, he, with the consent of the nobles, declared himself Sultān, and deposed Ḥusain Khān, who had been raised to the throne only four days before.

Owing to their internal dissensions the Kashmirīs had not been

1. See p. 24, supra, for Hastivanj.
2. A.N., iii, 766-7; H.M., 196a.
3. B.S., f. 183b; H.M., f. 196b. According to A.N., iii, 767 Ya'qūb was wounded but was saved by his friends. Jai was, however, taken prisoner. This battle took place after Ya'qūb's departure for Kishtwār, and not before as A.N. says. A.N. is not always correct in its sequence of events.
4. H.M., f. 196b. Ḥusain Shāh was a cousin of Ya'qūb Shāh. (H.M. (B.N.) f. 64a).
5. Ya'qūb Shāh finding his affairs in chaos had released Shams Chak and Muḥammad Bat, his former Wazīr, so that they might help him. But pressed by his counsellors, Ya'qūb had again imprisoned them. However, taking advantage of the chaos, they now managed to escape. (A.N., iii, 768).
able to direct their attention to the enemy. It was only when the latter, having crossed the Karanbal hill, had arrived at the pass of Hastivanj that Shams Chak advanced to offer them battle.\(^1\) On October 10, 1586, he had an engagement with their advance-guard. As the Kashmiris were on a height occupying an advantageous position, they repulsed the Mughals by discharging muskets and rolling down heavy stones, Qāsim Khān, thereupon, himself went forward to meet the Kashmiris. The latter put up a stiff resistance, but after their commanders, Muḥammad Qāsim Khān Nāyak, his son Zafar Khān Nāyak, and Muḥammad Chak, the son of Shams Chak, were killed they became demoralised and fled, pursued by the Mughals. Yādgār Ḥusain, on instructions from Qāsim Khān, at once advanced to occupy Srīnagar. He entered it on October 14, without meeting any resistance, and had the khutba read in the name of Emperor. The next day Qāsim Khān himself arrived at the capital.\(^2\)

We have seen that Yaʿqūb Shāh, betrayed by his supporters, had fled to Kishṭwār. But as Rājā Bahādur Singh of Kishṭwār, who was his father-in-law, criticised him for his cowardice in having run away without fighting the Mughals, Yaʿqūb Shāh returned to the Valley with a small following. He was joined by Yūsuf Khān, Ibrāhīm Khān, and Malik Ḥasan.\(^3\) Many other persons also, owing to the oppressive rule of Qāsim Khān, rallied to Yaʿqūb.\(^4\) His force swelled to 8,000 horse, and he made Chandrakot\(^5\) his headquarters. Shams Chak, on the other hand, established himself at Sōpūr. He had an army of 3,000 horse and 7,000 foot, and was supported by Ḥusain Khān and Abūl-Maʿālī. From Chandrakot and Sōpūr the Kashmiris set out in parties to attack the Mughals. They avoided pitched battles and instead harassed them by making surprise attacks, cutting down stragglers, and

\(^{1.}\) B.S., f. 184a wrongly states that Shams Chak proceeded to the top of the Karanbal hill to fight the Mughals, and that when he was defeated the Mughals encamped at Hastivanj.

\(^{2.}\) A.N., iii, 769-70; H.M., f. 198a; also H.M. (B.N.), f. 64a.

\(^{3.}\) H.M., f. 198b.

\(^{4.}\) A.N., iii, 796.

\(^{5.}\) It is an important village in the Bārāmūla Taḥṣīl, about 29 miles north-west of Srīnagar.
intercepting their supplies. These tactics were so successful that it became impossible for the Mughals to leave the city.  

After a month and a half, during which period the Mughals had been subjected to continuous harassment, Qāsim Khān decided to attack Ya'qūb. But on approaching his camp he was informed that Ya'qūb had proceeded to make an attack on the city. Qāsim Khān, therefore, turned back and sent a force in advance under Muḥammad ‘Alī. Ya'qūb Shāh, who lay in wait for him near a hill in Vular, south-east of Srīnafar, attacked him and gained a victory. Encouraged by this success, he made a night attack on the western side of the town. Many houses were set on fire, including the palace of Yūsuf Shāh in which Qāsim Khān was residing. As a result he had to take refuge in the garden of Malik Muḥammad Nājī. From there he issued instructions to organise resistance, and ordered the execution of Ḥaider Chak lest he should escape and join Ya'qūb. When the Kashmīrīs heard the news of Ḥaider Chak’s death they were roused to fury, and determined themselves to take their revenge. They attacked the Mughals in every nook and corner of the city and killed many of them. And they would have gained the day had it not been for an act of indiscretion committed by Ya'qūb. Elated with initial success he ordered the execution of Ḥusain Khān, who had been set up as ruler at Hirapūr, and of his supporters. This news filled the troops of Ya'qūb Shāh with consternation, and many of them retired from the battle-field, thus weakening his position. Meanwhile the Mughals, having received reinforcements under Muḥammad Khān, the son of Fath Khān Faujdār, from across the Jehlam, took the offensive. Ya'qūb's followers were unable to withstand the attack, and they fled, pursued by ‘Alī Akbar Shāhī.

2. A.N., iii, 786-7.
3. B.S., f. 186a; Śuka, p. 409, H.M., f. 199b says that Ḥaider Chak was put to death by his guards. But it seems unlikely that the execution should have taken place without Qāsim’s orders.
4. B.S., 186a; A.N., iii, 776.
5. H.M., f. 199b.
6. A.N., iii, 776.
This victory strengthened the morale of the Mughals, and Qāsim Khān began to send scouring parties to reduce the various parts of Kashmir. At the same time he sent a force under Shaikh Daulat Bakhtiyār against Shams Chak who was at Sōpur. When the Mughals reached Dānāwarī, Shams Chak with Sayyid Ḥasan Baihaqī and Shams Dūnī made a night attack on them, but were defeated and withdrew to Sōpur. From there, on account of winter, they left for the hills of Karnāv.1 Other Kashmirī chiefs also dispersed to the hills, while Yaʿqūb Shāh retired to Kishtwār.2 But Yūsuf Khān Khān-i-Khānān, Ḥusain Khān, and Muḥammad Baṭ, perceiving the futility of resistance, made overtures to Qāsim Khān; and, on being assured of personal safety, they submitted on December 9, 1586. They were sent to Lahore with Bābā Khalīl, Bābā Mehdi, and Sayyid Muḥārak, who were suspected of inciting the Kashmirīs against the Mughals, and presented to the Emperor on March 2, 1587.3

For two months during the winter fighting ceased. But at the approach of spring Yaʿqūb Shāh returned from Kishtwār, and established himself at the foot of a hill in the Vular pargana,4 while Shams Chak returned from Karnāv to Sōpur.5 For some time there were daily skirmishes between the Mughals and the Kashmirīs, but they did not lead to any decisive result. Eventually, early in 1588, Qāsim Khān despatched a force under Mīrzādā ʿAlī Khān and Sayyid ʿAbdu’llāh Khān,6 with Shēr Khān Māgre to act as a guide. They met Yaʿqūb at Gusu.7 The Mughals, being handicapped by a heavy fall of snow, the narrowness of the defile, and the slipperiness of the road, were defeated. Mīrzā ʿAlī Khān was killed with 300 of his men.

1. H.M., f. 200a; also B.S., ff. 187a sqq.
2. B.S., f. 188a.
3. B.S., ff. 188a-b; A.N., ill, 787; Sūka, p. 411. B.S. says that Sayyid Mubārak was leading a retired life at this time.
4. It was a pargana comprising a long narrow valley which stretches from the north side of the Jehlam, between Avantīpūr and Bībēhāra. Its ancient name was Holada. (Stein, ii, 460; Bates, Kashmir Gazetteer, p. 405).
5. B.S., f. 189a; H.M., f. 200b.
6. These two commanders had been sent by Akbar to the aid of Qāsim Khān. (A.N., ill, 788).
7. It is a village in the Pulwāna Tahsil (Avantīpūr).
while the rest were either taken prisoners or escaped to Qāsim Khān. Encouraged by this victory, Ya‘qūb moved to the Takht-i-Sulaimān and encamped there. Shams Chak was also roused to action, and occupied the fort of Hānjik, four miles west of Srinagar.

The next day Qāsim Khān himself advanced to attack Ya‘qūb, and encountered him at the foot of the Takht-i-Sulaimān. The Mughals would have again suffered defeat, but fortunately for them, Naurang Chak, Ya‘qūb Shāh’s commander-in-chief, was killed by an arrow which pierced his eye. This demoralised the Kashmiris and led to their rout.

In spite of this defeat Ya‘qūb was not disheartened. He made overtures to Shams Chak to forget the past and unite against the common enemy. Since Shams Chak responded favourably, Ya‘qūb, accompanied by Ḥasan Malik, joined him in the fort of Hānjik. The two chiefs then set out to attack the Mughals whom they encountered near Hānjik. The Mughals were completely routed and lost 1,500 men. They were pursued by Ḥasan Malik up to the field of Zählidarīk in Srinagar.

The victory achieved by the Kashmiris enabled Ya‘qūb and Shams to establish themselves on the Khōr-i-Mārān. The Mughals, on the other hand, were reduced to a sad plight. For two months they dared not come out of the city, being subjected to continuous harassment. The Kashmiris grew even so bold as to attack the enemy in the town, and to carry away their horses and supplies. This state of affairs made Qāsim Khān very despondent, and so he requested the Emperor for his recall. Akbar, accordingly, ordered Yūsuf Khān Rizvī7 to proceed to Kashmir with Mullā Tālib Isfahānī, Bābā Khalīl and Muḥammad Baṭ, who were to act as guides and to win over the

2. H.M., f. 201a.
3. Ibid., f. 201a.
4. Ibid., ff. 201b-202a.
5. Ibid., ff. 202b-3a.
6. Ibid., f. 203b.
7. He was a Sayyid of Mashhad. For details of his life, see A.A. (Blochmann), pp. 369 sqq.
guardsians of the passes. Yūsuf Rizvī set out from Lahore in about the middle of 1588.1

When Ya‘qūb Shāh heard that a strong army was coming to reinforce Qāsim Khān, he deputed Shams Chak’s brother Lohar Chak to prevent them from entering Kashmir.2 Ḥasan Malik, however, opposed the appointment on the ground that Lohar Chak, being a friend of Bābā Khalīl, would go over to the Mughals, and suggested that Shams Chak be sent against Yūsuf Rizvī, while Ya‘qūb himself should stay behind to blockade Qāsim Khān, who was sure to perish owing to the want of supplies. But his advice was not followed; and, as Ḥasan Malik had predicted, Lohar Chak, instead of intercepting the Mughal force, joined it along with Bahrām Nayak. This news spread consternation among the Kashmirī troops in Hānjik, and when they heard of the arrival of Yūsuf Rizvī at Hirapūr, many of their chiefs deserted and submitted to him.3 The Kashmirī forces thus completely disintegrated. Ya‘qūb Shāh in disgust went away to Kishtwār, while Shams Chak retired to the Bring pargana.4

Yūsuf Rizvī adopted a policy of conciliation and won over many chiefs. He then sent a force under Sayyid Bahā’u’d-Dīn and Muḥammad Bāṭ against Shams Chak. But the latter made a night attack on them from the village of Trigām and obtained much plunder. At dawn, however, he suffered a crushing defeat at the hands of the Mughals and had to retire to the hills of Kamrāj.5 Meanwhile, Ya‘qūb Shāh had returned from Kishtwār and encamped at Panjyārī in Dachūn Khōvur. Yūsuf Rizvī, thereupon, sent a force under Muḥammad Bāṭ

1. A.N., iii, 798; H.M., f. 203b. Sayyid Mubārak was also asked to accompany them in order to help in the general pacification of the country. But as he refused to go, Akbar became angry and sent him as a prisoner to Shahbūz Khān Kambū in Bengal. After a year when Shahbūz Khān was proceeding to Lahore to pay his respects to the Emperor and had reached Firūzābād, Sayyid Mubārak, who was with him, was taken ill and died. (See B.S., f. 190a).
2. H.M., f. 203b.
3. Ibid., ff. 203b-4a.
4. A.N., iii, 798; B.S., f. 191a.
5. A.N., iii, 798-99; also B.S., ff. 191a-b. But B.S. says Shams Chak retired to the Bring pargana.
and Ḥājī Mīrākī against him. The Mughal commanders sent a messenger to persuade Yaʾqūb to submit. But Yaʾqūb, on the advice of Abūʾl-Maʾālī, rejected these overtures, and determined to fight the enemy and die a hero's death. He accordingly attacked the Mughals, but although he obtained a victory over the advance-guard led by Muḥammad Mīr, the battle was indecisive, as hostilities had to be suspended on account of heavy rains. After this Yaʾqūb Shāh withdrew to the pargana of Vular to reorganise his army. But he found that treachery was rife in his camp, for his troops were going over to the Mughals. That is why when Muḥammad Baṭ and Muḥammad Mīr advanced to attack him, he escaped to Kishtwār without offering any resistance.¹ But Abūʾl-Maʾālī, who tried to put up a fight, was taken prisoner in the village of Chrār.² These unexpected developments convinced Shams Chak that any further resistance to the Mughals was futile, and so through the mediation of Sayyid Bahāʾuʾd-Dīn he surrendered. Shortly after he was sent to the Emperor.³ The submission of Shams Chak greatly disheartened Yaʾqūb Shāh. And so when Akbar arrived in Kashmir early in June, 1588, he too decided to give up the struggle and submit. Accordingly, he returned from Kishtwār, and, towards the end of July, did personal homage to the Emperor,⁴ who sent him with Ḥasan Bēg Turkmān to Rājā Mān Singh at Rohtās. On the way Yaʾqūb and his followers planned that his brother Ibrāḥīm should assassinate Ḥasan Bēg and then all should escape. But the plan miscarried, for when Ḥasan Bēg, was attacked by Ibrāḥīm, the Mughal guard came to his rescue and killed Ibrāḥīm. Yaʾqūb Shāh, having repented for his part in the affair, was forgiven by Ḥasan Bēg and was conducted safely to his father at Jaunpūr. From there, after taking a letter of guarantee from Yūsuf Shāh, Ḥasan Bēg sent Yaʾqūb Shāh to Rājā Mān Singh at Rohtās.⁵ Here he was kept virtually a

1. B.S., ff. 192a-93b.
2. Ibid., f. 194a.
3. B.S., ff. 194b-95a; A.N., iii, 799. Shams Chak subsequently died at Burhānpūr in the Deccan. (B.S., f. 205b).
4. A.N., iii, 846; B.S., f. 196a; H.M., f. 204b; also Šuka, p. 418. But M.T., ii, 365, and T.A., ii, 404, say that Yaʾqūb submitted to Qāsim Khān. This is incorrect, for it was not the latter but Yūsuf Rīzvī who was in command in Kashmir at this time.
5. B.S., ff. 199b-200a.
To face page 192
prisoner, for it was thought that he might again make an attempt to escape. But when Yūsuf Shāh died, Mān Singh transferred his rank to Yaʿqūb, and allowed him to proceed to his jāgīr. Before leaving Rohtās, Yaʿqūb Shāh went to bid farewell to Qāsim Khān, who claimed to be the son of Yūsuf Shāh. He ate the poisoned betel leaves that were offered to him by Qāsim Khān. By the time he reached Bēhīrā his condition grew worse, and he died in the month of Muḥarram 1001/October 1593. His body was carried by Abūʾl-Maʿālī to Biswak, and buried there near the grave of his father Yūsuf Shāh.2


2. B.S., ff. 201a-202b; see also p. 180 f.n. 3 supra. Sūfī, i, 236-7, is wrong in saying that Yaʿqūb was buried in Kīshtwār.
CHAPTER XI

THE ADMINISTRATIVE SYSTEM

The Central Government

In the absence of any treatise on administration, and with only a few stray references in the chronicles, it is difficult to present a comprehensive picture of how the Valley was governed during the Sultanate period. We can, at best, make out only a general outline, without any details.

From the little evidence that is at our disposal, it appears that Shāh Mīr and his immediate successors did not replace the governmental organisation of the Hindu kings. What they did was to infuse vigour and efficiency into the administration, and in this way tried to protect the peasants from rapacious officials, promote agriculture, suppress refractory chiefs, and establish law and order. From the time of Sulṭān Sikandar, however, under the influence of Persians and Turks, the tendency was to model the administration on the system prevalent in other countries under Muslim rule. The result was that new institutions began to be imported and designations of the old ones to be changed. However, although minor innovations continued to be introduced till the end of the Sultanate, the main lines of administrative development seem to have been completed during the reign of Sulṭān Zainu’l-‘Ābidīn.

The Sulṭān

The Sulṭān of Kashmir, like his predecessors, was an autocrat. He was the supreme executive, legislative and judicial authority in his kingdom. He could make laws and interpret the Shari‘a. He was his own commander-in-chief, and led the campaigns either personally or appointed other commanders in his place. He was the highest court of appeal, and had the power of life and death over his subjects.

The Sulṭān had a council consisting of his ministers and high
officials whom he consulted on all matters relating to administration, foreign policy, and war and peace. Although the ultimate decision rested with him, yet, since the council was composed of members drawn from the leading landowning families, who were very powerful, it prevented his rule from turning into despotism. But otherwise the rule of the council was not directed towards the promotion of the good of the country. When the Sultan was weak, the real power was in the hands of the nobles who were members of this council and who set up or pulled down rulers, declared war or made peace, and even parcelled out the kingdom among themselves. The great authority which they wielded, proved disastrous to the country, for it not only prevented the establishment of a strong, centralised government, but it also led to the formation of cliques, to constant scramble for power, and to civil wars and rebellions. It was a repetition of the conditions which had existed under the Lohara dynasty.

In ordinary matters involving the Shari'a the Sultan consulted the Shaikhu'l-Islam. But when some serious question of conscience was involved, he convened a council of all the leading jurists of the kingdom and sought their advice. This was done by Mirza Haider when he banned the Nurbakhshiya Order and put to death many of its leaders. Similarly, it was after consulting the 'Ulamā that Husain Shah Chak ordered the execution of Yusuf and, later, of Qāżī Gānātī and Qāżī Almās.

Symbols of Sovereignty

Apart from these powers, the Sultan also enjoyed certain special prerogatives to distinguish him from the nobles and his other subjects. These prerogatives or symbols were necessary to maintain his dignity and inspire awe and fear in the hearts of his people.

(a) Titles: All the rulers of the Shah Mir and Chak dynasties adopted the title of Sultan. Other common titles were Shāh, Pādshāh, and Sulṭānu'l-Ā'zam. But in addition, each ruler also assumed special titles. Thus Zainu'l-Ābidin called himself Nā'ib-i-Amīru'l-Mū'minīn, and Ghāzi Chak as Muḥammad Humāyūn. Sultan Ḥusain

1. Jinnir., p. 86.
2. See p. 137 supra.
Shāh Chak took the title of Naṣīru’d-Dīn Pādshāh Ghāzī, and the same title was assumed by Yūsuf Shāh. But ‘Alī Shāh called himself Zahiru’d-Dīn Muḥammad ‘Alī Pādshāh. But Ya’qūb Shāh assumed the title of Ismā’īl Shāh.\(^1\) Evidently the Chak rulers had adopted these titles in imitation of the Mughal Emperors of India and the Ṣafavī Shāhs of Persia.

(b) Khutba and Sikka: At first it was only the prerogative of the Caliph to have his name recited in the khutba or sermon before the Friday prayers, and any attempt to introduce other names was regarded by the jurists as bid‘a (innovation). But from the end of the third century Hijra, it became a common practice of the local rulers to have their names also inserted side by side with the name of the Caliph.\(^2\) After the collapse of the Caliphate at Baghdād, however, although the Muslim rulers in general strictly enforced the insertion of their own names in the khutba, they gave up the custom of putting in the names of the puppet Abbasid Caliphs of Cairo.\(^3\) We do not know in what relation the Sultān of Kashmir stood with the Egyptian Caliphs, for beyond a reference to an exchange of embassies between Zainu’l-ʿĀbidīn and the ruler of Egypt the chronicles do not throw any light on this matter. But there is sufficient evidence to show that in Kashmir, as in other countries under Muslim rule, the name of the reigning monarch was recited in the khutba, for the Kashmir Sultāns regarded it as an important symbol of authority;\(^4\) and it was only three times during the Sultanate period, that they had to surrender it.\(^5\) Another exclusive privilege of the Sultān was the right to issue money bearing his name and titles.\(^6\) Although the Sultāns allowed the names of their predecessors or of the great saints to be inscribed on the coins, they never gave up the right to strike coins except when they had to surrender their sovereign powers. None of the coins of this period bear the name of a Caliph.

---

1. See Appendix B for the titles of the Sultāns.
2. Siddiqi, Caliphate and Kingship in Medieval Persia, pp. 34, 39 sq.
5. See pp. 129, 142, 161, supra.
(c) **Crown and Throne**: To sit on the throne\(^1\) and wear the Tāj (crown) was the exclusive privilege of the Sultān; and whenever he abdicated, he handed over the crown to his successor.\(^2\) Thus when Yūsuf Shāh was compelled to give up his throne, he sent the Tāj to Sayyid Mubārak who was declared by the nobles as Sultān.\(^3\) Similarly, when Ghāzī Chak wanted to assume royal powers, the Tāj was removed from the head of Ḥabīb Shāh and placed on that of Ghāzī who took his seat on the throne.\(^4\)

(d) **Chatr and Chaurī**: The Chatr (umbrella) and the Chaurī (flywhiskers) could not be used by any one except the Sultān. These had been the insignia of sovereignty under the Hindu kings and were adopted by the Sultāns.\(^5\)

(e) **Khil‘at**: The right of bestowing robes of honour on nobles, officials and tributaries was reserved for the Sultān. It was an old Persian custom which had been borrowed by the Abbasid Caliphs.\(^6\) Later it had spread to other countries. Other insignia of royalty in Kashmir were the Treasury,\(^7\) the Royal Stable\(^8\) and the Standard.\(^9\) The Chariot had been an emblem of royalty under the Hindu rulers,\(^10\) but it does not seem to have had any significance during the Sultanate period.

**The Wazīr**

Under the early Shāh Mīr rulers the chief minister was called by the old name of Sarvādhikāra.\(^11\) It was probably in the reign of Zainu’l-‘Ābidīn that he began to be designated as Wazīr, and by the

2. B.S., ff. 132b, 140a.
4. N.A., f. 76b; N.K., f. 36b.
6. The first Muslim ruler to have started the practice of giving away khil‘ats was Ḥārūn ar-Rashīd. (Dozy, *Noms des Vetements chez les Arabes*, p. 14).
7. See p. 80, supra.
8. Śriv., p. 173; Munich MS., f. 77a; H.M., f. 152b.
11. Stein, BK. v, No. 214; BK. vi, No. 199 and n.
time of Ḥasan Shāh and Muḥammad Shāh the new title was in full
vogue. The Wazīr was the head of the civil administration and the
highest official in the state. He was the constant adviser of the ruler,
and enjoyed his utmost confidence. His powers were great, and
therefore upon his ability and wisdom depended the welfare of the
people and the stability of the kingdom. Owing to the great importance
and prestige of the office, there was a keen competition for it among
the nobles. But this aroused jealousies and rivalries which often led
to armed conflicts. Since there was no separation of powers, the Wazīrs
were often called upon to lead the campaigns. In the reign of Sultān
Sikandar, for example, Sūhabhaṭṭa was not only the head of the civil
administration, but also of the army. This was, however, not always
the case. Thus under Shihābu’d-Dīn while the Wizārat and Finance
were placed in charge of Udayaṣṛī, the command of the army was
entrusted to Candra Ḍāmara and Laula. During the period of
decline of the Shāh Mīrs the Wazīrs were invariably military leaders.
In fact their ascendancy in the state was due to their military prowess.
They were so powerful that they reduced the Sultāns to the status of
puppets and themselves became de facto rulers, presiding over the
highest courts of appeal in company with the Shari’ā magistrates, conferring jāgīrs upon the nobles, appointing or dismissing oflicers,
and declaring war or concluding peace. In the end the Chaks, who
acted as Wazīrs of the Shāh Mīrs, found themselves sufficiently strong
to depose the Shāh Mīr Sultān and assume sovereign powers. In lieu
of their services the Wazīrs were assigned big jāgīrs. But it is not
known if in addition to this they also received any salary.

Diwān-i-Kul

Next to the Wazīr, the Diwān-i-Kul was the most important officer
in the kingdom. But this office does not seem to have existed under
the early Shāh Mīrs; it was introduced by Fath Shāh who was anxious

1. S.A., p. 40. But Śrīvara calls the chief minister as Saciva. (Śrīv., BK. 3,
   No. 23).
2. B.S., f. 19a. Under Ḥasan Shāh, Malik Ahmad was in charge of the civil
   administration, and Tāzf Baṭ was the commander-in-chief (Śrīv., p. 238).
3. H.M., f. 131b; B.S., ff. 81b-82a.
to reduce the power of the Wazîr. The latter retained the military, executive and judicial functions, but the power to control the finances was taken away from him and placed in the hands of the Dîwân-i-Kul. This separation of powers, however, did not serve any purpose for the Wazîrs remained as powerful as before. Nothing is known of the history of the Dîwân-i-Kul under the Chaks.

**Ministry of Religious Affairs**

The Shaikhu'l-Islâm was the head of the ecclesiastical department of the state. It was during the reign of Sultan Sikandar that this office was for the first time established in Kashmir. The Shaikhu'l-Islâm was the representative of the 'Ulamā, and his duty was to see that the Shari'ā law was enforced. Under the circumstance only a person distinguished for his learning and piety was appointed to this office. The Shaikhu'l-Islâm performed the coronation ceremony, and was the constant adviser of the Sultan on legal and religious matters. Sometimes he also issued decrees on political questions, and these had great weight. Thus when, in 1532, Mîrzâ Ḥaidar invaded Kashmir and his soldiers began to devastate the Valley, the Shaikhu'l-Islâm issued a decree that to fight the invaders and to kill them was a righteous act, and that if any Kashmiri lost his life while resisting the enemy, he would be a martyr. The effect of this pronouncement was that the Kashmiri nobles were roused from their lethargy and began to organise strong resistance to the Mughals.

Besides being an adviser to the Sultan, the Shaikhu'l-Islâm was also in charge of the waqifs for charitable and educational purposes. From the income of these endowments schools were run, and stipends were given to deserving students, while strangers in the country were provided with food and accommodation until they were able to find

1. Munich MS., ff. 82b-83a; T.A., iii, 457-8.
2. Mu'înu'd-Dîn Miskîn, Ta'rikh-i-Kabîr, p. 289, says that Mullā Aḥmad ʻAllîma, who came to Kashmir from Turkistān with Bulbul Shâh, was the first person in Kashmir to hold the office of Shaikhu'l-Islâm under Shamsu'd-Dîn I. But this is not corroborated by any reliable authority. Besides, it seems unlikely for such an institution to have been introduced at such an early date.
some employment. Under the Chaks the duties of the *Shaikhul-Islām* were taken over by the *Qāzi* of Srinagar, also known as *Qāzi‘l-Quzāt*.

**Administration of Justice**

The *Qāzi* was the highest judicial authority in the state. His office was introduced into Kashmir by Sultān Sikandar, probably at the same time as that of the *Shaikhul-Islām*. And the first *Qāzi* whose name is mentioned in the chronicles was Sayyid Ḥasan Shīrāzī, who was appointed as *Qāzi* of Srinagar by Sikandar. During the Chak period the prestige and powers of the *Qāzi* greatly increased, for he was not only the head of the judicial department but also of the ecclesiastical department. He led the prayers, acted as the chief judge, looked after the charitable and educational endowments, and gave advice to the Sultān on religious matters. He was assisted by a *Muftī*, whose duty was to give rulings according to the Hanafite law. Another officer under the *Qāzi* was known as *Mir ‘Adl* who performed semi-magisterial functions. The parties, before going to the *Qāzi*, approached the *Mir ‘Adl*, who drew up the case, and if it was not a complicated one and the parties agreed, he himself settled the dispute.

Justice was also administered by the Sultān as well as by the *Wazīr*. The former acted both as a court of first instance and a court of appeal, trying civil as well as criminal cases. But there were no fixed regulations for appeal. Justice was dispensed with by the Sultān sitting in the *Diwan-Khāna* in the open durbar every day. Ḥasan Shāh Chak, however, had fixed Monday as the day of the week when he attended court with the *Qāzi* and *Mir ‘Adl*. But the other Sultāns had no fixed days for holding court; they were accessible to the people on every day of the week. They dealt out justice impartially, but the

1. B.S. f. 34b; H.M., f. 119b.
2. W.K., ff. 52a, 60a.
3. B.S., f. 31b.
4. T.A., iii, 495. On one occasion, under Ḥusain Shāh, Shāfi‘ite law was also applied (See p 156, supra). Muftīs were killed during Ḥusain Shāh’s reign for giving a wrong *fatwa*.
punishments which they inflicted upon the criminals were not always according to the Shari’ā. Zainu’l-‘Abidin, for example, did not favour either the execution of thieves and robbers or the mutilation of their limbs. Instead he made them work on public buildings.¹ Later under his successors capital punishment was re-introduced. For those who were guilty of treason the penalty was prison, death, or mutilation. The last form of punishment was introduced by Ghāzī Shāh Chak, but later ‘Alī Shāh abolished it.²

The Royal Stable

This was an important department. Rival claimants to the throne always tried to seize the horses first. This was because, the cavalry being the most important arm of the army, it was felt that once the royal horses were taken possession of, victory would be easy. Thus we find that Ḥājī Khān, in making his bid for the throne on the eve of his father’s death, first seized the Royal Stable.³ As a result, Adham Khān despaired of success and fled to India. Similarly, to overthrow Daulat Chak, Ghāzī Chak had to seize the royal horses.⁴ During the Hindu times the office was called Mahāśvaśālā (office of the Chief Master of Horse),⁵ but it is not known as to what his designation was under the Sultāns. Whether he was called Akhūrbek,⁶ as under the Delhi Sultāns, the chronicles give us no indication.

Mir Bakhshi

The Mir Bakhshi was the head of the military department, and was therefore an important officer. He kept the register of the soldiers, distributed their pay, and was responsible for their recruitment.⁷ Under the Mughals he possessed considerable powers and influence,⁸ but he does not seem to have enjoyed the same position and prestige

¹. See p. 84, supra.
². See p. 161 supra.
³. Šriv., p. 173; Munich MS., f. 77a.
⁴. H.M., f. 152b.
⁵. Stein, BK., iv, Nos. 142-3.
⁶. Qureshi, Administration of the Sultanate of Delhi, p. 71.
⁷. H.M., f. 189b.
under the Sultāns of Kashmir. The first mention of a Mir Bakhshī in the chronicles is in the reign of ‘Ali Shāh.1

Amīr-i-Dar

Amīr-i-Dar2 or Lord Chamberlain, whom Jonarāja calls Dvārapāla,3 was an important officer. His post commanded great prestige and was reserved for the Sultān’s most trusted nobles. His importance arose from the fact that he was constantly in the company of the Sultān. All petitions to the latter were presented through him, and no one was allowed to enter the royal presence without being introduced by him. He also made arrangements for important celebrations at the court, and was thus the Master of Ceremonies.4

Nāyaks

The Nāyaks6 were the guardians of the passes leading into Kashmir. During the rule of Hindu kings the control of the passes was vested in a single officer who was known as Dvārapati or Lord of the Gate.6 Under the Sultāns they were placed under a number of officers called Nāyaks, who were appointed by the Sultān, and were directly under the central government. Their appointments were sometimes hereditary and, in return for their services, they were given jāgīrs. They had at their disposal a force which was stationed at fortified outposts, and their duty was to see that no one entered the Valley or left it without a Khāṭṭ-i-Rāh (permit).7 They were also required to defend the Valley from foreign invasions and from the inroads of turbulent hill tribes,

1. Munich MS., f. 66a.
2. T.A., iii, 448, calls him Ḥājib-i-Dar.
4. Compare him with Amīr Ḥājib or Barbek of the Delhi Court. See Qureshi, Administration of the Sultanate of Delhi, pp. 61-2.
5. Śrīv., pp. 310, 313; Sūka, p. 405; A.N., iii, 764. Stein is wrong in saying that they were called Maliks. Malik was in reality a title conferred by the Sultāns upon their officials.
6. Other of its equivalents were Dvārādhipa, Dvāreka etc., (Stein, BK. v, No. 214).
7. Tuḥfatu’l-Aḥbāb, p. 64; Jonar., p. 66; Śrīv., p. 271.
the Dards in the north and the Khašas in the south-west. Furthermore, they were to prevent smuggling and collect customs duties on goods exported and imported. Whenever the passes were well defended and in the hands of trustworthy commanders, Kashmir enjoyed immunity from foreign invasions. But whenever their defence was neglected or the Nāyaks turned traitors, the Valley was easily invaded.

**Espionage System**

The Sultāns kept themselves informed of the activities of their subjects and officials by means of spies. Thus it was through his spies that Ḥaidar Shāh came to know of the treacherous designs of his Treasurer, Ḥasan, and was able to nip the conspiracy in the bud. Under Zainu’l-ʿĀbidīn the espionage system was very efficient, and it kept him in touch with the happenings in the remotest parts of the kingdom. Sometimes he himself, like Ḥārūn ar-Rashīd, changed his dress and roamed in the streets of the capital to find out the condition of his subjects. It was usual to employ prostitutes for spying and securing information. Queens and princes had their own agents. Spies were also kept by the Sultāns on the frontiers of the Valley to keep an eye on the activities of the Nāyaks and to report on the enemy movements beyond.

**Khazānchi** or Khazāna-dār

As the name implies, the Khazānchi was in charge of the treasury. In Hindu times he was called Gañjavara after the Persian Ganjwar, and he continued to be called by the same title under the early Shāh Mīrs, but later on he was named Khazānchi. The importance of the office depended upon the personality of the man at the head. Thus Ḥasan, who was the Treasurer of Sultān Zainu’l-ʿĀbidīn, played a

3. See p. 96, *supra*.
5. H.M., f. 121b; Hasan, f. 122a.
7. Jonar., p. 43.
8. Śuka, p. 350.
10. Stein, BK. v, No. 177 and n. Under Lalitāditya, he was called Mahābhāṣa-dāgāra (Stein, BK. iv, No. 143). Śrīv. (Bo. ed.), BK. 2, No. 24, calls him Kośeṣa.
decisive part in securing the succession for Ḥājī Khān,¹ and, when
the latter ascended the throne, he put the mark of royalty on his
forehead.² There is no evidence of any other Treasurer having played
an equally significant role in the affairs of state.

**Police: Kotwāl and Muḥtasib**

In the time of the Rājās, Srinagar had a Prefect who was called
_Nagarādhipa_ or _Nagarādhikrta._³ His duty was to collect fines levied
on the people by the government, and to look after their morals. He
also supervised weights and measures, the trades, and other matters
relating to the town. Under the Sultāns these duties were performed
by the Kotwāl and the _Muḥtasib._ The _Kotwāl_ was responsible for
maintaining law and order in the city, and for protecting the citizens
from thieves and robbers. His powers were great, and he could put
the thieves to death.⁴ In order to discharge his duties efficiently he
had a police force at his disposal. The _Muḥtasib_ supervised the
markets, inspected weights and measures, and looked after the morals
of the people. In addition, it was his duty to see that the public
prayers were conducted properly; that intoxicating liquors and drugs
were not manufactured or sold publicly; that no one was found drunk
in public places; and that gambling and immoral living were not carried
on. His powers were great in the time of Sikandar and those rulers
who were anxious that the practices of the people should conform to
Islamic teachings. Under Mīrzā Ḥaidar Dughlat every part of Srinagar,
and every village and pargana in the kingdom had a _Muḥtasib_ who
was required to see that the people prayed five times a day and did
not deviate from the precepts of Islām.⁵ The _Muḥtasib_ had no right
to hold a formal trial, which could only be done by a _Qāżī._ But he
could initiate cases, and could also give light punishments for ordinary
misdemeanours after a summary trial. Serious cases, however, which

¹. See p. 80, supra,
². _Śriv._, p. 184.
³. Jonar. (Cal. ed.), No. 886; In verse No. 945 he is called _Adhikārī._
⁴. _Śriv._, p. 279. In one instance he even supervised the construction of a
bridge. (Jonar., p. 89).
⁵. _Nasib_, f. 512a.
required proper investigation and legal exposition, were referred to
the Qāzi and Muftī. The Muḥtasib was really an executive officer.1

Central Record Department

All the official documents were kept in a separate record office at
Srinagar. Until the reign of Sulṭān Zainu’l-ʿĀbidīn, owing to the
scarcity of paper, they were written on bhūrja (the inner bark of the
Himalayan birch) with the ink made of powdered charcoal of almonds
boiled in gomutra (Urina Bovis). The ink thus obtained is not spoilt
by damp or water.2 From the time of Zainu’l-ʿĀbidīn paper began
to be manufactured in Kashmir, and so, henceforth, the documents
were written both on the birch-bark and on paper.3 Besides Srinagar
there was also a record office at Sōpūr, the capital of Kamrāj. But
during the reign of Zainu’l-ʿĀbidīn all the previous records were
destroyed.4

In addition to the above, there were also many other officials and
minor departments of the central government. Every department had
a secretary called Dabīr.5 The king’s court of justice, which Jonarāja
calls Dharmāḍhikara, had a superintendent who appears to have been
a responsible officer.6 He was a confidant of the Sulṭān, but his duties
are not known. The guardianship of the royal princes was a coveted
post for which there was a keen competition. The holder of the office
had the status of a minister, and was a member of the Sulṭān’s council.
Then there was the Court Astrologer and the Court Physician both
of whom enjoyed the Sulṭān’s utmost confidence.7 There was a separate
department of music with an officer at its head.8 The Purohitā or the

---

1. For further details of the duties of the Muḥtasib, see Qureshi, Administration of the Sultanate of Dehli, pp. 164-7; also Von Kramer, Orient under the Caliphs, pp. 292 sqq. (Trans. Khudā Bakhsh).
3. The documents continued to be written on bhūrja down to the 17th century. (Stein, BK. vii, No. 508).
5. Jonar. (Bo. ed.), Nos. 11, 1306.
7. Under Hasan Shāh, Śrīvara was the head of the Music Department.
Brahman priest was an important person under the early Shāh Mīrs, but latter his importance declined as his functions were taken over by the Shaikhu’l-Islām.¹

**Provincial and Local Government**

The only part of the kingdom of Kashmir that was directly governed by the Sulṭān or his agents consisted of the Kashmir Valley and Lohara. The rest was ruled by its own chiefs who were independent in their internal affairs. The Valley of Kashmir was divided into two provinces, Marāj on the east and Kamrāj on the west.² Marāj comprised the districts on both sides of the Jehlam, and Kamrāj those below.³ Sōpūr was the headquarters of Kamrāj, while Srīnagar was the chief city of Marāj.⁴

The government of Srīnagar was directly under the Sulṭān, while the two provinces were administered by governors called Ḥākims, who generally belonged to the royal family.⁵ Thus Zainu’l-ʻAbidīn appointed his son Adham as governor of Kamrāj, and later Ḥaidar Shāh conferred upon his son Ḥasan the same province as jāgīr.⁶ Under the later Shāh Mīrs, the Valley was divided among three or four feudal chiefs who were responsible for the administration of their respective areas. But the general supervision of the kingdom continued to be vested in the Wazīr who ruled in the name of the puppet Sulṭān.

The provincial government was a replica of the central government. The Ḥākim was required to maintain law and order, collect revenue and dispense justice. Being the head of the civil and military administration of the province, his powers were great; and as there were no constitutional checks on him, it was not unusual for him to defy the authority of the centre. To prevent this the Sulṭāns appointed

---

1. This change took place in the time of Sikandar.
2. A.A., ii, 367. In Hindu times the divisions were called Madavarājya and Kramarājya. (Stein, ii, 436).
4. Ibid., Šriv., p. 156.
5. In Hindu times the governor was called Maṇḍalesa. (Stein, BK. viii, No. 1117).
6. See p. 96, supra.
such persons as governors whom they could trust. But they were not always successful in their choice, and consequently rebellions were a matter of common occurrence.

The Qāzī was the head of the judiciary of the province, and was appointed by the centre. Under him there were Qāzīs and Muftīs in every town and pargana. But there was no Mir 'Adl who was only appointed in Srinagar. The Kotwāl and Muḥtasib were in charge of the safety and morals of the inhabitants of the town. The espionage department kept the Sultān informed of the affairs of the provinces and of the activities of the provincial and local officials. The records of the government were kept in a record office under the care of a special officer.

The provinces were divided for administrative purpose into small districts called parganas, each under a Shiqdār. The number of these parganas was not constant but was changed from time to time by splitting them up or amalgamating them owing to reasons of administration. It is not known what was the number of parganas under Zainu'l-Ābidīn or before him. According to Lokapraṅkāśa the Valley was divided into twenty-seven Viṣayas, but it is difficult to say to which period this list refers. Moreover, it gives only nineteen names of which only a few can be identified. Under Muḥammad Shāh, however, the number of parganas was twenty-seven, but their names have not been mentioned. Under Mīrzā Ḥaidar Dughlat, the number was increased to thirty. According to Abūl-Fażl, under Akbar, the return of Āşaf Khān showed thirty-eight parganas, whilst the earlier one of Qāzī 'Alī contained forty-one. Probably the last seems to be the number which existed during the Chak period.

Each pargana comprised a number of villages, whose total in

---

1. These were called Viṣayas in Hindu times. (Stein, ii, 437); also Śrīv. (Bo. ed.), BK. iv, No. 570.
3. Indische Studien, xviii, p. 370; Stein, ii, 437 and n. 6.
4. Śrīv. (Bo. ed.), BK. iv, No. 570.
5. Nasib, f. 513b.
6. A.A., ii, 367; Haft Iqlīm, f. 156a, gives the number of parganas as 32 and their income as 3 crore tāmkas.
the Valley amounted to 60,000.1 Each village had an accountant or *patwārī* who was called in the Hindu times *Grāmakāyastha*.2 What he was designated under the Sultāns is not known. For the maintenance of law and order there was a police officer called *Sarhang Zāda* who had under him a group of villages.3 Under him were the Čandaḷas who swept the houses in the day and acted as village watchmen in the night, and for this service they were given food by the villagers.4 In the time of Mīrzā Ḥaidar every village had also a *Muḥtaṣib* whose duty was to see that the inhabitants lived a life in conformity with Islamic teachings. The chronicles do not tell us if the institution of *panchāyat* existed, nor do they mention the existence of the village headman.

**Vassal Chiefs**

The vassal chiefs belonged to the landowning families like the Māgres, Rainas, Chaks, Baṣhs, and Dārs. They were assigned big jāgīrs, which could be passed on from father to son. In return they were required to pay revenue to the Sultān, to serve in the government, and to render him military aid in time of war. But since the chiefs were very powerful, possessing a large body of retainers, they were a great source of danger to the state. They constantly rose in rebellion and prevented the growth of a strong, centralised government. Under weak Sultāns they even appropriated large areas of the country to themselves.5 And since they were exempted from paying land revenue and other taxes,6 the income derived from the rest of the kingdom could not have been enough to run an efficient administration.

**Khāliṣa Lands**

These were the crown lands which were directly administered by the Sultān. Even when the latter was deprived of all his powers, and the Valley was divided by the nobles among themselves as their private estate, he was still left in possession of the crown lands.

---

2. Stein, BK. v., No. 176.  
4. Hasan, f. 90a; H.M. (B.N.), f. 31a. Compare the Čandaḷas with the Doms of Lawrence, *Valley*, p. 228. Under the Rājās also the Čandaḷas acted as watchmen. (Stein, BK. viii, No. 309).  
5. Śrīv., p. 303.  
Lohara

The territory of Lohara had been subject to the Hindu kings of Kashmir since ancient times, but during the period of their decline it had become independent. It was reconquered by Sultān Shihābū’-d-Dīn only to reassert its independence during the last years of his reign. Qūṭbū’-d-Dīn tried to bring it under his rule, but without success; and it was not until the time of Zainu’ll-Ābidīn that it was once again reduced. It was he who abolished the reigning dynasty, and henceforth, till the end of the Sultanate, Lohara was directly governed from Srinagar through a governor. Ḥājī Khān, the Sultān’s second son, was appointed its first governor in 1452.1

Tributary States

The tributary states comprised Pakhlī, the Kishangangā Valley, Ladākh, Baltīstān, Kīshtwār and all the territory of the outer hills from the Rāvi on the east to the Jehlam on the west. The rulers of these states looked upon the Kashmir Sultān as their suzerain, paid him tribute, gave their daughters in marriage to him or to the heir-apparent, and secured from him sanction for the succession to the throne.2 They also supplied him with troops in case of war, presented themselves at the court on the occasion of the accession of a new Sultān, and participated in the coronation ceremonies at the conclusion of which they received gifts and khil’ats.3 In the internal administration of their states, however, they were entirely free. Interference was only deemed necessary in case of a rebellion when an army was sent to reduce them to obedience. During the reigns of weak Sultāns, the chiefs invariably asserted their independence and withheld payment of tribute.

The Army

The army under the Sultāns consisted of (1) The Standing Army (2) Provincial Troops (3) Feudal Levies (4) Volunteers.

The first category of troops was under the Sultān’s direct control and employment, and was recruited from amongst the Khasas, Rājpūts,

1. See p. 75, supru. In 1530 we find that Muḥammad Shāh, when he became Sultān for the fourth time, collecting taxes from Lohara. (Sūka, p. 368).
2. Srv., p. 123.
Sayyids, Māgres, Chaks, Rainas and others, who had the reputation of being good soldiers. The Dombas, too, were enlisted and were known to be stubborn fighters, but they had one great defect. They were unreliable, and at the least opportunity they turned aside from the battle and started plundering. The standing army was stationed at the capital, and in the time of war the Sultān marched at its head to repel the enemy, and detached a part of it under a separate commander. The army comprised foot and cavalry. The horsemen rode on ponies, but the officers rode on horses imported from Turkistān and ‘Irāq, for Kashmir itself did not breed horses of good quality. Owing to the mountainous nature of the country, the cavalry was the most important arm of the fighting forces, and that is why an attempt to seize the throne was usually preceded by the capture of the royal stable. Elephants were also employed, but as they had to be imported from India through difficult passes, their number was necessarily small, and their role in the army was therefore not important.

The provincial troops were stationed in the various provincial towns. Their number varied according to the strategic importance of the place. Then there were the garrisons in the frontier forts or watch-stations (drangas) at the head of the passes, which were under their respective commanders called Nāyaks. There were also garrisons in the forts built inside the Valley at strategic places like Nāgām, Lār, Andarkōt, Chiraodar, Manār and Birū.

The feudal levies were the forces which the nobles supplied the Sultān in the time of war. Each contingent was under the command of its own chief. The rulers of Rajaurī, Jammu, Kishtwār and other tributary states also furnished troops. Volunteers were called out in times of emergency when the Valley was threatened by a foreign invasion. Usually the response to the Sultān’s appeal was favourable, and the people rallied to the defence of their country.

*Weapons*

The weapons commonly employed were sword, bow and arrow.

2. H.M., ff. 156a-b. For the employment of elephants under Harṣa of Kashmir, see Stein, BK. vii, Nos. 1553-5.
spear, battle-axe and mace. The soldiers wore coats of mail, while the horses were caparisoned with steel. Śrīvara refers to a weapon, made for the first time in Kashmir in the time of Zainu'l-Ābidīn, which “destroys forts, pierces the hearts of men, strikes horses with terror, throws balls of stone from a distance, and remains unseen by the soldiers from encampments”. At another place he says that the Sultan's army was “furnished with weapons like lightning, showering forth arrows with deep and prolonged roar”. This account gave occasion to the surmise in later times that these weapons were cannons using gunpowder. But it must be remembered that Śrīvara, being a poet, was very often carried away by his imagination, and so his description must not be taken too literally. Moreover, he nowhere mentions ayoguda (gunpowder); he only refers to the use of kṣara. Thus there is no reliable evidence to show that gunpowder was known in the time of Zainu'l-Ābidīn. What really must have been employed is the Greek Fire or naphtha which also produced, like the gunpowder, considerable sound; and the weapon invented was not a cannon but some kind of a mechanical device by which fire-missiles or stones could be discharged. However, these weapons, on account of the difficulties of their manufacture, were rarely employed. That is why there is no reference to them in the civil war between Muhammad Shihā and Fath Shāh or in the war of resistance against Mīrzā Ḥaidar. It was in the time of the later Shāh Mīrs or the Chaks that gunpowder came to be known in Kashmir, but even then its use was on a restricted scale.

1. Śrīv., p. 105. 2. Ibid., p. 112.
3. J.A.S.B., xlv, p. 36. Śrīvara uses the word ṣajra which means weapon and not cannon. (Śrīv., BK. I, chap. i, Nos. 72 sq.).
4. Śrīv. (Bo. ed.), BK. I, chap. iv, Nos. 19 sq. Kṣara means saltpetre. There is again a reference to kṣara in verse No. 28.
5. J.A.S.B., xlv, p. 36. It is important to note that Muslim writers confused naft (naphtha) with bārūd (gunpowder). See a discussion of this in David Ayalon, Gunpowder and Firearms in the Mamlūk Kingdom, pp. 9 sq.
6. J.A.S.B., xlv, pp. 40, 42. See W.K., f. 49b, for the stone which was thrown on the Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā and which damaged the roof. H.M., f. 151a is wrong in saying that it was a cannon ball.
7. According to B.S., f. 83b, there were 20 muskets used in Kashmir during the civil war between Muḥammad Shāh and Fath Shāh.
It appears that Ghāzi Shāh was the first Sultān to possess a cannon which he employed against Qarā Bahādur. Subsequently in the war of succession between Yūsuf Shāh and Abdāl Chak muskets were used, for the latter is said to have been wounded by a shot. Yūsuf Shāh's army, which was organised to resist the Mughal invasion under Rājā Bhagwān Dās, is said to have had 7,000 musketeers, but the number appears to be highly exaggerated.

Mode of Fighting

From the very scanty information that is available regarding the military organisation under the Sultāns, it appears that the army was divided into five corps: centre, two wings, vanguard and rearguard. In the front were sometimes the elephants. Unlike modern times, the commander of the army himself led the attack. If he was killed, the next in command took the field. Sometimes there were single combats as a result of the challenge from one side to the other. After this there was a general mêlée. The spirit of the soldiers was roused by the beating of kettle drums. The troops did not wear any special dress, but bore some mark by which they could be distinguished from the enemy. In addition to this they carried banners which were of blood-red colour.

The most common method of warfare in which the Kashmiris excelled was the surprise attack usually delivered before dawn. It was employed both in the civil wars and against the foreign invaders. It was these surprise attacks which wore down Mīrzā Ḥaidar, and

1. Šuka (Bo. ed.), No. 460. The word topha is used by Šrīvara which is a corrupt form of top meaning cannon.
3. H.M., f. 189b.
4. Ibid., f. 144a; A.N., iii, 770.
5. Ibid., f. 156a. See Stein, BK. vii, Nos. 553-5, for the employment of elephants under the kings of Kashmir.
6. B.S., f. 92b.
7. Ibid.
8. Šrīv., p. 288; Šuka, p. 386.
9. Šrīv., p. 293.
10. Jonar., p. 75; Šrīv., p. 207.
inflicted great losses on Qāsīm Khān, Akbar’s general. They were, in fact, always employed whenever it was felt that, owing to the inferiority in numbers, a pitched battle would not be successful.

The guerilla type of warfare also found great favour with the Kashmirīs. It was employed whenever the country was subjected to a foreign invasion. The Kashmirī chiefs would then escape to the mountains and carry on resistance from there. They would cut off the supplies of the enemy, swoop down upon him from their mountain hideouts, and thus compel him to make peace and withdraw.

The forts which were situated at various strategic places, did not play any direct part either in the civil wars or at the time of foreign invasions. Wars were fought in the narrow mountain defiles and passes or on the plain, and the forts served only as stations from which the garrison could sally forth to attack the enemy. They were never employed to check the progress of the invading army which, in consequence, never stopped to besiege them. It is significant to remember that Srinagar itself did not possess a fort. The battle for its capture was fought either in the neighbourhood or in the city itself. During the civil wars it was a common practice to destroy the bridges over the Jehlam in order to defend the city. But this method was rarely effective, for an enterprising commander was always able to force his way across the river.

Finance

The information existing in the chronicles about the fiscal affairs under the Sultāns is very meagre. It is, however, clear that the system of taxation did not always conform to the Shari‘a. The main heads of revenue were: (1) Kharāj (2) Jizya (3) Zakāt and Customs Duty (4) other taxes (5) Assignments and Tribute.

Kharāj was realised both from Muslims and non-Muslims, for there is no evidence to suggest that the former were exempted from it and paid only an ‘ushr i.e. one-tenth. ¹ When Shāh Mīr ascended the throne he fixed the revenue demand at one-sixth of the produce of land.² He

¹. In Kashmir no ‘ushri lands existed. Muslims and Hindus alike were subjected to the same rates of taxation. In the chronicles the word kharāj (land revenue) is constantly used.
². Munich MS., f. 53b.
fixed it at such a low rate partly in order to win the goodwill of the people, and partly because he realised that, since the material prosperity of the Valley had been declining for over two hundred years, the paying capacity of the peasant was very low. But under his successors the revenue demand was increased to one-third, and generally speaking this remained the rate of assessment throughout the Sultanate period. In case there were famines or floods the government granted large remissions. Thus when a famine took place in the reign of Zainu’l-‘Abidin, the Sultan reduced the rent to one-fourth, and in some places like Zainagir to one-seventh.²

According to Mîrzâ Ėlaîdar Dughlat land in Kashmir was divided into four kinds: Abî, Lalmî, Bâghî, and meadow lands.³ The first was the land which grew crops with the help of irrigation. Assessment on this was heavier than on other types. The second kind of land depended upon the natural rainfall. Since this could not be controlled, such lands were lightly taxed. The third kind on which fruit trees were planted were exempted from taxation under the Shâh Mîrs.⁴ But although the early Chak rulers imposed a tax on gardens, it was abolished by Yûsuf Shâh.⁵ The fourth kind, namely the meadow lands on the banks of rivers, were also not taxed, because they were swampy, and so were not fit for cultivation.⁶

Each village was assessed at so many kharwârs of rice, and the produce could not be removed from the threshing floor by the villagers until the state’s share had been taken from it. The grain was stored by the government in the granaries built in the towns for the purpose, and then sold to the non-agricultural population at fixed prices. In this way prices were kept steady, and, in times of scarcity, cornering of grain was prevented, and people were enabled to buy it cheap.⁷

*Jizya*

No evidence exists in the chronicles to suggest that the *Jizya* was

1. A.A., ii, 366. 2. Šriv., p. 156.
3. T.R., (MS.), f. 15a; also A.A., il, 362n. 3.
7. Šriv., p. 119; Munich MS., f. 75b. See also Stein, BK. viii, No. 61, for conditions under the Râjâs; also BK. viii, Nos. 1245-7n.
realized from the non-Muslims by the Shāh Mīr rulers before Sultān Sikandar. It was he who for the first time imposed it in order that his administration might conform to Islamic practices.\(^1\) When Zainu’l-‘Ābidīn came to the throne he reduced the Jizya from two puls of silver, collected under his father, to the nominal amount of one māshā of silver.\(^2\) But even this was not collected, and the same was the practice under his successors.\(^3\) When, however, Fatḥ Shāh became ruler for the second time his prime minister, Mūsā Raina, reimposed it under the influence of Shamsu’Dīn, and it continued to be collected during the regime of Daulat Chak, the prime minister of Sultān Ismā’il Shāh II, and later under the Chak rulers.\(^4\) But Yūsuf Shāh abolished it.\(^5\) Ya’qūb Shāh, however, must have reimposed it, for when Akbar annexed Kashmir, it was being realised from the Hindus and was finally abolished by him.\(^6\)

\textbf{Zakāt and Customs Duty}

The Zakāt (Poor Tax) was collected from the Muslims according to the rates prescribed by the Shari’a. The Sufis and the ‘Ulamā of Kashmir never ceased exhorting the people to pay the Zakāt.\(^7\) This shows that it was not an obligatory but a voluntary tax. However, in the reigns of some Sultāns it was realised by the state just like other taxes. Thus under Sultān Sikandar every one paid the Zakāt.\(^8\) Similarly Yūsuf Shah realised it from every person except the boatmen, who were regarded as too poor to pay it.\(^9\) It is not known whether the Zakāt was deposited in a separate treasury or was lumped together with the secular taxes. Nor has it been recorded as to how it was spent. Probably most of the money which the Sultāns gave away to the poor, or spent in providing food and shelter to the travellers, the students, and the needy, came

1. H.M., f. 113b. According to Jonar., p. 60, Brahmans had to pay a fine for retaining their caste. This was, in fact, nothing else but the Jizya.
2. See p. 87, supra.
3. \textit{Ibid}.
5. H.M., f. 182b; also H.M. (B.N.), f. 59a.
8. Munich MS., f. 64b, says that Sikandar exempted the merchants from the Zakāt, but this is apocryphal.
from the *Zakāt*. According to the *Shari'a* the realisation of customs duty is forbidden, for the only legal taxes are *Zakāt*, *Kharāj* and *Jizya*. But since the customs duty was collected at the frontiers, the jurists resolved this contradiction between theory and practice by bringing the customs duty under the heading of *Zakāt*. Accordingly after the Muslim merchant had paid the *Zakāt* he was allowed to cross the frontier. But in Kashmir, in addition to this, he had also to pay a duty on articles of import and export at the customs-posts which were known as *Rāh-dāri*. The Hindu merchants also had to pay duties on their goods. And, as we have seen, the guardians of the passes were there to see that there was no smuggling, and that duty was realised from every trader.

**Other Cesses**

Under the Rājās all kinds of taxes had been realised from the people. The villagers who did not turn up to carry their allotted loads, were fined to the value of the latter. Only the priests of the temples were exempted from the corvée. Fees were realised for such events as marriages, feasts and festivals, and taxes were imposed on boatmen, artisans, cows, and even on night soil. When Shāh Mīr seized power he cancelled many of the exactions of former times. Similarly Sultān Sikandar abolished *Bāj* and *Tamghā*, while Sultān Zainu’l-Ābidīn abolished other extra taxes, and prohibited his officers from imposing arbitrary fines upon the people. Later Yūsuf Shāh abolished the taxes on artisans, cows and gardens, and the *Zākat* on boatmen. This means that either all the taxes had not been abolished at one stroke of the pen, or they were reimposed in the subsequent reigns, for we find the rulers abolishing them again and again. When the Mughals conquered the Valley they also claimed to have abolished many of the

4. Jonar., p. 97. Hindu and Muslim merchants alike had to pay customs duty.
5. Stein, BK. v, No. 174 and n.
8. See p. 62, *supra*, for *Bāj* and *Tamghā*.
vexatious taxes like *Bâj* and *Tamghâ*, the levy of two dams on fuel, poll-tax from the boatmen, and sheep from the villagers.\(^1\)

Mines were another source of income. But no details of this are found in the chronicles. We only know that the people collected gold particles from the sandy banks of rivers. The share of the state was one-sixth in the time of Zainu’l-‘Ãbidîn, and probably the subsequent rulers also realised it at the same rate.\(^2\)

**Assignments and Tribute**

The practice of giving jâgîrs to nobles and officials was common in Hindu times. When, however, Shâh Mîr established his rule, he refrained from giving assignments indiscriminately, for he thought that this made the nobles strong and encouraged rebellions. But his successors did not follow this policy, and liberally gave away jâgîrs. Under the later Shâh Mîrs the nobles, who were the *de facto* rulers of the country, compelled the Sulţâns to assign them, with the exception of the crown lands, the whole Valley, which they divided among themselves. When the Chaks established their dynasty they expropriated these assignments and granted fresh ones to their courtiers and officials. These jâgîrs were hereditary and managed by their holders. But they could be confiscated in case of disloyalty on the part of the jâgîrdârs.\(^3\)

The tribute realised from the neighbouring states, subject to Kashmir, was uncertain, for it depended upon the ability of the central government to enforce the demand. The tribute was generally paid in kind. Thus from Ladâkh and Baltistân the Sulţâns received wool and leather,\(^4\) and from Kishtwâr they got saffron.\(^5\)

---

1. A.A., ii, 367. Moorcroft, *Travels*, pp. ii, 126-7, says that during his time bakers, butchers, boatmen, scavengers and even prostitutes were taxed.
2. See p. 83, *supra*.
3. Šriv., p. 244.
4. Bernier, *Travels in the Mughal Empire*, p. 420. During the reign of Ibrâhîm Shâh, the Ladâkhis paid as revenue 500 horses, 1000 pieces of pattu, 50 yaks and 200 tolas of gold. (T.A., iii, 481).
5. H.M., f. 167b.
CHAPTER XII

SOCIAL AND ECONOMIC CONDITIONS

The spread of Islam in Kashmir from the latter half of the fourteenth century onwards brought about a great transformation in the life of the people. The cultural contacts that were established with Persia and Turkestan and the influx of a large number of Muslims from those countries also effected profound social changes. But despite this foreign impact, which was far-reaching, links with the past were not broken, for the Kashmiris refused to give up their beliefs and practices completely. That is why throughout the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries there was a constant conflict between those who wanted to cling to their traditional manners and customs, and those who were eager to introduce the Perso-Islamic way of life. In the end, however, the conflict was resolved by the fusion of the old and the new. This resulted in the emergence of a society in which the old ideas and institutions were mixed up with the new.

Society

Society in Kashmir during the Hindu times was divided into four castes. But these divisions were not as rigid as in India. It was, for example, not uncommon for the rulers to take Domba girls or prostitutes as their wives and make them their chief queens. There were also instances of low-born persons rising to the highest positions in the state. Nevertheless, the Brahmins occupied a privileged position. Those who were in charge of temples were exempt from corvée and taxation. The Brahman priests very often interfered in the affairs of the kingdom, and if they disapproved of anything, they fasted until the powers that be were coerced into surrender.

With the spread of Islam, the status and influence of the Brahmins

1. Stein, BK. v, Nos. 361 sqq; BK. vii, Nos. 1460-2.
2. Ibid., BK. v, Nos. 174 and n. 174.
3. Ibid., BK. vii, Nos. 13-4; BK. viii, No. 2076.
gradually declined, for their place was taken by Sayyids, 'Ulamā, Pirs, and other groups among the Muslims. Another important change that took place was that, with the exception of the Brahmans who resisted conversion, the members belonging to all other castes embraced Islam. As a result only one caste, namely, that of the Brahmans, survived, while the other three castes disappeared. However, many of the converts did not give up their surnames. Thus persons who bear the titles of Kauls, Baṭs, Aitūs, Mantūs, Ganāīs, and Rainas (Razdan) are the descendants of Brahmans; while those who are called Māgres, Dārs (Hindu Dars or Dhars), Rainas (Rājpūts), Rāthōrs, Thākurs, Nāyaks, and Chaks have a Kṣatriya origin. But there were some who after conversion gave up their caste names, and so began to be called by the profession which they adopted. The Brahmans, who clung to their religion and caste, became divided in the course of time into two sub-castes: the Kārkuns who studied Persian and entered government service and Bhāṣā Bhāṭṭa who studied Sanskrit and looked after the religious affairs of the community.

Although divisions in Kashmir society based on caste disappeared for the most part, they were replaced by class distinctions which, in certain cases, retained the old rigidity. Islam no doubt provided a unifying and leavening force, and the Sūfīs tried to bridge the gulf between the different classes, but, owing to the economic disparities and functional differences, real social equality could not be achieved.

Nobility

At the head stood the Sultān and his family. Next came the nobles who were the heads of such families as Chaks, Māgres, Rainas, Dārs

1. Lawrence, Valley, p. 306. Among the Rainas there are two groups: (1) Brahmans who call themselves Razdan. (2) Rājpūts who claim descent from the Rājūs of Candra Bānsi and who came to Kashmir from Nagarkōt in the reign of Rājā Jayasimha. (T.H., i, ff. 166a-b).

2. A practice common in Kashmir (perhaps of older origin) is of giving a kṛṁ, a nickname, which is added to the original name by reason of the man's special calling, or because of some special circumstance which has occurred to him. (Knowles, A Dictionary of Kashmiri Proverbs and Sayings, p. 115).

and Baṇs. They held big jāgīrs and the highest posts in the government. Their titles, privileges and jāgīrs, unlike those of the Mughal nobles, were hereditary, and could not be taken away from them except in case of disloyalty. Owing to their wealth and position the nobles employed a large number of retainers. They were generally men of culture, and patronized men of learning. They built religious edifices and gave endowments for educational purposes. Moreover, they supplied from their ranks the chief civil and military officers to the state, and protected it against foreign aggression. But they spent most of their energies in intriguing against one another to secure the king’s favour; or, if the latter was weak, to usurp his functions and even to supplant him. It is in this way that the Chaks replaced the Shāh Mīrs, and founded their own dynasty. But the change did not put an end to the feudal rivalries and scramble for power. In fact the civil conflicts became so accentuated as to lead to foreign invasions, and to the eventual loss of Kashmir's independence.

The families which played a distinguished part during the Muslim period were either of foreign origin or emerged into prominence under the Sulṭāns. The Chaks entered Kashmir in the reign of Sūhadeva, while the Baihaqi Sayyids came in the time of Zainu'l-ʿAbidīn. The Rainas, Māgres, Dārs, and other families were of indigenous origin, but, with the exception of the first, the rest assumed importance only during the Muslim period. The princes were always called by the title of Khān, but sometimes the nobles had also 'Khān’ attached to their names. Other titles that were conferred upon the nobles by the Sulṭāns were Malik, Amīru'l-Umarā’, Khān-i-Zamān, Mīrzā, and Shaukat Jung.

The Sulṭāns married within the families of Chaks, Māgres and the Baihaqi Sayyids, but they also entered into matrimonial alliances with the families of the Rājās of Jammu, Kishtwār, and Rajaurī and those of the rulers of Pakhū and Sindh. The nobles generally married within their own families, but marriages between different families were not uncommon. Although birth was an important factor in determining

1. This title was given to the princes under the Chaks. (See H.M., f. 183b; and B.S., f. 169b).
2. Srīv., pp. 223, 303; Śuka, p. 358.
one's station in life, yet society was not a closed circle, for we find individuals of humble origin and families, unknown before, emerging into prominence by their ability and energy.

*The Religious Class*

After the nobles came the religious classes composed of the 'ulamā or theologians, the Sayyids, the Sūfis and their descendants.

(a) *'Ulamā*: Islām as taught by the Prophet Muḥammad had no ordained clergy. However, with the rescension of the Qur'ān and the Ḥadīṣ, those learned in them assumed almost the position of ordained clergy as doctors and interpreters of law. And because of the latter function, combined with their profound learning and piety, the 'Ulamā commanded great respect among the people. Moreover, Muḥammad was reputed to have said that the 'Ulamā must be honoured for they are the successors of the prophets, and that he who honours them honours the Prophet of Islām and Allāh thereby. Thus in Kashmir, as in other Muslim countries, the 'Ulamā were held in high respect. From among them were recruited the Qāżīs, Muftīs, and Shaikhu'l-Islāms. In theory the democratic principles were carried into effect in this class, but in practice there was a strong hereditary tendency. Many of the 'Ulamā were of foreign origin, and were learned in Muslim theology, logic and Ḥadīṣ. The Kashmirī 'Ulamā after studying at the feet of some learned and pious man in Srinagar proceeded to Samarqand, Herāt or Mecca, and returned after having undergone a course of training abroad. It was only then that they were regarded as full-fledged jurists. The 'Ulamā, as a rule, led a simple and pious life. They held aloft the principles of the Shari'a, and fought against any accretions and innovations in Islām. Their interest was, however, not confined merely to social and religious problems; they also sometimes took an active part in the politics of their day.

(b) *Sayyids*

In the fourteenth century a large number of Sayyids sought shelter in Kashmir in order to escape from the wrath of first the Mongols and then of Timūr. They were attracted to the Valley owing to the peace

1 Cited in Ashraf, *Life and conditions of the people of Hindustan*, p. 183.
that prevailed there compared to the social and political upheavals that were characteristic of Central Asia and Persia during this period. Moreover, they also came on account of the patronage that was extended to them by the Sultāns. And the process of immigration once begun continued down to the fall of the Sultanate.

Owing to their descent from Muḥammad, through his daughter Fāṭima, a special sanctity was attached to the Sayyids among the Muslims. They were treated with special respect, and the kings and nobles conferred upon them all kinds of privileges. Some of the Sayyids who came to Kashmir were jurists and were appointed Qāżīs and Muftīs by the Sultāns. Some took to the profession of teaching; others were men of piety and supplied recruits to the ranks of Pīrs and Murshids who acted as the spiritual preceptors of the ignorant masses. A few found their way into the villages and became agriculturists. There were still others, like the Baihaqī Sayyids, who turned to politics. They married in the family of the Sultāns and in this way entered the ranks of the Kashmirī nobles. But because of their arrogance and ambition they aroused the jealousy of the Kashmirī chiefs who formed a conspiracy to overthrow them. Gradually, however, the Baihaqī Sayyids, by pursuing a policy of moderation and patriotism, succeeded in removing from themselves the taint which they carried as foreigners and in establishing their confidence among the people. After this they played an important role in the social and political history of the Valley.

(c) Sāfīs

The Pīrs with their Murīds formed an important group in medieval Kashmir, and exercised greater influence on the social, religious, and cultural life of the country than the 'Ulamā. They were looked upon with great reverence by all classes of people because of their great learning and piety, but above all because they were supposed to possess miraculous powers. They led a life of simplicity, but they did not renounce the world or isolate themselves from the people and their problems. On the contrary, most of them led a normal life, had wives and children, and took an active interest in the affairs of the community.¹

¹. The part which Bābā Hasān, Ḥamza Makhdūm and other Sūfīs played in
Sayyid 'Alî Hamadānī held the opinion that Muslims should limit their desires according to the dictates of religion, but they should not annihilate them like the Hindu Sādhūs or Muslim Faqīrs. He denounced the practice of crippling one's hands or feet, or unnecessarily inflicting bodily sufferings upon oneself. He believed in a balanced life, a golden mean.

The Pir lived in the Khānqāh, built and endowed for him by the princes and nobles, with his family and his professional followers who worshipped with him and were taught by him how to attain mystic experience. There was a simple initiation ceremony in which the disciple pledged devotion. After this he lived in close association with his Pir until he reached the higher stages of initiation when he might go out to teach his master's way (tariqa) and make new disciples. When the Pir died he was succeeded by a Khalīfa who stood high among the disciples for his moral, intellectual, and spiritual qualities. Sometimes hereditary principle was followed in making these appointments. The Khānqāh also had an Imam whose duty was to lead the prayers.

There were six main Sufi orders in medieval Kashmir. These were Qādirīya, Suhrawardiya, Kubraviya, Naqshabandiya, Nūrbakhshiya, and Rishī. The first five were introduced from Persia and Turkistan, but the order of the Rishīs was of indigenous origin. It was the political events of their time has already been described in previous chapters.

1. 'Alî Hamadānī, Zakhiratu'l-Mulūk, f. 42a.
2. Ibid., f. 41b.
3. The organisation of the khānqāhs in Kashmir was the same as in India, Persia, and Turkistan.
4. In the khānqāth of Jadibal, the professional followers lived with their families, and were supported by the income of the endowment. (Tuhfatu'l-Aḥbāb, p. 242 sqq.).
5. See Gibb, Mohammedanism, pp. 151-52, where the relations of the Pirs with their disciples is described. In Kashmir also similar conditions existed. The disciple looked upon his Pir as the deputy of God and the Prophet, and regarded absolute submission to him as essential. (See Isḥāq, Hilayatu'l-‘Arifīn, p. 12b, and also Tuhfatu'l-Aḥbāb, pp. 99, 129 sq.).
6. Isḥāq, Hilayatu'l-‘Arifīn, ff. 9a-b.
7. Rishī is a Sanskrit word meaning a saint, a sage, or an ascetic. According to local tradition of a legendary character, the founder of this order
founded by Nūru’d-Dīn who was born in the village of Kaimūh, two miles west of Bijbehāra, in 779/1377. His father was Shaikh Sālāru’d-Dīn, also a pious man, belonging to the family of the rulers of Kishtwār. Although an orthodox Muslim, Nūru’d-Dīn was much influenced in his ascetic outlook by the Hindu Sadhūs. Unlike Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī and Shamsu’d-Dīn, he preferred a life of retirement, and was accustomed to withdraw to caves for meditation and prayer. He renounced the world and its pleasures, left his wife and children, and gave up taking meat. In his last days, he at first subsisted only on one cup of milk daily, but towards the end, he took nothing else except water, and died at the age of 63 in 842/1438.2 He had a large number of disciples, the most prominent among whom were Bābā Naṣīru’d-Dīn, Bābā Bāmu’Dīn, Bābā Zainu’d-Dīn and Bābā Laṭīfū’Dīn. His tomb in Charār, twenty miles south-west of Srinagar, attracts thousands of people, both Hindus and Muslims, every year.

The tendency to asceticism became more and more pronounced among the Rishīs after the death of Nūru’d-Dīn, until from the sixteenth century onwards, disgusted by the greed and selfishness of the ruling class and the constant civil wars in the country, they completely cut themselves off from the world. They did not marry, abstained from meat, and subsisted on dry bread or wild fruits of the mountains. They lived away from human habitations, moving from place to place, and planting shady and fruit bearing trees for the benefit of the people.3 Unlike Nūru’d-Dīn and his disciples, the Rishīs of the later period were for the most part illiterate, and did not possess any knowledge of their religion. Nevertheless, they led a life of piety, self-denial, simplicity, and virtue. In the time of Akbar and Jahāngīr there were about 2,000 Rishīs in the Valley.4

3. Haft Iqlīm, f. 158a; Naṣīb, ff. 415a-17a; Tuzuk-i-Jahāngīrī, pp. 149-50.
4. Tuzuk-i-Jahāngīrī, ii, 149-50; Rāzī, Haft Iqlīm, f. 156a. The Rishīs were is supposed to be Khwāja Uways, Prophet Muḥammad’s contemporary, who lived in Yemen. (Knowles, A Dictionary of Kashmiri Proverbs and Sayings, p. 29).
The Şūfis played a very important role in spreading Islām in Kashmir. Moreover, since in Şūfism there was a marked tendency towards social equality, the Şūfis acted as a kind of bridge between the rich and the poor. The Ṣikr ceremonies possessed not merely a devotional aspect, but also served a social purpose, for on these occasions different classes of people gathered together, and all differences of wealth and poverty were forgotten.

The Şūfis always raised their voice against oppression and injustice. Nūru’d-Dīn Rishī, for example, took an officer to task for oppressing the peasants of a village. Similarly Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī never ceased exhorting the rulers to rule with justice and mildness. The just ruler, according to him, would be nearest to God on the Day of Judgement, while the severest punishment would be inflicted on the tyrant.

The Şūfis also played the role of social reformers. Thus it was under the influence of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī that Sulṭān Sikandar banned all intoxicants, sati, and other evil practices. Makhdūm Ḥamzā called upon the people to lead a virtuous life, pay the religious taxes, and acquire knowledge. He was once so angry with a drunkard that he hit him on the head with a stick which caused his death.

In spite of these benefits conferred by Şūfism, it also played a reactionary role. Owing to its emphasis on otherworldliness it popularised the philosophy of quietism and escapism which was best represented by the Rishīs of Kashmir. Moreover, by the admission of alien practices and ideas, it became debased. The Ziārats and khāngāhs with which the country was studded, became the centres of superstition and charlatanism. They began to be worshipped by the credulous masses who came there as pilgrims to beseech the aid of the saint. The saint worship still plays an important part in the life of a Kashmiri, who is being constantly exploited by the Pīrs and their disciples.

Muslims, but J. N. Sarkar has not corrected the mistake of Jarrett (A.A., ii, 353) who called them Brahmans. (See Tusuk-i-Jahāngiri, ii, 149 and n.).
1. Nasīḥu’d-Dīn, Nūr-nāma, f. 192b.
2. ‘Alī Hamadānī, Zakhīratu’l-Mulūk, ff. 65b-7b.
3. Iṣbāq, Ḥilāyatul-‘Ārifīn, f. 12a. 4. Ibid., f. 2b.
Merchants, Shop-keepers, Petty officials and Artisans

Kashmir's internal and external trade brought into existence a class of rich men who socially belonged to the same strata of society as the shop-keepers, and petty officials, but owing to their wealth they were able to associate with the kings and nobles, and sometimes took an active part in the affairs of the country. Thus Śrībhata and Tūṭa were the two merchants who were much respected by Sultān Sikandar.Khāja Ḥājī, who acted as the agent of Mīrzā Ḥaidar Dughlat, was also a merchant, and played an important role in the politics of his period. Under Ḥusain Shāh Chak, Fath Khwāja Bāqqā rose to become prime minister and was given the title of Khān-i-Zamān. His son, too, for a time enjoyed the confidence of the Sultān. The rich merchants lived in their fine houses situated on the Jehlam in Srinagar and Bārāmula. The shop-keepers, petty officials, and artisans resided in the more congested areas of the towns.

The Masses

These included peasants and artisans, boatmen, butchers, gardeners and other groups performing menial jobs. Originally Hindus, all of them had become Muslims by the time of Zainu'l-Ābidin. However, in spite of a change of religion, some of the features of the caste system clung to them. They retained their old caste rules and even their functions, and intermarriages between the different groups were exceptions rather than the rule. At the lowest rung of the ladder stood the canḍālas, ḍombas and camārs. The canḍālas acted as watchmen and performed menial jobs like handling the bodies of persons executed or killed in war. They also carried on agriculture, but being poor, they sometimes took to thieving. The ḍombas too were poor, and lived by stealing, and were morally lax. However, they were good soldiers and were enlisted in the army. The camārs, who came to

1. Jonar. (Bo. ed.), No. 776.
2. Tuzuk-i-Jahāngiri, ii, 134.
3. The Sayyid families which had taken to agriculture were regarded as superior by the villagers.
5. Ibid., p. 101.
6. Jonar., 95; Sriv. 284, 313.
Kashmir in the time of the Sultāns, performed the work of taking out the hides of dead animals. The shepherds of the Valley were known as chaupāns and formed a distinct group. But they intermarried with the galawāns. Slavery, which played such an important part in the social and political life of medieval Islām, did not exist on any large scale in Kashmir. It is true that some of the Sultāns employed slaves among whom a few rose to occupy high positions in the state; but there is no evidence in the chronicles to suggest that the merchants and the nobles also kept slaves. The institution of slavery was, in fact, looked upon with abhorrence by the Kashmiris.

Position of Women

The position of women was the same as that of their sisters in Persia, Turkistān and India. The women of the upper classes lived in the seclusion of their houses. But those belonging to the lower classes, both in the towns and in the villages, could not afford the luxury of staying within the four walls of their houses, and moved about freely without a veil, doing out-door work, helping their husbands in the fields, in the gardens, or on the river.

As regards education it seems to have been widely spread among the well-to-do ladies, who were very cultured. They opened schools, built monasteries and mosques, and took an active interest in public affairs as is evident from the careers of Sūra, Ḥayāt Khātūn, Gul Khātūn and Habbā Khātūn. The women of the lower classes, however, were illiterate, for they had neither the leisure to attend schools nor the means to employ private tutors. But as the life of Habbā Khātūn, the queen of Yūsuf Shāh, shows that opportunities were not wanting even for peasant girls who were keen to acquire knowledge.

Marriages were arranged, as at present, by parents. Polygamy was practised, but there is no evidence to suggest the existence of concubinage. Although prostitution was prevalent, yet with the exception

3. Lawrence, Valley, p. 312.
4. H.M., f. 110a. For the dress under the Rājās, see Ray, Early History and Culture of Kashmir, pp. 208-10.
of Ḥaidar Shāh and Ḥasan Shāh, who were fond of the society of women, the other Sultāns for the most part led a moral life and did not exceed the legally prescribed limit of four wives. The court life under the Sultāns was free from those sexual perversities and orgies of debauchery which had been so prominent a feature of the later period of Hindu rule.

**Dress**

The dress of the upper classes was the same as that of the rich in Arabia, Persia, and Turkistān. It seems to have been introduced by Sayyid 'Alī Hamadānī in the reign of Sultan Quṭbu’d-Dīn, and by the time of Sultan Sikandar even the Brahmans had begun to adopt it. The lower portion of the body was covered with wide trousers (sarāwil) of Persian origin. The upper portion had a chemise (qamīṣ) with full sleeves. Over this was a short vest (Ṣadīrī). The outer robe was called chōghā, and descended to the ankles. It had long, loose sleeves, and round the waist was a girdle. The head-dress consisted of a small close-fitting cap covered with a cloth. This formed the turban. The turbans worn by the Qāzīs and 'Ulamā were of black colour. On festive occasions silk dresses were worn, and silk robes were bestowed as khil’ats by the Sultāns on their courtiers. The Sultāns and the nobles also wore ornaments.

The dress of the lower classes, despite foreign influence, has not changed since the medieval times. Men put on a close fitting skull cap over their shaven heads. They did not wear drawers, but covered their bodies with a long, loose, large-sleeved woollen tunic, called phairan after the Persian pīrahān, open from the neck to the waist, and falling down to the ankles with a belt round the waist. The foot-wear

1. See p. 56, supra.
3. Nasīb, f. 423a. There is also a reference on the same folio to a kurta of skin.
4. B.S., ff. 132b, 139b, refers to a Qabā.
5. Sīrīv., p. 265.
6. Ibid., pp. 214, 245, 265.
8. Sīrīv., p. 207.
10. Ibid., pp. 207, 214, 330.
11. Tuzuk-i-Jahāngirī, ii, 148. The phairan may have come from Khursosān, and adapted from the jubba (See Dozy, *Dictionnaire de Noms des Vetements*
consisted of shoes made of grass.\(^1\) The dress of the women was the same except that they had a fillet on the forehead, and above it was a black mantilla which fell from the head over the shoulders to the legs. The head dress of the Muslim women is called *kasābā*, while that of the Hindu women is known as *tarangā*, which is tied to a hanging bonnet falling to the heels from behind.\(^2\) Owing to the cold climate of the Valley the Kashmiris took their bath at long intervals; and on account of poverty they did not possess more than one gown, which they used until it was worn out, and it was only then that they changed for a new one.\(^3\)

**Diet (Food and Drink)**

Rice was, as it is today, the staple food of the Kashmiris, and that is why when the paddy crop failed, it led to famine. Rice was cooked in a variety of ways. Generally it was boiled and then eaten, and some of it was kept overnight to be taken in the morning.\(^4\) Under Persian influence various kinds of *pilāvs*, like *zard-pilāv*, *turch-pilāv*, and *shulla-pilāv*, were introduced.\(^5\) Very little wheat was consumed, because it was not much grown in the country.\(^6\) Barley was regarded as a simple food, fit only for the poor, or for those who had renounced the world.\(^7\) Meat, fish, eggs, and vegetables had since ancient times been the most important articles of Kashmiri diet, and continued to be so under the Muslims.\(^8\) Pork was eaten by a large section of the

---

7. *Srīv., p. 276; also Stein, BK. viii, No. 1864 and n. 8. Yule, *Marco Polo*, i, 166; Stein, BK. viii, Nos. 1866-7; *A.A., ii, 353. Abū Dulaf Mis'ar, who was attached to the court of the Šāmānids of Būkhārā and visited Kashmir towards the end of the 10th century, says that Kashmiris ate wheat and fish, but no eggs, nor did they cut the neck of the animals. (G. Ferraud, *Relations de Voyages*, p. 89).*
Hindus in the pre-Islamic period, but it is not known if it was taken under the Sultāns as well. The flesh of fowl, ram, goat, and various birds was commonly eaten. Horse's meat was also taken with relish. Beef was introduced with the establishment of Muslim rule. Still, until the time of Sultān Ḥasan Shāh, there were many Muslims who abstained from beef. But gradually beef dishes became popular, so that sometimes even Hindus partook of them. There was a special market in Srinagar where beef was sold. Vegetables were dried up and preserved. A favourite dish of the Kashmirīs was to cook fowl and brinjals together. A decoction of meat with vetches and soups of raisin and jujube were also prepared. Saffron and various kinds of spices formed important ingredients in the Kashmirī cooking.

Fruits were grown in such abundance that they were rarely bought or sold. The owner of a garden and the man who had no garden were all alike, for the gardens had no walls, and no one was prevented from picking the fruits. Pears, cherries, plums, apricots, grapes, apples, and peaches were the principal fruits that were eaten. Mulberry was cultivated for its silk and so its fruit was not taken. Some fruits like jujube, which had medicinal qualities, were likewise preserved.

Drinking of wine was popular although it was frowned upon by the orthodox. As the Hindu religion specially recommended the use of wine on ceremonial occasions, it was not an uncommon sight to see laymen and Brahman priests alike in a state of drunkenness during Hindu festivals. The Muslims, who participated in these festivals, also freely partook of wine. Most of the Sultāns and their nobles too drank

---

1. Stein, BK. vii, No. 1149.
2. These dishes were also popular in pre-Islamic Kashmir. (See I.H.C. (1949), p. 134).
3. Taḏkira-i-Multa 'Ali Raina, f. 543a; Isbāq, Ḥilayatu'l-'Ārifīn, ff. 65b-6a.
5. Šrīv., p. 235.
6. Ibid.
8. Šrīv., p. 140.
10. Ibid.
13. Šrīv., pp. 124, 126.
wine.¹ Zainu’l-‘Abidin took it in moderation, but Ḥaidar Shāh was a confirmed drunkard, and as a result neglected his state duties. Ḥasan Shāh was in the habit of arranging drinking parties in his palace, or in the boats on the Jehlam, and used to get drunk on these occasions.² Besides alcohol, the use of other intoxicants like bhang and opium was also common.³ In addition, butter-milk and various kinds of sherbets were taken. The use of betel-leaves, so common under the Rājās, does not find any mention in the chronicles of the Muslim period.

Pastimes

Among the indoor games dice and chess were popular.⁴ Among the outdoor games polo (Persian, chawgān), which was probably introduced into Kashmir from Ladākh, was much indulged in both by the Sultāns and by the nobles. Sultān ‘Alī Shāh was very fond of the game, and it was while playing it that he was mortally wounded. Hunting was another favourite outdoor pastime of the upper classes.⁵ Sultān Shihābu’d-Dīn enjoyed hunting lions, and on one occasion he nearly lost his life while trying to kill one with his sword.⁶ Stags, patridges, deer, and leopards also offered sport.⁷ Falconry and hawking were probably introduced from Persia.⁸ The Kashmīris derived great pleasure, sitting in their skiffs and watching their hawks strike the wild-fowl or some other bird in mid-air, and fly back with the prey.⁹ Besides these, other outdoor sports which were practised were archery, fencing, and javelin-throwing.

1. Once Mīr Shīh, a courtier of Zainu’l-‘Abidin, got drunk and killed his wife. (Jonar., p. 80).
2. Śrīv., pp. 232, 245.
3. Ishāq, Hilayatu’l-‘Ārifin, f. 2b.
4. Śuka, p. 338.
6. Jonar., (Bo. ed.), Nos. 516 sqq. Jonar. uses the word Simha which means a lion. But I have not been able to identify Kharga, the place where Shihābu’d-Dīn hunted. It must have been situated in the forests at the foot of the outer hills of Kashmir.
The game which the common people played was hockey. Another form of their recreation was that on Fridays the youth of one section of the city of Srinagar would challenge those of another section. After the place and hour had been fixed, both the sides would assemble with sticks and slings, and a free fight would ensue. This would lead to broken heads and limbs, and even deaths.

The Kashmīrī acrobats and jugglers possessed great skill, and they amused the people by their performance. From the time of Zainu'l-ʿĀbidīn the display of fireworks was a source of great enjoyment to the people. In spite of the ban by the Shariʿa, music was very popular with the Kashmīrīs, and offered both pleasure and diversion. Sultān Zainu'l-ʿĀbidīn initiated the practice of holding occasional concerts and musical events in the boats on the Jehlam. Some of his successors were fond of holding convivial parties with their boon companions in which wine flowed freely, and dancing girls and musicians sang and danced.

**Houses**

The houses were built in the same style as we see them to-day in the towns and the villages. Owing to the abundance of wood and the constant earthquakes, houses of stone and brick were not constructed. They were two to four storeys high and sometimes even more. They were built of planks of timber laid on each other to form a square, their interstices being filled with clay. Near the forests the walls were formed of whole logs. The roofs, which were pointed to throw off snow, were formed of small planks fastened together with cords, and were covered with a layer of earth on which white and violet lilies and tulips were grown. This presented a lovely sight in spring. In the villages, near the lakes, the thatch in the dwellings of the poor was

4. A.A., ii, 353. 5. Ibid., 352.
7. Lawrence, pp. 249-50.
usually of rice straw or of reeds. The houses were ventilated with pretty, artistic, open-work instead of windows or glass. The lower storey was used for keeping cattle. In the second storey lived the family. The other floors were used for keeping household chattels. In the loft, formed by the roof, wood and grass were stored. Some of the houses had cellars. The houses of the rich were situated on the banks of the Jehlam and had beautiful gardens attached to them.

Social Intercourse between Hindus and Muslims

When Muslim saints and soldiers first set foot on the Kashmir soil, they were received in a friendly manner. The soldiers were employed by the kings in their armies, while the saints were given complete freedom to preach their religion. It was only when Islam began to make rapid progress that it aroused the hostility of the Brahmans, who found their traditional values being upset, and some of the basic assumptions on which Hindu society was based being challenged. However, in the course of time, realising the futility of opposition, they were compelled to adopt an attitude of tolerance and goodwill. These feelings were reciprocated by the Muslims. As a result, except for a communal clash which occurred in the reign of Hasan Shâh, the two communities lived for the most part peacefully and amicably throughout the Sultanate period. Intermarriages between Hindus and Muslims were common; and when the latter took Hindu wives, they allowed them to retain not only their Hindu names but also their faith. Hindus and Muslims visited each other's places of worship, and participated in each other's festivals. The Hindus respected Muslim saints, while the Muslims looked upon Hindu Sâdhûs with reverence. Muslim mystics mixed freely with Hindu Yôgis and held discussions with them.

1. Ibid. 2. Palsaert, Remonstrantie, p. 34. 3. A.A., ii, 352. 4. B.S., f. 164a. 5. Bernier, Travels, pp. 397-8; Tuzuk-i-Jahângiri, ii, 134. 6. See p. 238, infra. 7. The fact that some of the queens did not change their names on marriage to the Sultân, shows that they retained their religious beliefs as well. Marriages between Hindus and Muslims were also common in Rajaurî, Ladåkh and Baltistân. (See Tuzuk-i-Jahângiri, ii, 181; and I.A., xxxvii, p. 188). 8. The biographies of saints are full of references to such discussions.
The mystic songs of Lallā Ded and Nūru’d-Dīn Rishī stirred the souls of Hindus and Muslims alike to their deepest depths.

_Spread of Islām_

Buddhism flourished in Kashmir from the reign of Aśoka to the end of the Kuṣana dynasty. But its decline began with the accession of the Gonanda dynasty, and when Hiuen Tsiang visited the Valley (circ. 631-33), he found that it had very considerably lost ground.\(^1\) Despite this Buddhism continued to exist peacefully side by side with Hinduism, and Hindu rulers who endowed shrines of Śiva and Viṣṇu, with equal zeal made foundations of Buddhist Stūpas and Vihāras.\(^2\) It is probably because of this that when Ou-k’ong visited Kashmir in the middle of the eighth century (759-63), he got the impression that Buddhism was in a flourishing state,\(^3\) though it was rapidly being replaced by Śaiva worship, which had always occupied the first place among the Hindu cults of the Valley.\(^4\) Thus when Islām began to spread in Kashmir, it had to encounter the resistance not so much of Buddhism as of Śaivism.

Muslim traders and soldiers of fortune began to enter Kashmir from an early date. Kalhana records that Lalitāditya’s son and successor Vajrāditya “sold many men to the _mlecchas_, and introduced into the country practices which befitted the _mlecchas_”.\(^5\) Later, Harṣa employed Turkish soldiers, and, under Muslim influence, adopted elaborate fashions in dress and ornaments.\(^6\) During the reign of Bhikṣācara (1120-21) Muslim soldiers were again employed and sent to attack Sussala in Lohara.\(^7\) From the accounts of Marco Polo, the Venetian traveller, it appears that already by the end of the thirteenth century there was a colony of Muslims in Kashmir, for he says that the people of the Valley do not kill animals, but that, if they want to eat meat, they get the Saracens, who dwell among them, to play the butcher.\(^8\)

1. Stein, i, Intro., p. 87.
2. Ibid., p. 9.
3. Ibid., ii, 358.
4. Ibid., i, Intro., p. 8.
5. Stein, BK. iv, No. 397.
6. Ibid., BK. vii, No. 1149; Ibid., i, Intro., p. 112.
7. Ibid., BK. viii, Nos. 885-6.
8. Yule, _Marco Polo_, i, 176-7.
These "Saracens" must have been either emigrants from Turkistān or Hindus converted to Islām by the pietist missionaries from India and Central Asia.

The saint missionaries came in the wake of traders and adventurers, and it is they who were responsible for introducing Islām into the Valley. But unfortunately the chronicles do not throw any light on their activities. The first Şūfī of whom we have any record to have entered Kashmir, was Bulbul Shāh, who succeeded in converting Riāchana. The conversion of the ruler of the land was an important event, for it increased the prestige of Islām and led to the acceptance of the new faith by some of the nobles and, according to one tradition, by 10,000 inhabitants of the Valley. After Bulbul Shāh came other Şūfīs, but the most prominent among them was Sayyid ʿAlī Hamadānī who, by his learning, piety and devotion, is said to have made 37,000 converts to Islām.\textsuperscript{1} His work was continued by his disciples and his son Muḥammad Hamadānī, and by Nūru’d-Dīn Rishī and his disciples. Those who subsequently played an important role in the work of proselytisation were Shamsu’d-Dīn, Ḥamzā Makhdūm, Dā’ūd Khākī, and Sayyid Jamālu’d-Dīn Bukhārī. Stein says that the adoption of Islām by the great mass of the population of Kashmir had become an accomplished fact during the latter half of the fourteenth century,\textsuperscript{2} but a study of the chronicles shows that Muslims were still a minority in the time of Nūru’d-Dīn Rishī.\textsuperscript{3} In reality, it was not until the end of the fifteenth century that a majority of the inhabitants of the Valley had embraced Islām.

So far as the rulers of Kashmir were concerned, although they held the saints in great respect and built and endowed mosques and hospices for them, they kept aloof from their missionary activities. In fact, the saints themselves very seldom solicited state co-operation, and that is why in the accounts of their life and work rarely any reference is made to the Sulṭāns.

The only Sulṭān who took keen interest in the work of proselytisation was Sikandar. However, much of his work was undone by

\begin{itemize}
  \item \textsuperscript{1} Saʿādat, \textit{Bulbul Shāh}, pp. 7, 23.
  \item \textsuperscript{2} Stein, \textit{I}, Intro., 130.
  \item \textsuperscript{3} Nasīb, \textit{f.} 205a.
\end{itemize}
Zainu’l-‘Abidin, who permitted the temples destroyed by his father to be rebuilt, recalled the Brahmans who had fled to India, and allowed those who had changed their religion under compulsion to revert to their old faith. The successors of Zainu’l-‘Abidin followed his liberal policy. The result was that Hinduism not only regained some of its lost position, but it even became militant. This provoked a reaction among a section of the Muslims, who resented the reconversion of their co-religionists to Hinduism and their adoption of non-Muslim practices.1 The leader of the reaction was Shamsu’d-Dīn, the founder of the Nūrbakhshīya sect in the Valley. But his views were disliked by both Sultān Muḥammad Shāh and his minister Sayyid Muḥammad,2 who always protected the Hindus, whenever they were harassed by him or by his followers. It was because Shamsu’d-Dīn was continuously opposed by Sayyid Muḥammad that he got disgusted and went away to Bālīstān.3 But after the fall of Sayyid Muḥammad, when Mūsā Raina became prime minister, Shamsu’d-Dīn returned to the Valley. But like Muḥammad Shāh, Fath Shāh, who was now king, also did not approve of his ideals and methods. Once, while the Hindus were busy celebrating the Spring festival on the Koh-i-Mārān, Shamsu’d-Dīn proceeded there with his followers and put a stop to the festivities on the ground that Muslims were participating in the religious ceremonies, while men and women in general were freely drinking wine and indulging in immoral practices. When next morning the Hindus complained to Fath Shāh of Shamsu’d-Dīn’s behaviour, he was so angry that he wanted to put him to death, but was dissuaded by his counsellors.4 Despite Fath Shāh’s liberal policy Shamsu’d-Dīn, under the patronage of Mūsā Raina, continued his activities, which occasionally hurt the religious susceptibilities of the non-Muslims. However, after the fall of Mūsā Raina until the end of the Sultanate, the Hindus lived in peace, enjoying complete freedom to practice their religion.

Thus the government under the Sultāns pursued, for the most part.

1. Tuḥfatul-‘Abbāb, pp. 156, 187. The accounts of saints are full of examples of Muslims adopting non-Muslim practices.
2. Ibid., p. 63.
3. Ibid., p. 63 sqq.
4. Ibid., pp. 157-60.
a policy of non-interference in religious matters, and the success of Islam in the Valley was mainly due to the efforts of the Sufis. But it must be remembered that the Sufis alone would not have been able to achieve much if it had not been for certain objective conditions existing in the Valley. Kalhana's account shows that social and political disintegration had started in Kashmir from the beginning of the eleventh century. But at the same time anarchy seems to have prevailed in the religious sphere as well. There was a tendency in Hinduism during this period towards the growth of sectarianism. The priests were represented by uneducated temple minstrels, while Saivism, to which a majority of the inhabitants of the Valley were attached, had degenerated into a mass of superstitions and rituals, and thus could no longer meet the spiritual demands of the people. Nor could Buddhism, as practised in those days, offer any satisfaction. On the other hand Islam, as introduced by the great Sufi saints, was a simple monotheistic creed, free from ceremonials, caste, and priesthood. It thus appealed to the people, and won converts easily. The dissatisfaction of Rishana with the Buddhist and Hindu beliefs and practices is typical of the spiritual unrest that had affected the minds of many in the country. Later, Lalā Ded raised her voice against idolatry, superstition, and lack of true spiritual values, but her efforts were wrecked on the rock of Brahman conservatism and dogmatism.

Another factor which helped the spread of Islam in the Valley, was the laxity of caste rules. A rigid caste system acts as a strong cohesive force, and thus serves as a powerful defence mechanism against the infiltration of foreign ideas. But in Kashmir, under Buddhist influence, there had been a relaxation of caste rules, and, as a result, the power of resistance of the Hindu society had been undermined. Islam, therefore, did not have to face the same degree of opposition there as it did in other parts of India, where the caste rules continued to be rigid, and the society was able to set up barriers against external influences. These facts go to explain why Islam's success in Kashmir

3. Kalhana's *Rājatarangini* is full of examples of the laxity of caste system in Kashmir.
was much more rapid and complete than in any other part of this sub-continent.

**Influence of Islām on Hindus**

The influence of Islām began to be felt in Kashmir from about the middle of the eighth century, long before the establishment of Muslim rule in the country. But with the foundation of the Sultanate and the influx of a large number of Persians and Turks, Hindu society began to be affected by greater and more profound changes. "As the wind destroys the trees and the locusts the shālī crop, so did the Yavanas destroy the usages of Kashmīra," and that "the kingdom of Kashmīra was polluted by the evil practices of the mlecchas," wrote Jonarāja. Similarly Śrīvara complained of the abolition of old practices and their substitution by new ones. He even went to the extent of saying that many of the misfortunes of the people of Kashmīr were due to the changes in manners and customs. But despite these denunciations and protests, Hindu society could not be prevented from assimilating foreign ideas and practices. It was due to these influences that the Hindus began to adopt Muslim manners and dress, and some of them even began to take beef. It was also the effect of Islāmic impact that caste rules began to weaken. Thus Śrīvara, writing in the time of Muḥammad Shāh, observed that men belonging to the four castes had lately adopted blameable practices, and had given up the performance of prescribed ceremonies. In the course of time, with the exception of the Brahman caste, all the castes disappeared from Hindu society.

The influence of Islām can also be discerned on Advaita Śaivism, as represented by the teachings of Lallā Ded. She was a famous Yōginī of Kashmīr who lived in the fourteenth century. She was greatly perturbed by the formalism of Śaivite beliefs and practices, by religious conflicts and the multiplication of sects. It was at this time that she

2. Ibid., p. 59.
3. Ibid., p. 67.
4. Śrīv., p. 235, 319.
5. Ibid., p. 320.
came into contact with Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī and Nūru’d-Dīn Rishī and learned of the doctrines of Ḥasan and Ṣūfism. It was under the influence of Islamic ideas that she denounced the caste system, and criticised idolatry as a useless and even silly ‘work’. Although she regarded the world as an illusion, and longed for freedom from the desire for existence, yet there is evidence of Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī’s influence when she says that it is not necessary for a person to become a hermit in order to achieve the absorption of the Individual Self into the Supreme, but that even a householder can obtain ultimate Release provided he performed his religious and secular duties without any thought of gain or profit. Furthermore, it was from the Ṣūfis that she learned to use words with a plain and esoteric meaning. From them also she imbibed the doctrine of Divine Love, and, like them, she employed the word “Beloved” to denote the Godhead. There also appears an echo of Ṣūfism in the mystic ecstasy that she experiences, and in her allegory of Awakening the Beloved. Thus she says:

“When the moonlight ended with the dawn,
Mind of her Self with illusion mad
Lallā to the love of God had drawn,
Soothing the pain that had made him sad:
Cried to her Beloved: It is I,
Lallā, Lallā, that awakens Thee:
Buried in the crystal lake doth lie
All the defilement that darkened me.”

Influence of Hinduism on Ḥasan

While Ḥasan brought about great changes in Hindu society in Kashmir, it itself underwent a transformation in the course of time. This was because, although the people of Kashmir changed their religion, they did not make a complete break with the past, but carried with them many of their old beliefs and practices to the new faith. Thus while they celebrated the Muslim festivals of ‘Īdul-Fitr and

1. Ibid., pp. 2-3.
3. Temple, Word of Lallā, pp. 165, 191, 200-2. For the ideas of ‘Alī Hamadānī on the same subject, see his Zakhīratul-Mulūk II. 41a sqq.
5. Ibid., pp. 195-6.
they did not cease to participate in the Hindu festivals of Gaṅa-cakra, Caitra, Vith-trawah and Śrīpañcamī. They also continued to regard the Hindu places of worship as sacred, and instances were not wanting when they even indulged in idol worship. Similarly, they retained the old superstitions that seeing of a comet, hearing of the barking of dogs, hooting of owls during the day, and crossing of the path by a serpent all foreboded disaster. It is true that under the impact of Islām the rigours of the caste system were reduced, but, as has already been mentioned, the converts were reluctant to give up their customs, their caste rules regarding marriage, and sometimes even their caste functions.

The Sultāns of Kashmir, though of foreign origin, were not far behind their Muslim subjects in assimilating Hindu beliefs and usages. This was, of course, inevitable, for they lived surrounded by a population a majority of which was Hindu at least for a hundred years after the establishment of the Sultanate. Moreover, most of the Sultāns had Hindu wives who, even after their conversion to Islām, clung to their customs and who could not fail to influence their royal consorts and their children. Thus the Sultāns, like their Muslim subjects, participated in Hindu festivals, and some of them even visited temples to beseech the aid of the gods. They believed in witchcraft; and, in order to avert famine and other calamities, they performed sacrifices and bestowed grants on the Brahmans. (Quṭbu’d-Dīn was convinced that the birth of a son to his queen was due to the blessings of a Brahman Yōgī); and, like the Hindu Kings of Kashmir, they performed the homa ceremony at the time of the coronation at which the Shaikhū’l-Islām, instead of the Brahman priest, and the chief minister applied a ḥikā

1. See pp. 87-8, supra.
3. See p. 158, supra.
4. See p. 56, supra. Even in the time of Dāūd Khākī (1521-85) there were instances of Muslims worshipping idols. (See his Aṣār’ul-Abrār, f. 276a).
5. Śrīv., pp. 153, 262.
7. Jonar., p. 43.
8. Ibid., p. 53.
(a mark on the forehead) to the ruler’s forehead and made offerings of gold and flower.¹

So far as Şûfism in Kashmir, as introduced by the followers of the great orders, is concerned, it did not come under the influence of Advaita Śaivism in its doctrinal aspect. The evolution of Islamic mysticism into a well-developed system of thought and way of life had been achieved by the middle of the thirteenth century; and the ideas, if any, which it borrowed from Buddhist and Vedāntic philosophy, it did so in countries outside Kashmir.² Moreover, the founders and chief exponents of the Qâdirî, Kubrâvi, Suhrawardî, and Naqshbandî Orders in the Valley were in general orthodox in outlook, adhering to Islamic laws and practices and denouncing antinomianism and incarnationist tendencies.³ They also frowned upon the extreme asceticism which sanctioned celibacy, the annihilation of all desires, self-torture, and an ivory-tower existence. But in spite of their attempts to maintain high Islamic ideals, Şûfism in Kashmir, as elsewhere, did in the end compromise with many of the traditional practices which were openly polytheistic. Popular Islâm in Kashmir thus became diluted with foreign elements, and this character it has retained until to-day.

Nevertheless, it was not the Şûfis but the Rishis of Kashmir who were the true spiritual heirs of the Hindu ascetics. Like the latter, the Rishis practiced celibacy, inflicted bodily sufferings upon themselves, regarded this world as an illusion and withdrew from it. In their pantheistic beliefs also they were influenced by Advaita Śaivism. Moreover, unlike the Şûfis, instead of participating in congregational prayers and Zikr ceremonies, they endeavoured to achieve the absorption of the Self into the Absolute by meditating alone in caves or jungles, away from human habitations.

1. Śrīv., p. 207. On the occasion of Hâlord Shâh’s coronation the Treasurer, Hasan, performed these ceremonies.
3. Sayyid ‘Ali Hamadânî believed in transcendental monotheism of Islam and rejected pantheism. This is quite clear from a study of his Zakhîratu’l-Mulûk and other works.
TRADE

Trade in medieval times played, as it does to-day, an important part in Kashmir's economic life. It was a source of considerable revenue to the state; it stimulated manufactures; and it gave employment to a large number of people. Moreover, it brought wealth to the Kashmiri merchants whose activities were not confined to the Valley alone, but extended as far afield as Bengal, the Coromandel Coast, Lhasā, Peking, Persia, and Central Asia.

Internal Trade

This consisted in articles both imported and produced in the country. Among the first salt was very important, because Kashmir did not produce any and depended entirely on supplies from outside. Then there were the luxury goods which would be described later. Among the articles produced in the Valley were shawls, silks, coarse woollen goods, and various other products of its handicrafts. Trade in all these articles was done by private merchants. But the trade in grain was carried on both by the state and the private traders. The state held large stocks of rice so that, whenever there was a rise in prices due to scarcity or speculation, it was brought into the market, thus bringing the prices down to their normal levels.\(^1\) Besides, the state was opposed to the cornering of grain, and the private traders had to sell it at a small profit.\(^2\) Because of these restrictions, merchants did not indulge in large scale transactions in grain. Control over the prices of other commodities was also regulated by monthly notifications.\(^3\) This was done to check black-marketing. However, it appears that these controls did not materially hinder the growth of trade, for the Kashmiri merchants in medieval times were quite prosperous.\(^4\) The real obstacles to both internal and external trade were civil wars and foreign invasions.\(^5\)

According to Mīrzā Ḥaidar the markets and streets of Srinagar were all paved with hewn stones. In the markets only drapers and

1. See p. 86, supra.  \hspace{0.5cm} 2. T.A., iii, 436.  \hspace{0.5cm} 3. Ibid.
4. Tuzuk-i-Jahāngīrī, ii, 147.
5. Śrv., pp. 327, 334. In the civil war between Muḥammad Shāh and Fatḥ Shāh the merchants suffered a great deal.
retail dealers were to be found. But tradesmen like the grocers, druggists, bear-sellers, and bakers did business in their own houses.\(^1\) This was the practice in all the towns of Kashmir until the coming of the Mughals, when the system gradually underwent some change, and all kinds of tradesmen began to transact business in the market, although, as Abū'īl-Fazl says, most of the selling and buying was still carried on by them in their own houses.\(^2\)

**Conveyance**

The ordinary people moved about from place to place on foot, while the rich rode on horses, palanquins or litters.\(^3\) But the most common form of conveyance was by boat, which was also the chief mode of transporting goods from one place to another. To places not situated on the rivers, goods were carried by men or on ponies along narrow tracks, for there were no roads fit for wheeled traffic. In fact, in ancient and medieval times carriages were things unknown to the people of the Valley.\(^4\) The rivers were spanned by bridges, constructed of deodar wood, or by rope-bridges, generally formed of three cables made of twisted twigs. These rope-bridges were only meant for foot traffic, and animals had to be carried across them on men's backs.\(^5\) Besides the rope-bridges, there were also bridges of timber, constructed according to the cantilever principle. These permanent bridges were introduced with the advent of Muslim rule, for under the Rājās only boat-bridges existed.\(^6\) However, the use of the latter was not entirely given up by the Sulṭāns, because they could be easily broken up at the approach of the enemy. Sharafu'd-Dīn Yazdī in his Ṣafar-nāma notices the existence of such bridges across the Jehlām.\(^7\)

**External trade:** *Trade routes*

Although Kashmir was enclosed on all sides by huge mountains, she maintained close trade relations with the neighbouring countries. Her merchants were scattered over the different parts of Asia, and carried on an extensive trade, having establishments at Patna, Banāras.

Lhasā, Kathmandu, Sining, Peking, and in the towns of Bengal, the Punjab, Bhutān, Khurāsān, Turkistān and on the Coromandel Coast.

Kashmir's trade with the Punjab was carried on through the passes in the Pir Panjāl, while much of the trade of the Punjab with Ladākh, Baltistān, and Eastern Turkistān passed through Kashmir. The town of Leh in Ladākh was the chief commercial depot of Kashmir's import and export trade with Tibet, Turkistān, and China. Goods between Kashmir and Leh were conducted through the Zoji-Lā by horses in winter because of the pass being covered with snow, and by men in summer. From Srinagar to Leh, if the conveyance was by men only, it took a month or a little more.

Merchants who intended going to Yarkand stayed in Leh to make preparations for the journey by providing themselves with horses, provisions, and servants. From Ladākh their route lay through Sabu, Akhkan and Chou-jangal (great jungle), and thence to the pass of Karakoram. This was the road pursued by travellers in winter when there were no floods; but during summer, owing to the floods, they travelled through the Nubra country. After crossing the Karakoram the caravans arrived in Yarkand which was an important commercial centre and where routes from Ladākh, Tibet, China, Khotan, and India were joined by those leading to Kāshghar. From Yarkand some of the caravans proceeded to Kāshghar and thence to Samarkand and Bukhārā, while others set out towards China. The period taken by them to reach China from Kashmir was three months.

There was also another route which connected Kashmir with Eastern Turkistān. This passed through Baltistān and across the high glacier-crowned Karakoram main range beyond it. This route was very difficult compared to that via Ladākh, because it led along precipices

1. Wessel, Early Jesuit Travellers in Central Asia, p. 150.
2. I.A., 1908, p. 192.
5. Stein Khotan, i, 88; Moorcroft, Travels in Kashmir, i, 346.
and across the great glaciers. It was only followed when the Ladākh route had to be abandoned owing to political troubles.\(^1\)

Communication between Kashmir and Transoxiana was also maintained through Gilgit. From Gilgit or Chitrāl the caravans crossed the Hindu Kush into Vakhān, and then after crossing the Pamir and the river Oxus, they reached Transoxiana.\(^2\) Communication between Kashmir and Persia existed through the Punjab which had close trade relations with the latter.\(^3\)

Kashmiri merchants who desired to carry their goods to Tibet or Nepal, proceeded from Leh to Kuti at the head of the pass. From Kuti some went to Tibet and thence to Sining and even to Peking, for much of Tibet’s trade with China was conducted by the Kashmiris, who had their establishments at Lhasā and other principal towns of the country.\(^4\) Others went to Kāthmāndu and thence by the Valley of Nepal to Patna.\(^5\) Kashmiri merchants had their shops and offices in the town of Kāthmāndu, and they played an important part in the trade between Bengal, Nepal, and Tibet.\(^6\)

**Imports**

Salt and shawl-wool were the most important items of import. Most of the salt came from the Punjab via the Pīr Panjāl route,\(^7\) but some also was brought from Chan-thān via Ladākh. During the time of war, when the trade routes were not safe, the import of salt became difficult, and this caused great hardship to the people.\(^8\)

Shawl-wool was imported from Rodok and Chan-thān,\(^9\) as well as from Ladākh and Yārqand.\(^10\) According to an ancient agreement Tibet’s

---

2. Ḵudādud’-‘Ālam, pp. 254, 363-4.
3. 20,000 camels passed yearly by Lāhore to Persia, (J.P.H.S., i, No. 2, p. 116).
4. Markham, Mission of Bogle to Tibet, pp. liv, 125.
5. Ibid.
7. Asvāru’l-Abnar, ff. 122a, 123a; Tuzuk-i-Jahāngirī, ii, 147; Lawrence, Valley, p. 393.
8. Srīv., p. 327.
9. Two dependencies of Tibet lying to the east and south-east of Tibet.
shawl-wool was exported only to Ladakh, and similarly by ancient custom and engagements, its export from Ladakh was confined to Kashmir alone. All attempts to convey it to other countries were punished by confiscation. The shawl-wool was very important for Kashmir, for upon it depended the livelihood of its weavers and the prosperity of its merchants.

In addition to shawl-wool, Tibet exported to Kashmir gold and musk, while Ladakh exported woollen cloth which was bought and sold by the Ladakhi merchants. The Punjab supplied Kashmir, besides salt, morocco leather, broad-cloth, embroidered cloth, and lac. Some of these articles were sent on to Ladakh and Yarkand through Kashmir. From Gilgit and Baltistan were brought silk-worm eggs. From Khotan was imported Yashab (oriental jade) for which it had always been famous and the chief source of supply to the various countries of the East. Khotan was also famous for its silks, carpets, paper, pottery, brass and copper vessels, and these were exported to Kashmir. Agate, opal, turquoise, and other kinds of precious stones were imported from Badakhshan, Bukhara, and Yarkand. The last also supplied Kashmir, and through it to Northern India, cloth, felt of wool, and silks, well-known for their durability and their brilliant colours. Kashghar exported to Kashmir musk and silk. From ‘Iraq and Turkistan came horses, for the Kashmiri breed was of a poor quality:

1. Moorcroft, Travels, i, 347.
2. J.R.A.S., vii, p. 291. We do not know the quantity of shawl-wool imported during our period. But in the time of Moorcroft about 800 horse-loads were imported annually, each horse-load weighing about 28 turaks.
3. Markham, Mission of Bogle to Tibet, p. 121.
7. Abel-Remusat, Histoire de la Ville de Khotan, pp. 119 sqq. describes in detail the qualities etc. of Yashub. Also Stein, Khotan, i, pp. 132-3.
8. Ibid. Commercial relations between Kashmir and Khotan existed since ancient times. Coins of the Rajás and Sultáns of Kashmir have been discovered in Khotan. (J.A.S.B., lxviii, pp. 28, 32).
and from China the caravans brought musk, china-wood, rhubarb, swallow-wort, porcelain, silk, and tea.¹

Exports

The most important article of Kashmir's export trade was its shawls, which were sent to India, Central Asia, Tibet, and China, and, according to Abû'l-Fazl, "to every clime".² Other articles which Kashmir exported were musk, crystals, silks, woollen cloth, sugar, saffron, dried raisins, walnuts, paper, fresh fruits, timber, and horses.³ Besides exporting those which Kashmir herself produced, she also exported many articles which she obtained from other countries, for, as we have seen, she was a channel through which the Punjab maintained trade relations with Ladakh, Baltistan, eastern Turkistan and Tibet. Srinagar, the capital of Kashmir, was a great entrepôt where Turkish, Tibetan, Ladakhī, Baltī, Indian and Kashmirī merchants brushed shoulders with each other. These traders had not only their rest houses in Kashmir, but also their religious shrines.

Industries

Very scanty information exists in the Kashmir chronicles regarding the manufactures in the Valley during the Sultanate period. We only know that Sultan Zainu'l-Ābidîn encouraged the production of shawls, silks, paper, and glass, but no details about them are available. From the Mughal accounts it appears that shawls were manufactured on a large scale under the Sulṭāns, and were exported to various countries of the world.

Besides shawls, silk and paper, Kashmir also produced woollen

1. Bernier, Travels, pp. 425-6; Purchas His Pilgrimes, i, BK. iv, ch. 4, cited in J.P.H.S., vi, No. 2, p. 144, (Account of Finch). Use of tea in China can be traced to ancient times. Its use in the country in the middle of the ninth century is known from Arab sources. (Reinaud, Voyages, p. 40). It was introduced into Kashmir from China. According to a tradition it was Mîrza Haidar who first brought it to the Valley.
2. A.A., ii, 353.
3. Tuzuk-i-Jahângirî, i, 92-3; A.A. (Blochmann), pp. 68-9, 140; also Pelsaert, Remonstrantie, pp. 35-6. The town of Pâmpûr was the centre of saffron trade.
cloth which was then, as now, famous for its warmth and durability. Other articles manufactured were carpets, copper and brass vessels, and glass-ware.

The silk industry was an ancient one in Kashmir, but Zainu'l-Ābidin improved it by introducing better technique and better designs. Silk-worms were reared, and for their food the mulberry was cultivated and its fruit was not eaten by the people. The paper industry was for the first time established in Kashmir by Zainu'l-Ābidin. It was a state enterprise, and the Sultān took a special interest in it. The Kashmirī paper was of silky texture and glossy appearance, and was in great demand in India where it was used for purposes of painting and writing. Under the Mughals also Kashmir supplied the best quality of paper to India. George Forster, writing in 1783, says that “the Kashmirians fabricated the best writing paper of the East,” and that it was formerly “an article of extensive traffic.” The Kashmirī paper possessed the quality that once the ink had been washed off, it could again be used for writing.

The number of factories and of the workers employed in them has not been mentioned in the chronicles. We only know about the shawl industry that in the time of Akbar there were 2,000 factories for making shawls. And since under the Mughals the industry did not suffer any decline, this must have been the number under the Sultāns also. But no estimate can be made at the present stage of our knowledge regarding the number of factories producing other articles.

Agriculture

Agriculture in Kashmir had progressively declined during the last two centuries before the establishment of the Sultanate. The invasion of Zuljū had further accentuated the process. As a result, villages had become depopulated and large tracts of land turned barren. The Shāh Mīr

1. Firdausī mentions in his Shāh-nāma that the dress of the army of Yezdigird, the last Sassanian ruler of Persia, was made out of the woollen cloth from Kashmir. (J.R.A.S. (Bombay), xix, p. 241).
5. Rūzī, Haft Iqām, f. 156a.
6. Stein i, Intro., p. 130.
rulers did their best to check these tendencies and promote agriculture. They repopulated the villages, reduced the revenue demand, abolished many extra cesses, drained the marshes, and constructed new irrigation works. The result of their efforts was that the area under cultivation greatly increased, and the country became self-sufficient in foodstuffs. Under the Chaks also, except for a short period towards the end, agriculture remained in a flourishing state.¹

The spring crops raised were wheat, barley, pea, bean, and mustard. The autumn crops consisted of rice, műng, măsh, moṭha, and millet.² Rice, which has always been the staple food of the people, was grown extensively, but finer varieties were not much cultivated.³ Wheat, which was small in grain and black in colour, was produced on a restricted scale.⁴ Sugar-cane was grown around Mārtand.⁵ Saffron was cultivated on the Pāmpūr Karēwā,⁶ and some was also produced in the Paraspūr pargana.⁷ The total amount grown in the Valley varied between 400 and 500 Hindustānī maunds.⁸ The cost of one seer of saffron was ten rupees.⁹

It is generally held that the Mughal Emperors were the pioneers of gardening in Kashmîr. In reality, however, long before the Shālimār, Nishāt, and other Mughal gardens were constructed, the Shāh Mīr rulers had already laid out beautiful gardens in the Valley. Besides the Sulţāns, the merchants and other well-to-do inhabitants also had a love for flowers and gardens, and their houses had gardens attached to them. Then there were the Rishīs, whose habit it was to plant shady and fruit-bearing trees wherever they stayed. In the gardens planted by the Sulţāns, nobles, merchants and Rishīs, flourished different

---

² A.N., iii, 831. For crops grown in modern times, see Lawrence, Valley, pp. 330 sqq. With a few exceptions the same crops were grown then as now.
³ A.A., iii, 353. Finer varieties were not cultivated because their yield was smaller compared to that of the common variety, and hence uneconomical to the peasants. Similar conditions were present until recent times. (See Lawrence, Valley, pp. 333, 335).
⁴ A.A., iii, 353.
⁵ Srīv., p. 274; also p. 85, supra.
⁶ Tuzuk-i-Jahāngiri, ii, 177-8
⁷ A.A., (Blochmann), p. 90.
⁸ Tuzuk-i-Jahāngiri, ii, 177-8; Ibid., i, 92-3.
⁹ Ibid., i, 92-3.
varieties of fruits such as apricots, apples, peaches, plums, grapes, almonds, and cherries. The flowers that grew wild and in the gardens, were narcissus, rose, jasmine, lily, iris, hyacinth, violet, and shamrock.¹

The Condition of the Peasants

The lot of the peasants in the Valley under the Lohara dynasty had been an unhappy one. This was due to a number of causes. First, the throne was occupied during that period mostly by weak rulers who neglected the administration. Secondly, there were constant civil wars which brought great misery to the countryside. Thirdly, apart from the heavy revenue demand, the peasants had to pay all kinds of taxes and fines.² But, above all, the most oppressive measure to which they were subjected was the system of begār or corvée for transport purposes. The villagers had to present themselves to carry their allotted loads, and if they did not turn up, they were fined to the value of the latter at enhanced rates. Only the priests of the temple were exempted from the corvée. This measure was greatly resented by the peasants, because it kept them away too long from their paddy fields which required weeding or watering and constant supervision.³

With the establishment of the Shāh Mīr dynasty, the condition of the peasants distinctly improved. This was because they were protected from the exploitation of government officials, and measures were taken to develop agriculture. It is true that after the death of Hasan Shāh till the fall of the dynasty the peasants suffered a great deal due to civil wars and foreign invasions. But under the strong government of the Chaks prosperity returned to the countryside.⁴ It was only in the reign of Ya'qūb Shāh that, owing to the Mughal invasion, cultivation declined and the peasants were impoverished.

However, although the peasant was definitely better off under the Sultaṅs than he had been under their predecessors, or was ever to be subsequently, the picture was not as rosy as has been painted by the

1. T.R., p. 425; Firishta, pp. 640-41; Sharafu’d-Dīn, Ḥafar-nāma, ii, 179, says that all kinds of fruits were grown in plenty except oranges and lemons which could not be grown on account of the Valley’s cold climate.
2. Stein, BK. vii, No. 42; BK. viii, No. 1428.
3. Ibid., BK. v, No. 172 sqq. and nn.
Social and Economic Conditions

Chroniclers. In the first place, the peasant did not get complete relief from the burden of oppressive exactions which seemed to have continued in spite of the claims of successive rulers to have abolished them. Secondly, the Shāh Mīr rulers did not put an end to the corvée. In fact, from the time of Shihābu’d-Dīn, it was exacted even from the hānjis who were required to serve the king seven days in every month.\(^1\) Besides transport, compulsory labour was also taken for collecting saffron. Under the Shāh Mīrs men were forcibly employed to separate the saffron from the petals and the stamens, and for this they were given a certain quantity of salt as wages. But from the time of Ghāzi Shāh Chak they received eleven \textit{taraks} of saffron flower, out of which one \textit{tarak} was to be their wages, and for the remaining ten they had to supply a quarter \textit{tarak} of saffron to the government. This custom was abolished by Akbar on his third visit to Kashmir to the great relief of the peasants.\(^2\)

Apart from the burden of corvée and taxes, the peasants also suffered at the hands of floods and famines. The floods in Kashmir are caused by warm and continuous rains on the mountains which melt the snow and thus inundate the Valley. The area that is affected most is below Srīnagar where the depression of the land is slight.

The floods were usually followed by famines. But the latter were also caused by early snows and heavy rains, occurring at the time of the ripening of autumn harvest, thus damaging the crops and causing scarcity. During the famines the Sultāns did their best to alleviate the misery of the people by opening their grain stores and adopting various other relief measures. Nevertheless, the people suffered a great deal, and there was a considerable loss of life. The recurrent famines and floods marred the record of prosperity under the Sultāns.

Population

It is not possible to give a correct estimate of Kashmir’s population during the medieval period, for the chronicles do not throw any light on this point. They only state that the country’s population was large.

---

1. See p. 51, \textit{supra}. This custom was abolished by 'Ali Shāh Chak. (B.S., f. 19a).
2. A.A. (Blochmann), p. 90.
Thus the Zafar-nāma says that the land was thickly populated, and similarly, Abūl-Fazl speaks of the country's "numerous population". Moreover, it appears from the existence of innumerable deserted village sites that the Valley possessed a larger population under the Sultāns than at present.

The population was mainly concentrated in villages, and only a small portion of it lived in towns, the largest among them being Srinagar called in the Persian chronicles Shahr-i-Kashmir (City of Kashmir). The number of villages has been variously estimated. Mas'ūdī (d.956) says that the number of villages in the Valley stood between 60,000 to 70,000. According to Sharafu'd-Dīn Yazdī in the whole province—plains and mountains together—there were 100,000 villages. The number of villages in the Lokaprákāśa is placed at 66,063. This is also the oral tradition of the Brahmans throughout the Valley. Jonarāja also gives the figure as 60,000. Dimashqī (d.1327) speaks of the Inner and Outer Kashmir, the former containing 70,000 villages and the latter more than 100,000. We can thus safely say that there were between 60,000 to 70,000 villages in Kashmir during the Sultanate period. The same was the number under early Mughal rule. The decline in the number of villages and consequently of the population itself began from the later Mughal or Afghān period.

2. A.A., ii, 353.
4. Mas'ūdī, Murūjuz-Zahab, i, p. 373, ed. and trans. de Meynard.
7. Ibid.
9. _BUSYDU'L-Ālam, p. 254. Ibn al-Wardī and other Muslim writers place the number between 60,000 and 70,000.
CULTURAL ACTIVITIES

The standard of culture in Kashmir during the Sultanate period was very high. The statement of Śrīvara\(^1\) that everyone enjoyed poetry and attempted to compose verses is obviously an exaggeration, but there is ample evidence in the chronicles to suggest that there was a general appreciation of arts, letters, and music by the people of the Valley. The Kashmirīs were extremely witty and intelligent, and were always ready with some appropriate saying.\(^2\) They were very fond of music, and possessed great artistic sense.\(^3\) They loved learning, and, as in olden days, they left their homes for distant places in India, Turkistān, and Persia to seek knowledge.\(^4\) The Sultāns were not only patrons of art and culture, but some of them were themselves poets and musicians. Their courts were adorned with scholars, musicians, and painters, while their capital Srinagar was embellished with magnificent palaces, mosques, monasteries, and gardens.

**Persian Influence**

The history of cultural relations between Kashmir and Persia goes back to ancient times. This is evident from the tiles of the Hārvan Monastery near Srinagar and from the ancient sculptures of Kashmir which bear unmistakably Sasanian characteristics.\(^5\) Similarly, Sasanian influence can be detected in the use of official designations like *dibīr* or *divira* (after the Persian *dabīr*) and *gaṇjavarā* (after the Persian *ganjwar*).\(^6\)

---

\(^1\) Śrīv., p. 144.
\(^3\) Rāzī, *Haft Iqlīm*, f. 156a.
\(^4\) Compare this with Hiuen Tsiang’s statement in *Si-Y-Kī*, i, p. 148 (Trans. Beale).
\(^6\) Stein, *BK*., v, No. 177.
Nevertheless, until the fourteenth century, the dominant note in Kashmir’s culture had been Indian. It was only with the foundation of the Sultanate that more profound and endurable links were established with the centres of Persian culture, and, as a result, the Indian influence was gradually replaced by the Perso-Islamic element, though it was never completely eliminated.

There were many reasons why cultural contacts between Kashmir and Persia during the Sultanate period became much closer than they had ever been before. First, the progress of Islam in the Valley was intimately associated with the missionary activities of Sufi saints from Persia and Central Asia like Bulbul Shâh, Sayyid ‘Alî Hamadānî, his son Muhammad Hamadānî, Mîr Shamsu’d-Dîn and many others. These Sufis played an important part in bringing about an Iranian orientation of Kashmir’s culture, for they were not only the missionaries of Islam, but were also zealous propagandists of the Persian language and culture. Secondly, with the spread of Islam in Kashmir, it became natural for its Muslim inhabitants to look for their intellectual and spiritual inspiration to lands which had become centres of Islamic culture. Scholars, therefore, began to visit Herât, Merv, Samarqand, and Bukhârâ, which formed part of Persia’s cultural empire, to learn at the feet of eminent jurists and devout Sufis, and drink deep from the fountain of Persian culture. Thirdly, from the reign of Shihâbu’d-Dîn, Persians and Persianized Turks, attracted by the patronage extended to them by the Sultâns, began to enter Kashmir in increasingly large numbers. These men exercised great influence on the social and cultural life of its people. The Valley had also close cultural relations with Hindustân, but the latter’s influence on her, during this period, appears to have been much less than that of Persia and Turkistân.

Persian Language

The result of the establishment of these religious and cultural ties with Persia and Central Asia was the spread of Persian in Kashmir.

1. These were not confined to the narrow geographical limits of modern Persia, but extended to Central Asia and Northern India and even as far as Asia Minor.
Sanskrit had been the court language under the Hindu kings and under the early Shâh Mîrs, but from the reign of Shihiibu'd-Dîn it began to be replaced by Persian which became the language of the educated classes, and even found its way into the villages. Ḥâfiz was not merely indulging in poetic imagination, but was stating a fact when he said:

*The black-eyed beauties of Kashmir and the Turks of Samarqand Sing and dance to the strains of Ḥâfiz of Shûrâz's verse.*

The greatest contribution to the spread and development of Persian in Kashmir was made by Zainu'l-Abîdîn who was himself a poet and the author of two prose works in Persian. He made it the state language, patronized poets and scholars, and encouraged the translation of historical and scientific works from Sanskrit into Persian. The amount of literature produced during his reign was considerable, but as very little of it is extant, it is difficult to assess its quality. Stray verses of the Sultân and his court poets are found scattered in the chronicles, and if they can be any criteria, then Persian poetry must have achieved a high standard of development in Kashmir under him. Zainu'l-Abîdîn's son and successor, Ḥâdîr Shâh, was also a poet and composed a book of songs. The next ruler Ḥasan Shâh, though not himself a poet, was a man of culture and patronized poets and learned men. The example set up by the Sultâns was followed by the nobles, who surrounded themselves with scholars and set up institutions of learning at their own cost. The queens and the ladies of the upper classes, too, were not far behind in their zeal to promote learning.

Under the later Shâh Mîrs, owing to constant civil wars and invasions, learning declined, but there was again a revival under the shortlived rule of Mîrzâ Ḥâdîr and the Chaks. Mîrzâ Ḥâdîr being himself a man of letters encouraged learning. Unfortunately, however, the names of scholars attached to his court, or of works produced under his patronage, are not known. Among the Chak rulers the most cultured man was Husain Shâh. Himself a poet, he was fond of the society of poets and learned men. Mîr 'Alî, a poet and a calligraphist, came from Persia during his reign and wrote a long poem in praise of

2. See p. 90, *supra*. For more details, see my article in *Indo-Iranica*, vii, No. 3.
Kashmir. Mullā Bāqī, Mullā Nāmī I, and Mullā Nāmī II were the other poets attached to Ḥusain Shāh’s court. The most important poet who enjoyed ‘Alī Shāh’s patronage was Mullā Mehrī. Muḥammad Amīn Mustaghnī, a Kashmirī, was a courtier of Yūsuf Shāh and a good poet. Another poet connected with his court was Mīrzā ‘Alī Khān, who was killed in the course of Ya‘qūb Shāh’s war with Rājā Bhagwān Dās. Bābā Ṭālib Isfahānī arrived in Kashmir during the time of Ghāzī Shāh. He was a good poet and enjoyed the respect of all the Chak rulers. When Akbar annexed Kashmir, Bābā Ṭālib went to Agra and entered the Emperor’s service.

But the two most outstanding poets and scholars of the Chak period were Bābā Dā‘ūd Khākī and Shaikh Ya‘qūb Sarfī. Bābā Dā‘ūd, the son of a noted scribe Shaikh Ḥasan Ganā‘ī, was born in 1521. After completing his education, he served for a short period as tutor of Nāzuk Shāh’s son. He then became a disciple of Shaikh Makhdūm Ḥamzā. During Ya‘qūb Shāh’s reign he proceeded with Ya‘qūb Sarfī to the court of Akbar to seek his help against the Kashmir ruler. On his return he fell ill and died at Anantnāg in 1585. He was a learned Şūfī, and his poetry is permeated with religious and mystical ideas. He was the author of a number of books like Dastūru’s-Sālikīn, Virdu’l-Muridīn, Qaṣīda-i-Jalāliyya and others.

Shaikh Ya‘qūb Sarfī, the son of Shaikh Ḥasan Ganā‘ī, was born in 1528 and died on July 25, 1594. He memorized the Qur’ān when he was only seven, and began to compose verses in Persian at the same age. He studied in Lahore, Siālkot, Samarqand, Mashhad, Mecca, and Madīnā under renowned teachers. He was one of the most learned men of his age, and, according to Abū’l-Fażl, “the greatest authority in religious matters”. He was the author in Arabic of an introduction to Faiżī’s Tafsīr entitled Sawā’id-ul-Iḥām. He also wrote a commentary of al-Ṣāḥīḥ of Bukhārī; and, just before his death, he had nearly completed

1. W.K., f. 61a; T.H., iv, f. 278b.
3. H.M., f. 180a; T.H., iv, ff. 279a-b.
6. A.A. (Blochmann), p. 651 and n. 2; also Mīskīn, Ta‘rīkh-i-Kabīr, pp. 170-71.
7. A.A. (Blochmann), p. 191; also M.T., ii 266.
a commentary of the Qur'ān. Badāʿūnī regarded this work as “one of the most wonderful productions of his perfect genius”. Besides being a great prose writer, Yaʿqūb Ṣafī was also a good poet. He wrote many ghazals and qaṣīdās, and completed a khamsa, a series of five masnavis in imitation of the khamsa of Nizāmī. “His genius,” as Badāʿūnī observed, “was highly adapted to the composition of eloquent poetry”.

Sanskrit

Sanskrit learning in Kashmir began to decline from about the middle of the twelfth century; but with the increasing employment of Persian as the language of administration and culture, this process was further accentuated. However, even after Sanskrit had ceased to be the official language, it continued to enjoy the patronage of many of the Sultāns, and Kashmir could boast of a number of great Sanskrit scholars. It was during the Sultanate period that Jonarāja, Sīvara, Prājyabhaṭṭa, and Śuka wrote their chronicles. Besides writing a historical work, Sīvara also translated Jāmī’s Yūsuf-u-Zulaikhā into Sanskrit, and compiled Subhāṣitāvali containing extracts from the works of more than 350 poets, both Kashmirī and Indian. Among other important works of the period, mention must be made of Jagaddhār Bhaṭ’s Stūti-Kusumānājali written in 1450, and of Sītā Kaṇṭhā’s Bālabodhinī written in 1475, and of Varadarāja’s Śivasūtra-Vārttika composed in the fifteenth century. It must also be noted that, despite the growing popularity of Persian, the use of Sanskrit both for private and official purposes did not cease for a long time. In fact, very often, it was employed side by side with Persian. A number of Muslim graves of the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries are still in existence in Srinagar and Bijbehāra which bear bi-lingual inscriptions: Sanskrit at the top, and Persian at the bottom.

1. M.T., iii, 200-1; Șūrī, ii, 360. 2. Ibid., iii, 201.
3. Ibid., p. 200 and n. 1. 4. Ibid., ii, 360.
7. This information was supplied to me by the Research and Publication Dept. Srinagar.
Stein refers to a deed of sale of as late a date as 1682, written in both Sanskrit and Persian. Similarly, there is preserved in the Srinagar Museum a bi-lingual will of Shaikh Makhdûm Ḥamza, a great Kashmiri saint, dated 984/1576, and written on birch-bark. The Sanskrit version in the Śāradā characters on the right side cannot be deciphered, but the Persian text on the left is partly legible. In spite of these instances, however, it cannot be denied that Sanskrit fought a losing battle in the Valley, and by the end of the seventeenth century its use and study had become confined to a very small number of Brahman priests. Another effect of the spread of Persian was that it led to an influx of many foreign words into Sanskrit. As already mentioned, owing to Sasanian influence, some words like dabîr and ganjvar had come into official use in Kashmir during the Hindu period. Now with the establishment of the Shâh Mîr dynasty, a much larger number of Persian words began to find their way into the Sanskrit language. Thus those parts of the Lokapraṇāsa that were written during the Sultanate period contain many new words like Shâhî, khawâs, Suratrâna (Sulṭān) and Silah-dâr. These are not to be found either in those portions of the Lokapraṇāsa whose authorship has been assigned to Kṣemendra, or in Kalhana's Rājatarāṅgini. Similarily in the Sanskrit chronicles of Jonarāja, Śrivara, Prâjyabhaṭṭa and Suka, we find the use of a large number of Arabic, Persian and Turkish words like khâtonā (Khâtûn), khânaqâha (khânqâh), Mallika (Malik), masjeda or masēdâha (masjid), madrasâ, ravâva (rabâb).

Kashmirī Poetry

We have seen that while Sanskrit was the language of culture in the time of the Râjâs, its place was taken by Persian during the Sultanate period. Kashmirī, however, remained, as before, the mother tongue of a vast majority of the population. In fact, under the influence of Persian, it grew richer, and owing to the patronage it received at the hands of the Sulṭâns, it was able to develop a respectable poetic literature of its own.

3. Śriv., p. 157.
5. Ibid., p. 136.
The oldest author in Kashmiri seems to be Lalla Ded, for there is no reference in the chronicles of any earlier writer. She was a great poetess, and her poems are full of deep and philosophical meanings. But she expressed her thoughts in the simple language understood by the common people. That is why her verses are, even today, in every one’s mouth in the Valley and quoted as sayings or maxims in the course of conversation. Her verses contain a large number of Sanskrit words, but the later poets, particularly the Muslims, increasingly make use of Persian. They model their poetry on Persian metre and employ Persian metaphors, similes and imagery. However, they do not remain indifferent to the indigenous legends and romances and to the appeal of their surroundings.

Nūru’d-Dīn Rishi, Lalla Ded’s contemporary and the patron saint of the Valley, was also like her a poet and enriched the Kashmiri literature. His sayings, which are religious and didactic, are like those of Lalla Ded on the tip of every Kashmiris tongue.

The first secular poem to have been written was Bānāsuravadha in the time of Sulṭān Zainu’l-Ābidīn, who gave encouragement not only to Persian but also to the Kashmiri language. Another work of his reign was Mahānayaprakāśa by Sita Kaṇṭha. But some persons think that it was written before the fifteenth century. Two other works of Zainu’l-Ābidīn’s period, of which mention has already been made, were Nothosoma Pandit’s Jainacarita and Yodhabhaṭṭa’s Jainaprakāśa.

In the Chak period the most outstanding poetic genius was Habbā

2. She sometimes uses Persian words like ُشکار. (Verse 15).
3. Nūru’d-Dīn uses words like ُشاخ (Persian, ُشخ) and ُتمام(ان. (Kaul, Kashmiri Lyrics, verse, 10). Habbā Khālīn uses words like ُپیلا, ُشیشنا, ُسندب, ُکل, ُبیلن, ُدیل, ُدیدر etc. (Ibid., Verses, 43-45, 58, 68).
5. See Kaul, Kashmiri Lyrics, for some specimens of his songs; also Taṣkira-ī-Mashā’īkh-i-Kashmir by Nasīb.
7. See p. 89, supra.
Kashmīr Under the Sultāns

Khātūn, the queen of Yūsuf Shāh. It was she who introduced 'Lols' or love lyrics in Kashmirī poetry, and on the advice of Sayyid Mubārak, a Ṣūfī, she began to experiment with Persian metre. While the lyrics of Lallā Ded and Nūru’d-Dīn Rīshī are mystical and didactic, Habbā Khātūn’s lol-lyrics sing of human love, its disappointments, yearnings and fulfilment. They are full of emotion, music, rhythm and melody, and are sung even to this day by artisans, peasants and boatmen.

Education

Education was wide-spread in Kashmir during the Sultanate period. Kings and nobles vied with each other in opening schools and endowing them with jāgīrs for their maintenance. As a result every village had a school. At the same time higher education was not neglected, and in Srīnagar there was a University. Monasteries were also centres of learning where education was imparted to students by able teachers.

The system of education and the courses of study were the same as in the madrasas of India, Turkistān, and Persia. Generally at the age of five the child was put into the school where he was taught the Arabic alphabet and to read the Qur’ān. He had then to learn the traditional sciences. Dogmatic Theology ('Ilmu’l-Kalām, 'Ilmu’l-Tawḥīd), interpretation of the Qur’ān (Tafsīr), Tradition (Hadīṣ), Jurisprudence (Fiqh). But physical sciences were not neglected; and boys were trained in archery, swordsmanship, and horsemanship. The heads of the institutions were eminent scholars, and students came from India, Herāt, and Turkistān to learn at their feet.

The first Kashmir Sultān to have established madrasas in different parts of the Valley was Shihābu’d-Dīn. In addition he founded a college in Srīnagar called Madrasatu'l-Qur’ān for the study of the Qur’ān and Hadīṣ. When Qutbu’d-Dīn came to the throne, he established a college in his new capital of Qutbu’d-Dānpūr and

1. It is a Kashmirī word meaning “a complex of love, longing, and a tugging at the heart.” (Kaul, Kashmiri Lyrics, Intro. xi).
2. Khawāriqu’s-Sālikīn, f. 155b; W.K., f. 41a.
3. Tażkīra-i-Muṭḥī Raina, ff. 511a-b.
4. Ibid., f. 513a.
5. H.M., f. 118b; W.K., f. 41a.
6. N.A., f. 29b; G.A., f. 110b; also S.A., p. 10.
appointed Pir Ḥājī Muḥammad Qārī as its Principal. It had a hostel attached to it where board and lodging was free for both teachers and pupils. The college existed till the establishment of the Sikh rule in Kashmir when, owing to lack of patronage, it had to close down. Another educational institution of this period was called ‘Urwatul-Wusqā which was founded by Sayyid Jamālu’d-Dīn Muḥaddīs who had come to Kashmir with Sayyid ‘Alī Hamadānī and had been persuaded by Qutbu’d-Dīn to stay in the country. Qutbu’d-Dīn’s son and successor, Sikandar, opened many schools, and founded a college and a hostel attached to the Jāmi‘ Masjid which he had built. Mullā Afzāl Bukhārī taught in this college, and the village of Nāgām was assigned to him as jāgīr.1

But the Sulṭān who did most for the spread of education in the Valley was Zainu’l-‘Abidīn. He opened a school near his palace in Naushahr, and placed it in charge of Maulānā Kabīr. The Sulṭān himself occasionally went there to attend the Maulānā’s lectures. For the maintenance of the school, and for the granting of scholarships to deserving candidates, he created an endowment with Maulānā Kabīr as its trustee. The institution survived until the middle of the seventeenth century. In addition to this school the Sulṭān also founded a college in Zaināgīr, and a large madrasa at Sir in Dachhanpūr near Islāmābād with Mullā Ghāzī Khān as its principal. Another place where education was imparted was the hospice of Bābā Ismā’īl Kubravī, who later in the reign of Ḥasan Shāh became Shaikhulu’l-Īslām. The fame of his learning was so wide-spread that students came to study under him from Herāt, India, and Transoxiana. It was the measure of Zainu’l-‘Abidīn’s interest in education that he did not hesitate to give generous grants to institutions even outside the Valley. Thus to Madrasatu’l-Ulūm at Siālkōt he contributed six lakhs of rupees, while his queen, Tāj Khātūn, gave away her valuable necklace. Besides the madrasas, the Sulṭān also opened technical schools where people were taught paper-making, book-binding, and other arts which he had introduced into the country.

During the reign of Ḥasan Shāh also a number of madrasas were founded. Gul Khātūn, the mother of the Sulṭān, Ḥayāt Khātūn, his

queen, Shāh Bēgum, the wife of his prime minister Malik Aḥmad, and nobles like Naurūz and Tāzī Bāt took great interest in education and established schools at their own expense. Ṣultān Ḥasan Shāh himself founded Madrasa-i-Dāruʾsh-Shifā at Pakhribal on the Dal Lake, and appointed Bābā Ismāʾīl Kubravī as its head. The revenues of Bāghāt-i-Mālkhāna, lying between Nauhatta and the Dal, and of the village of Birhama in the Lār pargana were assigned to it.

The Chak rulers, too, like the Shāh Mīrs, were great patrons of education. Thus Ḥusain Shāh improved the Daruʾsh-Shifā founded by Ḥasan Shāh, and, in addition, opened a college to which he assigned the revenues of Zainapūr. The college had a library and a hostel, which were also endowed. The principal of the college was Fathuʾllāh Ḥaqqānī and his assistant was Akhūnd Mullā Darwīsh.

**Minor Arts**

One of the main achievements of the Sultanate period lies in the field of minor arts. But unfortunately it is not possible to trace the history of their development, as very few works of art of this period are extant. A flourishing textile art had existed in Kashmir since ancient times. The Kashmirī woollen cloth was famous for its warmth and durability, and is said to have been worn by the Sasānian army. Kashmir is believed to have learned sericulture from the Chinese during the time of the Rājās, but Zainuʾl-ʿĀbidīn improved the manufacture of silk by introducing better methods of weaving, and by importing the decorative designs from Persia. As a result Kashmir became famous for its silks.

As regards the shawl industry, no conclusive evidence can be given of its origin. According to local tradition, recorded during the nineteenth century, the first Kashmirī shawls were produced by Turkistān weavers who were invited by Zainuʾl-ʿĀbidīn to settle in the Valley. It is also stated that the shawl industry was founded by Sayyid ʿAlī

2. Śrīv., p. 151. T.A., iii, 457, says that very fine silk threads were produced in Kashmir during this period.
Hamadānī in 1378.1 However that may be, one thing is certain: that the shawl industry did not exist before the thirteenth century, for there is no reference to it either in Kalhana’s Rājatarāṅgiṇī or any other source; and that it was developed under the patronage of the Sultāns with the help of weavers—who came from Persia and Turkistān. These immigrants not only introduced new patterns but also a new technique—the twill-tapestry technique—which has a parallel in Persia and Central Asia but nowhere in India and Pākistān.2 It is, however, impossible to trace the history of the development of this industry, because no shawl of a date earlier than the later half of the seventeenth century now survives. From Śrīvara we only learn that under Zainu’l-Ābīdīn Kashmir had become famous for its shawls.3 When the Mughals conquered the Valley the shawl industry was in a well-developed state. From this period onwards its development can be followed without much difficulty. But that is beyond the scope of this work.

The art of tinned metals used in northern India and Kashmir was introduced from Persia.4 The Muslims use copper cooking and eating vessels; and hence these have to be tinned before they can be employed with safety. The ewers of Kashmir are mostly in red copper, embossed, enameled, and tinned. Their handles are of brass, and represent the head and tail of a Chinese dragon,5 while the floral decorations and forms are mainly Persian. But these decorations are scattered with such profusion as to show that the influence of the Hindu art has been retained. Thus from a study of the metal-works of Kashmir it appears that the three ancient civilizations—Persian, Chinese, and Hindu—met in the Valley, but the influence of the first overshadowed that of the other two, although it was modified by the native mode of

3. Śrīv., p. 151.
expression. But this should not lead us to think that the Kashmiris were mere imitators. On the contrary, while they accepted foreign influence, they developed their own style. Thus some of their ewers are different from those of Persia; in fact some of their shapes are found nowhere in Asia. Moreover, Kashmiris excel in enamelling which did not find much favour with Muslim workers in Persia and elsewhere. They also decorate their vases in a particular fashion which distinguishes their work from that of India and Persia. Thus the art of Kashmir has also its original side. As Ujfalvy observes: "With Islām came Perso-Arab art in Kashmir. The people, the most ingenious, perhaps in the entire world and certainly in Central Asia, found themselves in the presence of admirable models, and with their marvellous talent for imitation and execution they set themselves to work and create for their daily use a series of objects of art which soon surpassed the originals".

In addition to the art of tinned metals, that of wood carving also flourished during the Sultanate period. There is evidence to show that this art existed in Kashmir in ancient times; and since most of the edifices were built of wood during the medieval period, it continued to be cultivated. The only specimen of that period that has survived is the door of the mosque of Madānī bearing fine carvings and lattice-work. The existence of fine jali-screens in the Jāmi’ Masjid and the mosque of Hamadānī show that these buildings must have possessed similar screens before, for when they were rebuilt during the Mughal period the original features were retained. As regards other minor arts, tradition credits Sulṭān Zainu’l-Ābidīn with having introduced many of them. However, it is impossible to review them as not a single specimen of that period has survived.

Painting

It is impossible to enter into a detailed discussion of Kashmir painting since not a single work of the Sultanate period has survived the devastating cataclysms of civil strife and foreign invasion. However,
there is evidence to show that Kashmir had maintained a high artistic
tradition for centuries and had its own style. Mullā Jamīl was a famous
painter in the service of Zainu’l-‘Abidīn.1 Akbar had a group of five
painters from Kashmir, but we cannot assess the influence, if any, which
the Kashmir style of painting exercised on the Mughal school.2 However,
as Brown says: “Very delicate effect is said to have been obtained by
the Kashmiri painters. They allowed water to stand until it had
completely evaporated, leaving a slight sediment, which they used as a
background tint to the profile of a portrait, as it left a faint but charming
contrast of tone between the flesh colour and the ground.”3

Calligraphy

The Sultāns of Kashmir were great patrons of the art of calligraphy.
But unfortunately not a single manuscript of calligraphic significance
has survived. However, some mosques and tombs still bear Persian
and Arabic inscriptions in elegant naskh and nasta’liq, which show
that the art of calligraphy had been carried to a high degree of perfection
in Kashmir. From the inscriptions of the reigns of Zainu’l-
‘Abidīn and Ḥasan Shāh it appears that only the naskh style was
cultivated during that period; but under the later Shāh Mīrī and the
Chak Sultāns it was the nasta’liq style that came into vogue. During
the time of Zainu’l-‘Abidīn a number of calligraphists came to the
Valley from Persia and Turkistān and were given jāgīrs. The Sultān
had a number of copies made of Zamakhshāri’s commentary of the
Qurʾān.4 The greatest calligraphist of the Chak period was Muḥammad
Ḥusain who, when Kashmir was annexed by the Mughals, entered the
service of Akbar. The Emperor was so much impressed by the grace,
beauty, and symmetry of his compositions that he conferred upon him
the title of Zarrīn-qalam (Gold-pen).5 Another noted calligraphist of
the Chak period was ‘Alī Chaman Kashmirī. He, too, was patronised

remarkable set of twenty-four paintings which were produced in Kashmir
before the Mughal conquest. But according to Mr. John Irwin, Assistant
Keeper, Indian Section, “the Museum possesses nothing of Kashmirī
origin (except a few shawl pieces) earlier than the 19th century.”

1. T.A., iii, 439. 2. Brown, Indian Painting under the Mughals, p. 121.
3. Ibid., p. 189. 4. Šūrī, ii, 558.
by Akbar. Under Jahāngīr and Shāhjahān also some of the most prominent calligraphists were of Kasmīrī origin.

Sculpture

The relief, illustrated elsewhere in this book, was found in Ushkur, near Bārāmūla, by Father de Ruyter of the Church Mission School at Bārāmūla, and is the only piece of sculpture belonging to the Sultanate period that is extant. It bears the equestrian portrait of a warrior on horseback. The man is shown wearing two garments: a tight inside tunic with a high collar joined with a hook; an upper coat with short sleeves, heavily embroidered, fastened by a girdle in four folds around his waist. The legs are unfortunately broken, but a portion of the lower garment, probably a sirwāl, which comes down in angular folds, can be discerned. The man is armed with a bow, a quiver full of arrows, a big sword, two daggers, a battle-axe, a mace and a shield. The horse is shown caparisoned with a richly embroidered cloth, tied to the body with belts. The relief is reminiscent of a Central Asian horseman both from the point of view of costume and the treatment of the figure. It also throws light on contemporary military equipment. The inscription on the slab is in the Śārada script, and bears the date of Friday the ninth of the dark fortnight of Magha in the year 82 of the Laukika era which corresponds to A.D. 1506.

ARCHITECTURE

The Sultan Sultāns of Kashmir, like the Great Mughals, were great builders. But unfortunately, with the exception of a few tombs and mosques, all their buildings have perished. The architecture of their period can be divided under two heads: (1) The masonry style (2) The wooden style. One of the buildings belonging to the first category, which still exists, is the tomb of Zainu'l-Ābidīn's mother in Srinagar. Although it is constructed on the plinth of an ancient temple, the brick

1. Ibid.
2. My attention was directed by Dr. Suniti Kumar Chatterjee to the existence of the relief in the Museum of the University of Pennsylvania. The Curator of the Museum very kindly sent me a reproduction of it as well as a copy of the University Museum Bulletin in which the relief has been described in detail. I am obliged to Dr. K. K. Ganguli of Calcutta University for helping me to write the description of the relief.
structure above the plinth is built in the style of a Muslim tomb. With
the exception of the niches on either side of the gateway, which are like
those found at Mārtand, the pointed arches in each wall-face and the
brick arch over the gateway are all Islamic. The outer walls are studded
at intervals with glazed blue bricks, while the whole structure is
surmounted by four small cupolas and a large central dome. But all
the domes possess more or less the same features. The central dome
is placed on a lofty drum, the wall of which is pierced by arched
openings. The walls underneath the accessory domes are decorated
with blind arcades. Below the arcades is a moulding and a dentil
decoration. This feature—the cupolas at the four corners with a dome
in the centre—appears for the first time in this building in the history
of Indo-Muslim architecture. The next appearance, with slight
modifications, is in Shēr Shāh’s tomb at Sasarām.

Another building in Śrīnagar representing the masonry style is the
tomb of Sayyid ʿUḥǧmad ʿAduddin, who came as an envoy to Kashmir
from Madīnā in the reign of Sikandar. Constructed in 848/1444, it is
now in a dilapidated condition; but until recently it possessed two
interesting features. The first was its coloured tile-work which was
introduced from Persia and was different from the tile-work of the
Mughals.¹ The tile-work of this tomb is in square units with various
brilliant colours, such as blue, red, brown, green and yellow, on the same
piece; whereas the tile-work of the Mughals, being almost invariably cut
in small irregular shapes to fit the different forms and colours of the
design, has the appearance of mosaic.

But the most significant feature of the building was the representa-
tion of a beast in polychrome tiles in the southern half of the spandrel
of the archway in the east facade. The body of the beast is of a
leopard, and the trunk is that of a human being whose head, chest,
and shoulders are missing, but who appears to be shooting with
a bow and arrow at its own tail which ends in a kind of dragon’s
head, while nearby a fox is quietly looking on from among flowers

¹. Now only half a dozen tiles are left on the building. A few are in the
Śrīnagar Museum, but the rest have been taken away by the people as
sacred relics. The tiles in the Patna Museum belonging to this building
appear to be of the Mughal period.
and cloud-forms. The background of the representation is blue, the leopard’s body is yellow with green spots, the trunk of the man is red, the dragon’s head and the fox are reddish brown, and the flowers are of various colours. The use of cloud-forms and dragon’s head are suggestive of Chinese and Persian influence.¹

It was, however, not the masonry style but the wooden style of architecture that was more common in the Valley. Although building in wood was not unknown in Hindu times, it became more popular under the Sultāns. This is perhaps due to the fact that buildings constructed of wooden framework are less liable to fall in earthquakes than an edifice of brick or stone. Moreover, the change of religion required “the hasty erection of buildings for public worship on a much larger scale than had been required by Hindu ritual; wood was abundant and easily worked; hence its substitution for stone, and the fashion, having once set in, continued to spread after the occasion for it had ceased”.²

The mosques and tombs are all built in a similar style. They are all square in plan. But while the mosques of Madani and Hamadānī are self-contained square buildings, the Jāmi‘ Masjid at Srīnagar consists of a group of square buildings, enclosing a spacious courtyard and connected together by a colonnade. The walls are constructed sometimes of masonry and sometimes of logs laid across each other horizontally, the spaces between the logs being in some cases filled with brick work. Since the Kashmirīs were ignorant of the art of joinery, the logs were generally fastened to one another by a stout wooden pin. Nor did they adopt any other means like struts, trusses or diagonal members to secure lateral rigidity. The roofs of these buildings are covered with turf laid on birch-bark which is impervious to both rain and snow. The birch-bark is placed on boards which are supported on rafters. The ceilings of the chambers are supported by high posts, all of single deodar trees, which enhance the beauty and grace of the buildings. The pyramidal roof is surmounted by a steeple; and the finial, which is covered with metal, is in the shape of an outspread umbrella. The steeples have sloping gables projecting from the sides. Window

Section of the doorway of Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā.

Section of the ceiling of Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā
openings and balustrades possess fine jali screens. The angles of the eaves are ornamented with wooden pendants suspended from the corners, and almost immediately beneath the eaves project heavy cornices corbelled out from the wall-face on logs laid crosswise forming a dental crown. This form of Kashmiri architecture is very similar to the wooden buildings of other mountainous countries like Nepal, Norway and the Austrian Tyrol. But this does not mean a common origin. The fact is that the characteristics, such as the methods of laying logs, stepped roofs, and the employment of birch-bark and turf as roof covering, and many other features, were independently evolved in Kashmir because of its special climatic conditions and the easy availability and abundance of timber. It would also be wrong to suggest that the architectural style and method of constructing these buildings were borrowed from Buddhist pagodas. For, in the first place, by the time of the Sultāns not a single pagoda was in existence in the Valley; and in the second, the architecture of the pagodas is quite different from that of the wooden buildings of Kashmir.

The mosque of Hamadānī in Srinagar, better known as Khānqāh-i-Mu'allā, which stands on the right bank of the Jehlam on an irregular masonry foundation, is a typical example of the wooden architecture of the Valley. Exclusive of its verandahs and extensions, it is in plan a square, of seventy feet side and is two storeys in height, which up to the eaves is nearly fifty feet from the ground. The pyramidal roof projecting over the whole structure is built in three tiers, and is surmounted by an open pavilion for the mu'azzīn, over which rises the steeple with its finial 125 ft. from the ground. Around the building are higher structures such as arcades, verandahs and porticos, their openings being filled with lattice work. On the ground floor is the hall which is rectangular in plan measuring 63 feet by 43 feet, the original square having been reduced by the construction of small chambers on its north and south sides. The interior hall has no great significance from the point of construction, but its tapering eight-sided ornamented posts, the arched and recessed miḥrāb, its panelled walls and ceilings painted in multicoloured designs, and the valuable prayer carpets of different colours on the floor give it an air of elegance and dignity.

The Jāmi' Masjid of Srinagar, built by Sikandar in 1400, contains
all the typical features of the Kashmiri wooden style already described, while preserving the conception of the orthodox mosque plan. It was many times destroyed by fire, but was each time restored. The final reconstruction was effected by Aurangzeb who seems to have retained the original plan. The building consists of a courtyard some 240 feet square, surrounded on all four sides with wide colonnades. The outer wall is of masonry, having projecting entrances on all three sides except the west. The main entrance is on the south side and consists of a recessed portico leading across the colonnade into the interior courtyard. A series of arched arcades with a clerestory goes round the courtyard, but in the centre of each side there is a square frontage containing an archway, while above it is the usual pyramidal roof and steeple already described. Of these four structures the one on the west, which is the largest, denotes the position of the nave of the sanctuary. This is entered through the great archway, and is contained within a double range of tall wooden posts, with an arched mihrāb occupying the interior wall, thus giving an air of spaciousness and breadth to this portion of the building. But the real greatness of the conception lies in the lofty colonnades extending around the entire building. They are composed of ranges of high and graceful posts, each made out of a single deodar trunk, varying from 25 feet to 50 feet in height, all amounting to 378 in number. The whole structure, owing to its breadth and spaciousness, its stately proportions and its graceful columns, is most impressive.

The mosque of Madani is another edifice constructed of wood and adjoins the tomb of Madani which has already been described. Its heavy corbelled cornice is very much like that of the mosque of Hamadānī. This mosque is in a very bad state of preservation. An inscription on the doorway suggests that both buildings were erected at the same time in 848/1444. The mosque was also, like the tomb, built on the site of an old Hindu temple, and just as two carved stone columns have been used in the inner chambers of the tomb, so some similar columns have been used in the porch of the mosque.

The bridges in Kashmir were constructed according to the cantilever principle. The main supports or piers are formed of layers of deodar logs resting on a foundation of uncremented stones enclosed in a
Tomb of Zainu'l-Abidin's mother

Gate of the Mosque of Madani.
triangular wooden frame. The layers are laid alternately lengthwise and across, each projecting slightly beyond the one immediately beneath it. This contrivance gives the piers the shape of an inverted pyramid, and, by reducing the span, permits the logs to be laid across one pier to the other, thus forming the roadway. Until 1952 two bridges built on the old pattern existed in Srinagar. But the floods of that year washed away one of them called Fatḥi Kadal, the third bridge, and a new one was constructed in its place. The sixth bridge, known as Nau Kadal, was rebuilt towards the end of 1954.¹

Music

The medieval period saw a great development of music in Kashmir. The Sulṭāns were great patrons of music and their courts were thronged with musicians from various parts of India, Central Asia, and Persia. Sulṭān Zainu’l-ʿAbidīn was a great lover of music and occasionally held musical concerts. His son and successor Ḥaidar could play excellently on musical instruments, while his grandson, Ḥasan Shāh, who was a musician, invited great artists from the Deccan so that they might introduce new elements in Kashmirī music and thus enrich it. Ḥasan Shāh had even a music department of which Śrīvara was the head.² Mīrzā Ḥaidar Dughlat also did a great deal for the development of music in the Valley. But perhaps the greatest patron and connoisseur of music among the medieval rulers of Kashmir was Yūsuf Shāh. His queen Habbā Khātūn was a great musician and introduced the melody of Rāst Kashmirī. With the downfall of the Chaks, owing to the absence of royal patronage, Kashmirī music did not achieve any further development.

Kashmirī music is the product of diverse elements, which have blended with one another. But the chief contribution to its development was made by Persia and Turkistān.³ In fact, the main schools of music in the Valley were founded by the Īrānī and Tūrānī musicians in the time of Sulṭān Zainu’l-ʿAbidīn.⁴

The classical music of Kashmir is known as Șūfiāna Kalām, which

¹. There are still some small bridges over the canals built according to the old pattern.
². Sriv., p. 231.
³. Kashmir, iv, No. 6, p. 135.
borrowed its style from Persian music. It has about fifty-four maqāmāt (modes), out of which some are like the Indian rāgas, and bear Indian names like Bhairavī, Lalit and Kalyān, while others have Persian names, as for example, Isfahānī, Dūgāh, Panjgāh, ‘Irāq, Rāst-i-Fārsī and Sehgāh. The most prevalent tāls are Sehīlts, Nimdūr, Dūr-i-Khaṣfī and Turki Ḷarb. These tāls are different from those of India. The bōls too are different. Moreover, unlike the Indian classical music, the Sūfīāna Kalām is always sung in chorus. In this respect Kashmirī music is unique. Formerly singing was done to the accompaniment of Ḥāfīz Nağhma, a dance which expressed the meaning of songs by physical movements. The accompanying instruments are Dhukrā Santūr, Sāz and Sitār. Other musical instruments common were Mizmūr (a kind of flute) and Taṁbūr (lute or guitar). The most popular instrument used in folk music is the Rabīb which was borrowed from Persia. ‘Ūd, which was introduced in the time of Zainu’l-‘Abidīn, is also common. The most popular types of folk music are the Chhakkri, Taṁbūr Nağhma and Bacha Nağhma, all of which are sung in chorus with often a little dancing. Among these the most common is the first which is sung in spring to the accompaniment of the Rabīb.

2. Mirzā Nasīr, Buḥūru’l-ahān p. 15. All these maqūms are included in the maqāmāt of Persian music. See Tuzuk-i-Jahāngīrī, ii, p. 148, where reference has been made to the use of Indian musical modes. Also see Zamūna, vol. 27, No. 164, pp. 194-95.
5. B.S., f. 26a; Tuzuk-i-Jahāngīrī, ii, p. 148.
6. Šriv., p. 136. ‘Ūd was probably an Iranian instrument. In Hijāz it was borrowed from Hīrā which was predominantly under Persian influence.
7. Kashmir i, No. 14 and iv, No. 4. Rabīb was specially favoured in Khurāsān, and it must have been introduced into Kashmir from there in the time of Zainu’l-‘Abidīn. It was, however, a national instrument of the Arabs. (See Farmer, History of the Arabian Music, p. 210).
CHAPTER XIV

CONCLUSION

We have seen that the Sultanate was founded in Kashmir not as a result of foreign invasion, but by a coup d'état from within the country. Hindu rule in the Valley had been in a decadent state for nearly two centuries before the rise of the Shâh Mîr dynasty. The kings who occupied the throne were weak and their ministers corrupt; the Brahmans were dissatisfied with the ruling class; civil strife was almost continuous; trade languished, and agriculture was at a standstill. It was on account of these factors that Shâh Mîr, though a foreigner whose religion and culture were quite different from those of the inhabitants of Kashmir, was able to seize power and lay the foundation of his dynasty. Tired of civil war and anarchy, the people not only did not resist him, but they greeted him as a saviour, and willingly submitted to him, hoping that he would give them peace and good government. For the same reason his successors also continued to enjoy popular support, and no attempt was made to overthrow their power.

The Kashmiris were not, on the whole, disillusioned in their new rulers, for under the able rule of Shâh Mîr and his successors trade revived, agriculture flourished, the burden of taxation was lightened, and life and property were rendered secure. Moreover, Kashmir under them once again opened its doors to foreign influences from Persia and Turkistân. This led to a clash of cultures, which resulted in a fresh renaissance in the country. Owing to the fusion of the old and new elements a new type of architecture and music came into existence; Kashmirî language was enriched; but, above all, great progress was made in painting and the minor arts.

The impact of this foreign culture was so profound and far-reaching that even today the people of Kashmir bear its impress. Diet and dress, marriage and morals, manners and customs, art and literature were all affected by influences which radiated from Persia and
Turkistān. But in many respects the changes brought about were only superficial: they were more in form rather than in spirit. There was change but no violent break. Customs, language, beliefs and practices were too deeply embedded in the people to be uprooted and replaced. The Kasmīris assimilated the new values, but the past was not eliminated; it was allowed to blend with the new. The result was the emergence of a society which, though differing from the old, was rooted in Indo-Kasmīri traditions. This is evident from a study of the Kasmīrī language and literature, art and architecture, religious beliefs and social life.

The government in medieval Kashmir was an enlightened secular despotism. The rulers for the most part ignored the advice of the Ulama, flouted the Shari'a, and pursued policies which were dictated not by religious but by practical and political considerations. From the contemporary accounts it is clear that the Sultāns drew their inspiration not from the Islamic ideals but from the monarchical traditions of India, Kashmir, and Persia.

The society in this period was feudal\(^1\) and based on class distinctions; but, unlike contemporary societies, slavery did not exist. The king and the nobles led a very cultured life. They were interested in literature, played chess and polo, and cultivated music and the arts. However, in matters of sex, their outlook was on the whole puritanical. They showed no special inclination for the delights of the harem; they kept no concubines; and they hardly ever degraded themselves by indulging in licentious revelries. The influence of the Ulama and Sufis was great, but it was generally confined to social and religious matters. Artizans and merchants, though forming a respectable section of the society, were politically unimportant. The peasantry, which formed the bulk of the population, being exposed to the hazards of floods and famines and exploitation by government officials, did not enjoy that well-being to which they were entitled by their labour. The period was characterised by great religious toleration. With the exception of

---

1. I have used feudalism here in the sense that power in Kashmir was mainly derived from land, and the conferring of jāgirs was a very important social and political institution. But this feudalism should not be confused with the feudalism of Western Europe which had quite a different basis.
Sikandar who persecuted the Hindus, Mîrza Ḥaidar who tyrannised the Nūrbakhshīyas and Shiʿites, and Yaʿqūb Shāh who was intolerant towards the Sunnīs, the Kashmir rulers adopted an extremely liberal policy. The Kashmirīs were superstitious, and were exploited both by the Mulla and the Pandit. Witty and intelligent, they were then, as now, very active and industrious. They were also very charitable; and they were so hospitable that they would not touch food without a guest. However, not only were they suspicious but also hostile towards foreigners, and it took a long time before their suspicion and hostility gave place to confidence and friendliness. The Kashmirīs were brave and good fighters, and the lack of martial spirit which foreigners have attributed to them in modern times, is not due to any innate deficiency of courage, but is the result of a long period of political servitude.

**Extent of the Kingdom**

The Sulṭāns of Kashmir, like most kings, desired self-aggrandisement. But there were two factors owing to which they could not fully realize their ambition. First, Northern India was during this period ruled by the Sulṭāns of Delhi and later on by the Mughals who were more powerful than the rulers of Kashmir. Under the circumstance, the latter never embarked on a career of conquest. It was only Shihābuʿd-Dīn who tried to extend his kingdom beyond the Sutlej, but he met with such resistance that he had to withdraw. No Kashmirī ruler ever again made an attempt to follow his example. The other factor which set a limit to the policy of expansion of the Sulṭāns was the geographical situation of Kashmir. Since the Valley was surrounded by layers upon layers of huge mountain walls, the invasion of the countries beyond them was a difficult task. Even if an invasion was undertaken, as was done by Shihābuʿd-Dīn, it could not effect any permanent occupation, for it was impossible to control distant countries across high mountain ranges from the Kashmir Valley. The area of operation of the Sulṭāns was, therefore, confined to the sub-montane regions adjoining Kashmir on the west and the south.

The extent of the kingdom over which the Sulṭāns exercised authority varied from time to time. Shāh Mīr and his son ‘Alāʿuʾd-Dīn ruled only the Kashmir Valley. Since they were pre-occupied with
internal problems of law and order, they never attempted to extend their kingdom. It was Shihābu’d-Dīn, ‘Alā’u’d-Dīn’s son, who, after consolidating his position at home, embarked on a career of conquest. The kingdom which he brought under his rule was retained by his successors and the Chaks with occasional changes of boundaries. Thus their kingdom comprised the following territories: — (1) The Valley of Kashmir which was the heart and centre of the whole kingdom. (2) The region of the Outer Hills which extended from the Rāvī in the east to the Jehlam in the west and comprised Jammu, Rajaurī and Pūnch. (3) Bhadrawāh, the Valley of the Chināb, and Kishtwār which lay between the Outer Hills and the high ranges around the Valley of Kashmir. (4) Ladākh and Baltistān. (5) The Kishangangā Valley and the Pakhī region which lay between the upper courses of the Jehlam and the Indus.

Of this kingdom only the Kashmir Valley, and later on Lohara (Pūnch), were directly administered from Srinagar, while the rest of the territory was governed by its own Rājās who, however, paid tribute to the Sultān. It is important to remember that it was the policy of the kings of Kashmir to exercise some kind of control over the territories surrounding the Valley because of their economic and strategic importance. Thus Ladākh was necessary for Kashmir because it supplied wool required for the Kashmirī shawls, and was the centre of Kashmir’s trade with Tibet, China, and Turkistān.1 The control of Pūnch, Rajaurī, and Jammu was necessary, for these places served as a spring board for an invasion of Kashmir. Moreover, the occupation of Pūnch and the hilly areas around Kashmir was also required as they were inhabited by turbulent tribes, who were accustomed to swoop on the Valley, plunder its inhabitants, and carry off women and children.2 But despite all this, the hold of the Sultāns over these territories, on account of the difficulties of communication across the high mountain barriers, was always weak and loose; and it ceased to exist during periods when the Valley was torn by civil strife and ruled by feckle kings.

CAUSES OF THE FALL OF THE SULTANATE

The Shāh Mīr dynasty produced from Shamsu’d-Dīn to Zainu’l-

1. See the section on Trade under Chapter XII.
'Abidín a succession of able rulers who, by reducing the crushing burden of taxation and by maintaining a fairly regular system of administration, guaranteed to the population a period of relative tranquillity after the chaos and misrule of the Lohara period. But under the successors of Zainu'l-'Abidín, who were weak and incompetent, the state of the country reverted, with short interludes of stability, to that which had existed before the establishment of the Sultanate. Haidar Shâh, his son, and Hasan Shâh, his grandson, spent most of their time over the wine cup or listening to music, and neglected the administration which was left into the hands of their unscrupulous courtiers who robbed the people to enrich themselves. Muḥammad Shâh. Fatḥ Shâh, and the subsequent rulers, though not dissolute, proved incapable of controlling those elements which were leading the kingdom to its fall. The result was that the Shâh Mîr dynasty was overthrown. The Chaks, who succeeded, at first ruled with wisdom and firmness, but the fourth ruler, Yūsuf Shâh, passed his time in ease and luxury and neglected public affairs. His son and successor Yaʿqūb, though possessed of great energy and courage, was self-willed and intolerant, and was, therefore, unable to counter the dangers, both internal and external, which threatened the country.

One of the causes of the downfall of Hindu rule in the Valley had been the failure of the kings to crush the Dâmaras. Lalitâditya had laid down that the villagers should not be left with a greater food supply than was required for one year's consumption, nor more oxen than were wanted for the tillage of their fields. This he had done in order to prevent the growth of a landed aristocracy which might cause him trouble. But unfortunately his successors did not act on his principles; nor did they adopt any other measures to check the power of the feudal lords. Shâh Mîr and his successors also made no attempt to strike at the basis of the system. The only thing which they did was to crush the turbulent chiefs and grant jāgîrs to those families who were prepared to serve them faithfully. They also tried to keep them weak and dependent by a policy of divide and rule. This system worked well so long as the rulers were strong, but after the death of Zainu'l-'Abidín, when the throne was occupied by weak

KASHMIR UNDER THE SULTĀNS

Kings, it broke down, for the internal feuds revived, and the country was distracted between the warring houses struggling for the possession of the Sultān. In the end, through this welter of confusion, the Chaks emerged victorious by defeating their rivals, the Māgres and the Rainas. They at first ruled in the name of the Shāh Mīr Sultāns, but soon afterwards they themselves assumed sovereign powers and founded their dynasty.

The Chak rule, it must be remembered, was based on the hegemony of the Chak tribe. The Chaks, as a rule, unlike the Shāh Mīrs, did not raise to prominence any other family other than their own. In this way they endeavoured to make their rule strong and stable. But unfortunately this system, too, did not last long, because internecine dissensions and rivalries started, and the members of the ruling house did not hesitate to make common cause with the rival families against their own kinsmen. This led to constant conflicts, and as a result the country was once more plunged into chaos and anarchy. It was left to the Mughal Emperor Akbar to establish law and order by destroying the feudal system and substituting in its place rule by the Mughal officers.

The lack of any definite and fixed rule of succession caused no small measure of social and political chaos and instability in the kingdom. Shamsu'd-Dīn had established a precedent by nominating his eldest son Jamshēd as his successor. But his younger son 'Alā'u'd-Dīn refused to acknowledge Jamshēd as Sultān, and himself laid claim to the throne. This led to civil war. Shihābu'd-Dīn made a new departure by depriving his own sons of the throne in favour of his brother Qūṭbu'd-Dīn. Similarly Zainu'l-Ābidīn designated his younger brother Maḥmūd as his heir-apparent. But when the latter died, he declared his second son Ḥājī Khān his successor to the exclusion of the eldest, Adham Khān. And soon afterwards, since Ḥājī revolted, he proclaimed Adham his heir-apparent. However, in the end, disgusted with all his sons he refused to nominate any one, leaving the title to the throne to be decided by force of arms. On the other hand, Zainu'l-Ābidīn's grandson, Ḥasan Shāh, left it to his queen to choose a ruler after his death, although his own preference was for Fath Khān, son of Adham Khān, since his own
sons were minors. When he died, Sayyid Hasan, the Wazir and brother of the Queen Mother, set up Hasan Shāh's son, Muḥammad Shāh, as ruler. But this did not prevent Fath Khān from claiming the throne. The result was that for thirty years the country was plunged into almost continuous internecine wars.

Under the Chaks also there was no fixed rule of succession. Ghāzi Shāh, the founder of the dynasty, appointed his brother Ḥusain Shāh as his successor. When Ḥusain Shāh became Sulṭān, he tried to divert the succession to his own son, but failed because his brother 'Alī Shāh rose in rebellion against him and seized the throne. Before he died, 'Alī Shāh had his son Yūsuf crowned as king. But Abdāl, his brother, put forth his own claim to the throne on the ground that it was the practice in the family that when a ruler died his brother succeeded him. This led to an armed conflict with Yūsuf. Although he was killed and Yūsuf was victorious, other members of the lateral branch of the Chaks were not wanting in advancing their titles to the throne. Yūsuf Shāh's son and successor Ya'qūb had to contend with the rival claimants, and this was one of the reasons why he failed to mobilise all the forces for the defence of the Valley against the Mughals.

The sectarian discord between the Sunnis and the Shi'ites also contributed to the downfall of the Sultanate. Until the end of the fifteenth century the Muslim population of Kashmir consisted mainly of Sunnis, the Shi'ites being numerically and politically unimportant. But with the arrival of Mīr Shamsu'd-Dīn in 1502, the number of Shi'ites gradually increased and they became politically influential. This roused the hostility of the Sunni chiefs who, incited by the orthodox Ulama, came into conflict with the Shi'ite nobles. However, we must be careful not to overemphasize the importance of the religious factor, for, though religious differences added to the confusion in Kashmir, the main causes responsible for the civil wars were the personal jealousies and ambitions of the feudal chiefs. That is why we find that very often the alignment of forces cut across religious differences. Thus, at first, in the reign of Mīrzā Ḥaidar, the Sunni and Shi'ite chiefs were pitted against one another, but later on, realising that Mīrzā Ḥaidar was exploiting their differences in order to consolidate his position, they joined together and overthrew him.
Under the Chak rulers also, owing to the liberal policy pursued by them until the time of Yusuf Shah, the internecine conflicts were not in the least influenced by religious considerations. It is true that the affairs of Yusuf Aindar and Qazi Habib embittered the relations between the two communities. When Yusuf was executed, the Shi'ites were filled with great resentment against the Sunnis; and similarly, when later on, Qazi Almas and Qazi Ganati were executed for having sentenced Yusuf to death, it created great bitterness among the Sunnis. However, it did not lead to any armed conflict. In fact, the ill feelings engendered by these events would have been forgotten had it not been for Ya'qub Shah who began to pursue an intolerant policy towards the Sunnis. He first of all tried to compel Qazi Musa to recite the name of 'Ali in the public prayers, and when this was refused, he reopened the question of the death sentence pronounced on Yusuf, and had Musa put to death. This turned the Sunni 'Ulama and nobles against Ya'qub. As a result, some of them proceeded to the court of Akbar and requested him to annex Kashmir, and when the Emperor sent an army for its invasion, they acted as guides.

The continuous discord and civil war weakened the administration, adversely affected trade and agriculture, and caused a decline in the general prosperity of the Valley. Another serious consequence of this internal strife was that it led to foreign invasions and to the eventual conquest of the Valley. On Hasan Shah's death one group of nobles set up his son Muhammad Shah on the throne. But shortly afterwards the latter was replaced by Fatih Shah who was supported by another party. Thrice Muhammad Shah became ruler, and thrice he was deposed. Finally, early in 1517, he proceeded to the court of Sikandar Lodhi (1489-1517) and sought his help. After this it became a common practice with the Kashmiri princes and nobles to proceed, on being defeated by their rivals, to the courts of the Delhi Emperors and invoke their help. In 1540, while Abdal Magre brought a Mughal army from the Punjab under Mirza Haidar, his rival Kazim Chak secured the aid of Shersh Shah. This invitation of foreign troops proved disastrous to the

1. A.N., iii, 763.
2. Ibid., Suka, p. 304, also notes the Shi'ite and Sunni differences during the reign of Ya'qub Shah.
independence of Kasmi̇r, for although Mīrzā Ḥaidar came as a
deliverer, he made himself master of the country. After the fall of
Mīrzā Ḥaidar, when the Chaks came to power, Kasmi̇r was again
subjected to foreign invasions through the invitations of its discontented
nobles and princes. But these were repelled by the courage and
resourcefulness of ʻĪdī Raina, Daulat Chak and Ghāzī Chak.

In January 1580, Yūsuf Shāh, driven from his country, proceeded to
Fathpur Sikri and sought the help of Akbar. This was readily given,
and although it was not employed, it provided the Emperor with a
casus belli for the invasion of Kasmi̇r. Yūsuf’s successor, Yaʿqūb,
carried on a valiant resistance against the Mughal armies, but owing to
the internal disunity, he failed to drive out the invaders. The result
was that Kasmi̇r lost her independence. “People say”, wrote Du Jarric,
“that this kingdom was one of the most formidable in these parts, and
that the Great Mogor would never have been able to subdue it but for
the factions which existed among the inhabitants”.1

For centuries Kasmi̇r, protected by its mountain ramparts, had
lived an isolated life, little affected by the outside happenings. The
invasions of the Arabs, Maḥmūd of Ghaznī, and Timūr had passed
her by, while the rise and fall of dynasties in the plains of Hindustān
had failed to disturb the course of her history. But with the Mughal
conquest her isolation was ended, and henceforth she came within the
orbit of Indian politics. Kasmi̇r lost her separate identity and became
like any other province of the Mughal Empire, while Srīnagar sank
to the status of a provincial town.

Another effect of the fall of the Sultanate was that the Kasmi̇rī
ruling families of Chaks, Māgres, Rainas, and Dārs were replaced by
a hierarchy of Mughal officers who became responsible for the adminis-
tration of the country. Besides, the defence of the Valley, too, was
undertaken by the Mughals. The result of this was that the Kasmi̇rīs
gradually lost their martial spirit and fighting qualities of which they
had given proof on many occasions in their struggles against the
invaders. Furthermore, Kasmi̇r during the Sultanate period had
achieved a high standard of culture, but with the disappearance of her
independence, her culture gradually declined. Srīnagar was denuded

1. Du Jarric, Akbar and the Jesuits, p. 76.
of poets, painters, and scholars, who had once adorned the courts of the Sultāns, because, owing to the absence of local patronage, they were compelled to leave the Valley and seek their livelihood elsewhere. They entered the service of the Mughal Emperors, and added to the brilliance of the imperial court, thereby precipitating the cultural impoverishment of Kashmir.
THE NURBAKHSHIYA SECT OF KASHMIR

The founder of the Nurbakhshiya sect was Sayyid Muhammad b. Muhammad b. 'Abdu'llah who was born in Qain in Kohistan in 795 A.H./1393 A.D. After finishing his education he became a disciple of Khwaja Ishq of Khatlan, who was himself a disciple of Sayyid 'Ali Hamadan. Khwaja Ishq gave him the title of "Nur Bakhsh" and conferred upon him the mantle of Sayyid 'Ali Hamadan, and then acclaimed him as the Mahdi, the Lord of his time, and Imam. But this brought Sayyid Muhammad Nur Bakhsh to the notice of Shahr Rukh, Timur's son and successor, who had him thrown into prison. As he did not completely renounce his pretensions, he had to undergo thrice long terms of imprisonment; and it was only at Shahr Rukh's death in 850 A.H./1447 A.D. that he finally secured his freedom. He then settled in Ray where he died in 869 A.H./1464 A.D. at the age of seventy-three. He was succeeded by his son Shah Qasim as his Khalifa (d.981 A.H./1573 A.D.).

The Nurbakhshiya movement was of a mystical character. Sayyid Muhammad Nur Bakhsh claimed to have seen the divine light and to have received the esoteric teachings of 'Ali through the Imam Ja'far-i-Sadiq. He believed in Sufi pantheism and in the renunciation of this world's vanities. To achieve "fana," the merging of the Self into the Divine, it was necessary to submit completely to the will of the Master, and then to undergo a long course "of service, solitude,

1. See for his life A. A. Hikmet, Les Voyages d'un Mystique Persan dans le Soudan (La Journal Asiatiq, cxxi, pp. 54 ff; also Yaghma, iv, No. 8, pp. 337 ff).
2. For a detailed account of the life of Sayyid Muhammad Nur Bakhsh, see Mirza Ma'süm, Tarā'iqul-Haqā'iq, pp. 143-44; and Nurullah Shushtari, Majalisul-Mu'minin, pp. 313 ff. See also Muhammad Shafi, The Nurbakhshiya Sect (Oriental College Magazine, Feb. 1925). The article in the Encycl. of Islam, vol. iii, is mainly based on the Majalisul-Mu'minin.
meditation, and companionship.” The organisation of the Nūrbakhshīya **khanqāhs** was similar to that of the **khanqāhs** belonging to the other Sūfī orders; and the **Zikr** ceremonies of the Nūrbakhshīya also resembled those performed by the Sūfis belonging to the Qādirī, Kubravī and Naqshbandī Orders. But their most important ceremonies were performed during the **Araba’in**, when new members were initiated into the Nūrbakhshīya mysteries, whole night vigils were maintained, prayers offered, and lectures delivered with quotations from Ghazzālī, Bīstāmī, and Junāid. **Ghazals** too were recited during these days, and they had such an effect that the Sūfis went into ecstasies and started dancing.¹

In his teachings, Sayyīd Muḥammad Nūr Bahkhsh was also influenced by Shī‘ism. Like the Shī‘ites he believed that the Imam should be immaculate, just, brave, the knower of all things, and a descendant of ‘Alī and Fāṭima. He enjoined love for the **Ahl-i-Bait** (the family of the Prophet), and both he and his followers never ceased emphasizing that their object was to spread the religion of Muḥammad and the Twelve Imāms.² The Nūrbakhshīyas celebrated Muḥarram, and some of them even wore black dress as an expression of grief for the martyrdom of Ḥusain.³ They practised **Mut’ah**, reviled ‘Āisha, the wife of the Prophet, and the first three Caliphs. However, like the Sunnis, they accepted the **Ijmā‘** or the consensus of opinion, though they rejected the practices forced upon by the rulers and represented as the result of **Ijmā‘**. Their claim was to revive the teachings of Muḥammad, enforce the **Shari’a**, and root out innovations and accretions that had crept into Islām.⁴ Their ideas are contained in the work known as **Fiqh-i-Ahwāt**.⁵

1. **Tuhfatul’-Aḥbāb**, pp. 120-24. The MS. is not foliated but paged, and therefore I have referred to page numbers.

2. Nūrullāh Shībštārī, **Muḥāsinul-Mu’minīn**, p. 315; **Tuhfatul’-Aḥbāb**, pp. 20, 23. Nūrullāh Shībštārī regards Sayyid Muḥammad as a Shī‘ite, but this is incorrect, because the latter’s pantheistic ideas and his claim to be an Imām and a Mahdī were completely opposed to the Shī‘ite doctrines.


4. **Ibid.**, 315; **Tuhfatul’-Aḥbāb**, p. 20. See also **Taqīkh-i-Rashīdī**, but Mīrza Ḥaldār is not always just to the Nūrbakhshīya.

5. **Tuhfatul’-Aḥbāb**, p. 3.
The Nürbakhshiya sect in Kashmir was introduced by Shamsu’d-Dīn who was born in the village of Kund near Solghan. His father was a Mūsāvī Sayyid, and his mother came from a Sayyid family of Qazvin. No details are available of his early life, and how he was converted to the Nürbakhshiya beliefs. However, it appears from his subsequent career that he must have received good education, for we know that he was eloquent of speech and a man of learning. These qualities brought him to the notice of Sultān Ḥusain Mīrzā Bāiqārā (1469-1506) of Herāt, who took him into his service and sent him as his envoy in 1481 to the court of Sultān Ḥasan Shāh of Kashmir. He stayed in the Valley for eight years. Being an envoy he could not carry on his missionary activities openly. He therefore preached secretly, and converted Bābā Ismā’īl Kubrāvī and Bābā ‘Alī Najjār to his faith. He was however found out, and owing to the hostility of the orthodox ‘Ulama, he was compelled to leave Kashmir. On his return to Herāt he aroused the suspicions of Sultān Ḥusain Mīrzā on account of his religious views. Alarmed at this, Shamsu’d-Dīn left the Sultān’s service, and went to live with Shāh Qāsim, the son of Sayyid Muḥammad Nūr Bakhsh, at Ray. Meanwhile, news came from Kashmir that Bābā Ismā’īl, whom he had appointed as his representative, had renounced the Nürbakhshiya beliefs and had relapsed into orthodoxy. As Shamsu’d-Dīn possessed first-hand knowledge of the Valley, Shāh Qāsim directed him to proceed there and revive and spread the Nürbakhshiya ideas. Shamsu’d-Dīn was however anxious to go to Baghdād and take the place of Maulānā Burhānu’d-Dīn who had died. But on Shāh Qasim’s advice and insistence, he agreed to proceed to Kashmir.

Shamsu’d-Dīn left Ray about the end of September, 1501, accompanied by a number of ṣūfis and their families. On the way he paid a visit to the tomb of Imām Raẓā at Mashhad. He then travelled

1. B.S., f. 60a.
2. Taḥṣalat-’Arbāb, p. 13; also W.K., f. 36b; and B.S., ff. 60a-b.
3. Taḥṣalat-’Arbāb, p. 4.
4. Ibid., p. 6.
5. Ibid., p. 8.
6. Ibid., pp. 14-16.
7. Chaks maintained that the book was not written by Shamsu’d-Dīn. But this is incorrect. See Firishta, p. 647 (Bombay Edition).
to Qandahār, and from there proceeded to Multān. Thence he set out towards the Salt Range, and after spending his winter there, he entered Kashmir early in the spring of 1502 by the Pūnch-Bārāmūla route.¹

On reaching Srinagar he won the confidence of Bābā ‘Alī Najjār who handed over to him all his disciples.² But the most important convert that he made at this time was Mūsā Raina, a powerful noble of Kashmir, who gave him money to carry on his work,³ and land at Jaddi Bal to build a khānjqāh. The foundation of the hospice was laid in 1503-04, and it was built the next year.⁴ But in spite of the initial success, Shamsu’d-Dīn had to face great obstacles later on. He was opposed by Sayyid Muḥammad Baihaqī,⁵ Muḥammad Shāh’s prime minister, and by the orthodox ‘Ulamā who were hostile to the new creed. Sayyid Muḥammad had, on the advice of the ‘Ulamā, opposed the construction of the Khānjqāh-i-Nūrbakhshīya by Shamsu’d-Dīn, and had only given him permission on account of Mūsā Rainā’s influence.⁶ However, he raised all kinds of difficulties in the way of Shamsu’d-Dīn’s activities, and even began to persecute his followers. Shamsu’d-Dīn therefore left Kashmir with fifty of his followers, and went to Baltistān where he continued his missionary activities, and succeeded in converting many of its Buddhist inhabitants to his creed.⁷ He remained there for two months until the defeat and death of Sayyid Muḥammad⁸ in 1505, when at the invitation of

---

1. Ṭuhfatul-Aḥbāb, pp. 24-25.
2. During the absence of Shamsu’d-Dīn, Bābā ‘Alī had remained, unlike Bābā Ismā‘īl Kubravi, attached to the new creed. (See Majālisul-Mu’minin (MS.), f. 67b.).
3. Ṭuhfatul Aḥbāb, p. 29.
4. Ibid., p. 64.
5. The Baihaqī Sayyids came to Kashmir during the reign of Sultān Sikandar (1389-1413). They married in the royal family, and played an important part in the political affairs of the Valley.
6. Ṭuhfatul Aḥbāb, 54-55.
7. Ibid., pp. 63-64.
8. When this news was communicated to Shamsu’d-Dīn, he was so angry with the messenger that he belaboured him for bringing such a bad news. Shamsu’d-Dīn, unlike common expectations, felt sad and prayed for the long
Mūsā Rāínā he returned to Šrīnagar. Shamsu’‑d‑Dīn’s great opportunity came when Mūsā Rāínā became prime minister after the fall of Shams Chak. During the period he remained in power, he gave full support to Shamsu’‑d‑Dīn in his activities. A further source of strength to the latter was the conversion of Tājī Chak and other Chak nobles. Thus by the time Shamsu’‑d‑Dīn died the Nūrbakhshīya had gained a strong footing in the Valley. After his death his work was carried on by his son Dāniyāl and other of his Khalīfās.

But the Nūrbakhshīyas suffered a great setback in the time of Mīrzā Ḥaidar Duqhlāt, who persecuted them thinking that if there was uniformity of religion in Kashmir there would be peace in the country. After the fall and death of Mīrzā Ḥaidar in 1551 the Chaks began to play a dominant role in the politics of the Valley, and, as a result, the Nūrbakhshīyas were once again permitted to preach and practice their religion freely. But, meanwhile, a great change had come over the Nūrbakhshīya beliefs. Under the influence of Persia where Shāh Ismā’īl, the founder of the Safavid dynasty (1502‑1736), had declared Shi’ism or the doctrines of the Twelvers as the state religion, the Nūrbakhshīya took on increasingly the character of a Shi’ite movement. It gradually shed those of its doctrines which were in conflict with Shi’ism, until there was nothing left to distinguish it from the latter. Thus the Chaks, who enjoyed a brief spell of power in Kashmir and who had been converted to the Nūrbakhshīya by the efforts of Shamsu’‑d‑Dīn, called themselves Shi’ites. When Akbar conquered the Valley in 1586, there were still some Nūrbakhshīyas left, but in the course of time they disappeared, some becoming Sunnis, while others embracing Shi’ism. In remote areas, however, where

life of the sons of Sayyid Muhammad who had survived the civil war. (B.S.), ff. 76b‑77a; Tuhfatul‑Aḥbāb, p. 70.

1. Tuhfatul‑Aḥbāb does not record the date of Shamsu’‑d‑Dīn’s death. But from a study of the work it appears that he must have died just before the first invasion of Kashmir by Mīrzā Ḥaidar in 1533. (See also N.A., f. 69b).

2. B.S., f. 111b. See pp. 137 sqq. supra, for details of this persecution.

3. Fīrishtā says that during his time most of the soldiers were Shi’ites. The Chaks, who were Shi’ites, maintained that Shamsu’‑d‑Dīn was a Shi’ite.

external influences had some difficulty in penetrating, the Nūrbakhshīyas survived, but their beliefs and practices were greatly diluted by the influence of the local Sunnī communities.¹

¹ For the Nūrbakhshīyas in modern times, see Census of India, 1911, Vol. XX, Kashmir, part 1, p. 105; and Biddulph, Tribes of the Hindu Kush, p. 125.
APPENDIX B

CURRENCY, COINAGE, WEIGHTS AND MEASURES

Currency.

Persian annals of Kashmir hardly throw any light on the monetary system under the Shah Mīrs and the Chaks. The little information that we get is from Abū’l Fazl’s Ā‘īn and from the four Sanskrit chronicles.

The monetary system of Kashmir did not undergo any basic change under the Sulṭāns, but remained more or less the same as it had been under the Rājās. The coinage under the Sulṭāns consisted almost entirely of copper, the copper coins being called Kasiras or Pūnchhus. But the unit of the Kashmiri monetary system was the cowrie, which was used for fractional payments or minor purchases. Zainu’l-‘Ābidīn is said to have struck coins in lead and brass. Silver coins were uncommon, while gold coins were rare. In fact, it should be noted that gold and silver did not form an important part of the actual coined currency of Kashmir. However, it appears that under the Chaks silver and gold coins were more in use than under the Shah Mīrs. This is probably due to the close relation with the Mughal Empire.

The Kashmir currency under the Sulṭāns consisted of dinār, bāhagani, pūnchhu, hath, sāsun, lakh, and crore. The following were their values:—

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Value</th>
<th>Equivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>12 Dinārs</td>
<td>1 Bāhagani</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 Bāhagani</td>
<td>1 Pūnchhu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 Pūnchhu</td>
<td>1 Hath</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 Hath</td>
<td>1 Sāsun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100 Sāsun</td>
<td>1 Lakh</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100 Lakh</td>
<td>10,000,000 Dinārs or 1 Koṭī (Crore)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

1. See Stein, ii, 308-28, for more details about the monetary system of Kashmir.
2. Ibid., 312, 315.
3. Srīv., p. 101; see also Stein, ii, 324.
4. Ibid., 318.
In addition to these coins other types of coins were also used. Thus, copper pieces of Toramāna were current under the Sultāns before the time of Hasan Shāh. But the latter, finding that they were no longer circulating, struck a new coin called dvidinārī made of lead.1 There is also reference in the chronicles to ashrafīs and tankas which Muhammad Shāh's queen spent to erect a khāṅqāḥ for Mīr Shamsu'd-Dīn.2 Sometimes bullion took the place of gold and silver coins. Thus under Sikandar and Zainu'l-Ābidīn the Jizya was paid in silver. Under the Chaks it was paid in panās. But what coin is meant by the panā is not clear.3 Rice was also employed in payments of rents, fines, and interest. All wages and salaries were paid in kharwārs of rice. Thus the monetary system of Kashmir, though based on the cowrie unit, was represented in its main bulk by a copper coinage and was supplemented in all important transactions of public business and private life by kharwārs of rice.4

Coinage

On the basis of the coins of the Kashmir Sultāns, hitherto obtainable, the conclusions arrived at by Rogers, Lane-Poole, Wright, and others still remain unchallenged. It is therefore difficult to say anything beyond summarising the views of these writers. Fresh light can only be thrown in case some new and varied specimens are unearthed.

No coins of the Kashmir Sultāns are known to exist earlier than those of Sultan Sikandar. The silver coins bearing the name of Shams Shāh should be regarded as belonging to Shamsu'd-Dīn II and not to Shamsu'd-Dīn I, the founder of the Sultanate in Kashmir.5 The Kashmir coins possess certain characteristics which distinguish them from the coins of the Sultāns of Delhi. In the first place they are extremely inartistic. As Rogers observes: “Kashmirīs were the worst die-sinkers of the world”.6 Moreover, the coins vary very little, and there is a certain monotony about them. Secondly, they are not very helpful in fixing the dates of accession and regnal periods of the

---

rulers. This is due partly to the fact that the dates on a large number of coins are not legible, and partly because the same date is employed by successive rulers. No consideration was paid to chronology when the Sultāns struck coins in honour of their predecessors.1

Copper Coins

The copper coins are very common. However, as they are not obtainable in a legible form, they are not useful in fixing the chronology of Kashmir. They are round in shape with an average diameter of 8" and weight varying from 71 to 100 grams. The obverse has a bar (a line across the middle of the coin) with a central knot of arabesque design. The knot is in some cases elaborate; in others it consists of a carelessly formed circle. The name of the king is written below the bar, but above come the word Sulta’nul-A’zam. In every case, except that of Zainu’l-Abidīn, the word Shāh is added to the name. But Zainu’l-Abidīn is the only Sulta’n who calls himself Nā‘īb-i-Amīru’l-Mū’mīnīn. The reverse is occupied completely with “Zarb-i-Kashmir” and the year is added in Arabic words. The coins of Ḥusain Shāh, ‘Alī Shāh, and Yūsuf Shāh mention the year in Persian instead of Arabic.2

Although some of the coins of Zainu’l-Abidīn conform to the bar and knot form, he was the only ruler to have introduced a new type. He not only struck coins in copper, but also in brass. His coins have the word zarb crossed by the word Kashmir, and around these words is a quarterfoil lozenge with elaborate knots in the outer corners.3 In some of his coins on the obverse the names and titles are in double-circle, surrounded by a circle of dots.4 Unlike Zainu’l-Abidīn’s silver coins, which have the date 842 A.H., his copper coins bear 841 and 851.6 What is the significance of these dates, it is impossible to say. A copper coin of Muhāmmad Shāh and Fath Shāh bears the date 874/1470.6 This must have been coined in honour of Ḥaidar Shāh who reigned from 1470 to 1472. One coin of Ḥusain Shāh bears the date 977/1569-70, which must have been struck towards the end of his

1. Ibid., liv (1885), pp. 95-7. 2. Ibid., xlviii (1879), p. 282. 3. Ibid. 4. Ibid., p. 284. 5. Lane-Poole, Coins of the Muhammadan States of India, pp. 71-2. 6. J.A.S.B., liv (1885), p. 96.
reign. The coin of Yūsuf Shāh bearing 986/1578-9 must have been struck immediately after his accession early in 1579.\(^1\)

**Silver Coins**

The silver coins are square-shaped, and their weight varies from 91 to 96 grains, and breadth from ‘6” to ‘65”. The lightest coin is of Shamsu’d-Dīn II, and the heaviest is that of Yūsuf Shāh.\(^2\) There is a certain monotony about the silver coins: they are all square-shaped and have some kind of lozenge on the reverse.\(^3\) The silver coins are not as common as the copper ones.

As has already been pointed out, the coins of the Kashmir Sultāns are not much useful from the point of view of determining chronology. Thus though Zainu’l-‘Abidīn reigned for fifty years, all his silver coins have the date of 842 both in figures and words: the figures appearing on the obverse, and the words in Arabic on the margin of the reverse. This date is in fact borne on the coins of rulers who reigned long after 842, so they do not help in determining the chronology of the period, but only add to the confusion.\(^4\) Thus the silver coins of Ibrāhīm Shāh I and Ibrāhīm Shāh II are dated 842 in Arabic words.\(^5\) Similarly the silver coins of Muḥammad Shāh, which are rare, also bear 842.\(^6\) However, one of his coins bears the date 895/1490 and that of Fatḥ Shāh the date 896.\(^7\) These coins are very important. Muḥammad Shāh’s coin bearing the date 895 must have been coined towards the close of his first reign, while Fatḥ Shāh must have struck his coin at his accession after November 14, 1490, when the year 896 began. Ḥaidar Shāh’s coins bear the date 874/1470 which was the year of his accession. But it must have been struck after May 12, 1470, when Zainu’l-‘Abidīn died, and before the beginning of 875 which began on June 30, 1470. Although Ḥasan Shāh’s coins have the year 842 in Arabic words, on the obverse they have the date 876/1472, the

---

1. Ibid., xlviii (1879), p. 285.
3. Ibid.
6. Ibid., p. 110.
7. Lane-Poole, *Coins of the Muhammadan States of India*, pp. 76-8.
The coins of Ḥusain Shāh Chak bear the date 970/1562-63, which signifies the year of his accession. Another of his coin bears 972. The coins bearing the name of ʿAlī Shāh Chak must have been minted by his son Yūsuf Shāh because of the dates ranging from 987 to 990 which they bear. These must have been coined by Yūsuf Shāh in honour of his father. However, one coin bearing the date 980 was coined by ʿAlī Shāh himself. Another coin of his bearing the date 986/1578-79 must have been minted by him towards the end of his reign. One of Yūsuf Shāh’s coins, which must have been struck shortly after his accession, is dated 987. Like the copper coins, the silver coins of Ḥusain Shāh, ʿAlī Shāh, and Yūsuf Shāh bear the dates in Persian.

On the obverse the silver coins have the inscription Zarb-i-Kashmīr, enclosed within a lozenge-shaped border of wavy lines, and the date is inscribed in the segments outside the lozenge. The reverse contains the name of the king with his title. All the Shāh Mīr Sultāns have the title of Sultanul-A’zam and Shāh with the exception of Zainu’l-‘Ābidīn who has only the first title. The Chak rulers call themselves Pādshāh and Ghāzī, but, in addition, each ruler adopts a separate title.

In the time of Nāzuk Shāh, while Ḥaidar Shah was the de facto ruler of Kashmir, coins were struck in the name of Humāyūn. These coins are of the same type as those of the preceding kings. One of the coins bears 俟, which is a letter of Mīrzā Ḥaidar’s name. The dates of these coins fall within the period during which Mīrzā Ḥaidar ruled. One silver coin, however, bears the name of Nādir Shāh with the date 957/1550. No king of such a name ruled Kashmir. It must have been, therefore, the title or second name of Nāzuk Shāh II, and must have been struck towards the close of Mīrzā Ḥaidar’s rule. There are also other coins of Nādir Shāh, but they are not legible. A few silver coins bearing the name of Islām Shāh and the date 957 have also been found. Since he never ruled Kashmir, the nobles of the country must have struck them as a compliment to him and in order to get his support against Mīrzā Ḥaidar.4

3. Ibid., p. 97.
4. Ibid., p. 119.
The number of gold coins so far discovered is very small. Each of them weighs about 175 grains. The obverse presents the kalima in a circle. The mint name is represented in Arabic by the epithet Dāru's-Sulṭanat (Seat of the Sultanate and by a motto “May it be preserved from destruction.” The reverse contains the name of the Sulṭān and his titles. But there is a great diversity of reverse legend. Zainu'l-'Abidīn is called Nā'ib-i-Amīru'l-Mū'mīnīn Qūbū'd-Dīn Abū'l-Mujāhidu'l-'Adīlu's-Sulṭān. Ḥaidar Shāh’s gold coin also bears on the reverse Nā'ib-i-Khalīfatu'r-Rahīmānu's-Sulṭān. Zainu'l-'Abidīn and Ḥaidar Shāh are the only Sulṭāns of Kashmir who regard themselves as deputies of the reigning Caliph. A gold coin of Ḥasan Shāh is called Nagīn-i-Mulk khātim-i-Sulaimān (Signet of the kingdom, Solomon’s seal). The coins of Humāyūn, Ibrāhīm Shāh, and Mubārak Shāh bear different legends.1

Weights and Measures

16 Māshas = 1 Tola
80 Tolas = 1 Seer
7½ Pals = 1 Seer
4 Seers or 1 Maund = Tarak (5 Seers of present day)
16 Taraks = 1 Kharwār
1 Kharwār = lbs. or 83 Seers of present day.
1 Gira = 2½ Inches
16 Giras = 1 Gaz
20 Giras = 1 Gaz (employed in measuring pashmina cloth).

In India land was divided into plots each of which was called bigha. But in Kashmir each plot was called patta. This was equal to 1 bigha and 1 hiswa according to the Ilāhī Gaz which is equal to 33 inches of the present day. The Kashmirīs, however, reckoned 2½ pattas as equal to 1 bigha (Kashmirī).2 Under Zainu'l-'Abidīn the length of the jarīb was increased,3 but the details are not know.

2. A.N., iii, 830-31.
APPENDIX C

THE CHRONOLOGY AND GENEALOGY OF THE SULTANS OF KASHMIR

There are two main reasons why the chronology of the Sultans of Kashmir is so obscure. In the first place, the chronicles do not agree with each other in regard to the dates of accession of the rulers and their regnal periods. In the second, the coins are not much helpful in fixing the chronology.

Sir Wolseley Haig was the first to make a serious attempt to fix the chronology of the Kashmir rulers; but the mistake which he made was that he mainly utilised the Tabaqät-i-Akbari, the Ta'rīkh-i-Firishta, and the A'īn-i-Akbarī, and completely ignored the Sanskrit chronicles.1 Recently Dr. A. K. Majumdar has made a study of the subject; but, while he has made use of the Sanskrit chronicles and the Mughal accounts, he has not consulted the Persian chronicles of Kashmir.2 Only when all the important authorities have been carefully studied, can the chronology and the genealogy of the Medieval rulers of Kashmir be correctly constructed.

The most reliable authority for the early history of the Shāh Mīr dynasty up to the 19th year of Zainu'l-Ābidīn's reign is Jonarāja. Śrīvara, his pupil, is a contemporary authority for the period from about 1459 to 1486, the year of Mūhammad Shāh's first reign. There should, therefore, be no difficulty in regarding the dates given by Jonarāja and Śrīvara as correct. Ḥaidar Malik, the author of the Bahāristān-i-Shāhī, Abū'l-Fażl, and Niẓāmū'd-Dīn have all derived their chronology from the Sanskrit accounts. That in spite of this their dates differ not only from each other but also with those assigned by Jonarāja and Śrīvara, is due to the fact that they made mistakes in

converting the *Laukika* era, which is a solar era, into the *Hijra*, which is a lunar era.

Some of the dates assigned by Jonarāja and Śrīvara can be checked by the coins of the Sulṭāns and by the contemporary Persian accounts. Thus the date of the accession of Zainu'l-Ābidīn given by Jonarāja as 1420 is supported by the *Ta‘rikh-i-Mubāarak Shāhī*, a contemporary authority.¹ The year assigned for the death of the Sulṭān by Śrīvara is 1470. This date agrees with the date of Ḥaidar Shāh’s accession as determined by legends on coins.² The date of Ḥaidar Shāh’s death in 1472 is corroborated by legends on the coins of his son and successor Ḥasan Shāh.³ The date of the latter’s death and the dates in connection with the first reign of his son, Muḥammad Shāh, have been given by Śrīvara. And since the latter was connected with the court of Ḥasan Shāh we must accept his chronology.

The main difficulty that arises is in connection with the dates of the first period of Fath Shāh’s reign. This is because there is a gap in Prājayabhatṭa’s account from 1486 to 1514. When Śrīvara left off writing his narrative, the throne was occupied by Fath Shāh. At the time Śuka began his work, we find Fath Shāh again on the throne. Now, as is evident from the Persian chronicles of Kashmir, Fath Shāh did not rule all the time during this period. Actually the period was divided between him and Muḥammad Shāh, the former ruling for seven years (1486-1493) and the latter for twelve years (1493-1505). In 1505,⁴ Fath Shāh for the second time captured the throne and ruled for nine years (1505-14).⁵ It is to this period of Fath Shāh’s reign that Śuka refers and not to his first. Moreover, the events which Śuka describes took place not in Fath Shāh’s first reign, but in his second reign. This is evident from a study of the Persian chronicles of Kashmir. Nizāmu’d-Dīn and Abū’l-Fażl, however, make the mistake of regarding the second reign of Fath Shāh as his first reign. That is why Fath Shāh,

¹. See p. 69 and n. 8.
⁴. B.S., f. 77b. B.S. gives the date in *Laukika* era as 8111505. The *Hijra* date of 90711501 is incorrect.
⁵. Śuka, p. 34 f.
according to them, ruled twice and Muḥammad Shāh four times, although in reality they ruled thrice and five times respectively.

Muḥammad Shāh captured power for the third time in 1514. He had ruled only nine months when Fāṭḥ Shāh invaded the Valley and seized the throne for the third time. Driven from the Valley, Muḥammad Shāh proceeded to Sikandar Lodī and secured his help. Now Sikandar Lodī died on November 21, 1517, and so Muḥammad Shāh must have received help about the middle of that year. With the aid of the Afghān troops Muḥammad Shāh succeeded in defeating Fāṭḥ Shāh and occupying the throne. He ruled for about twelve years (1517-28) for the fourth time. He was dethroned by his Wazīr, Kāji Chak, who raised his son, Ibrāhīm, to the throne. Meanwhile, Kāji’s rival, Abdāl Māgre, proceeded to Delhi, and having obtained the aid of Bābur, conquered the Valley. He dethroned Ibrāhīm Shāh, and in his place set up Nāzuk Shāh, the son of Fāṭḥ Shāh, on the throne (1529). But Nāzuk Shāh ruled only for a year, for Muḥammad Shāh was released from prison and enthroned in 1530. This date of Muḥammad Shāh’s fifth restoration must be regarded as correct, because, according to the Tabaqāt-i-Akbari, Bābur’s death took place shortly after this event. Muḥammad Shāh ruled until his death in 1537. He was succeeded by his son Shamsu’addin; and on the latter’s death in 1540, Kāji set up his own son-in-law, Ismā’il, another son of Muḥammad Shāh, on the throne. When Mīrzā Ḥaidar occupied Kashmir, Ismā’il fled the country, and Nāzuk Shāh was proclaimed king. He remained on the throne until 1552, when he was deposed by Daulat Chak in favour of Ibrāhīm, who had ruled before. But Ghāzī, on seizing power, enthroned Ismā’il; and on the latter’s death in 1557 his son Ḥabīb was made Sultān. But in 1561, Ghāzī himself assumed the crown, and thus founded the Chak dynasty.

The chronology of the subsequent rulers of Kashmir does not present any difficulty, and can easily be fixed with the help of contemporary accounts.

2. T.A., iii, 463.
3. B.S., ff. 102a-b; Suka, p. 375.
4. B.S., 102b; Suka, 375.
5. See p. 146 and n. 7, supra.
6. B.S., 106a; H.M., 144b
7. See p. 151 and notes 3-5, supra.
Chronology of the Shāh Mīr Dynasty

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>A.D.</th>
<th></th>
<th>A.D.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>Shamsu’d-Dīn I</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1339</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>Jamshēd</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1342</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>‘Alā’u’d-Dīn</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1343</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Shihābu’d-Dīn</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td>Qūṭbu’d-Dīn</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.</td>
<td>Sikandar</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1389</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>‘Alī Shāh</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1413</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>Zainu’l-‘Abidīn</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1420</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.</td>
<td>Ḥāidār Shāh</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1470</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.</td>
<td>Ḥasan Shāh</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1472</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11.</td>
<td>Muḥammad Shāh (i)</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1484</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12.</td>
<td>Fath Shāh (i)</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1486</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13.</td>
<td>Muḥammad Shāh (ii)</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1493</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.</td>
<td>Fath Shāh (ii)</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1505</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Chronology of the Chak Dynasty

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>A.D.</th>
<th></th>
<th>A.D.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>Ghāzī Shāh</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1561</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>Ḥusain Shāh</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1563</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>‘Alī Shāh</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1570</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Yūsuf Shāh (i)</td>
<td>1578-79</td>
<td>6.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td>Lohar Shāh</td>
<td>...</td>
<td>1579</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
GENEALOGY OF THE SHĀH MĪR DYNASTY
(Figures in brackets denote the order of succession)

Waqūr Shāh
   /  Tāhir
(1) Shamsu'd-Dīn I
   /  (2) Jamshīd  (3) 'Alā'u'd-Dīn
   /  (4) Shihābu'd-Dīn  (5) Qutbu'd-Dīn

Hasan Khān  'Alī Khān
   /  Haibat Khān
(6) Sikandar
(7) 'Alī Shāh  (8) Zainu'l-Abidīn  Mahmūd Khān  Muḥammad  Fīrūz

Adham Khān  (9) Haidar Shāh  Bahrām Khān  Jasrat
   /  (12) Fath Shāh
(10) Hasan Shāh

Sikandar Khān  Ḥabīb Khān  (14) Nāzuk Shāh  (11) Muḥammad Shāh  Husain  Yūsuf

Ḥājī Haidar  Salīm Khān  (13) Ibrāhīm  (15) Shamsu'd-Dīn II  (16) Ismā'īl Shāh
(17) Ḥabīb Shāh
GENEALOGY OF THE CHAK DYNASTY

Lankar Chak

Pândū Chak

Husain Chak

Hasan Chak

Kāji Chak

Tâzī Chak

Daulat Chak

Ghāzi Shāh

Haidar Chak

Aiba Khān

Ahmad Khān

Shams Chak

Lohar Chak

Husain Shāh

Nuṣrat Chak

Muḥammad Chak

Mas'ūd Chak

(2) Husain Shāh

(3) 'Alī Shāh

Abdāl Chak

Shankar Chak

(4) Yusuf Shāh

(5) Lohar Shāh

(6) Ya'qūb Shāh

Ibrāhīm Khān

Yūsuf Khān

Ibrāhīm

Haidar

Habīb Khān

Aiba Khān

1. He occupied the throne only for four days.
APPENDIX D

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Of the chief works to which reference has been made

I. Persian Manuscript Sources

Abâ Rafî'u'd-Dîn Aḥmad, Nawādiru'l-Akhbâr, B.M. Add. 24029.
‘Abdu'llâh, Ta'rikh-i-Dâ'ûdî, I.O. 224.
‘Abdu'l-Qâdir Khân, Ḥashmat-i-Kasmîr, A.S.B. 42.
Amin Aḥmad Râzî, Haft Iqlim, A.S.B. 282.
Bâdî'u'd-Dîn Abû'l-Qâsim, Gauhar-i-'Ālam, A.S.B. 189.
Bâhâristân-i-Shâhî, Anonymous. (a) I.O. 509.

(b) B.M. Add. 16, 706.
Dâ'ûd Mishkâtî, Asrâru'l-Abrâr, R.P.D., Srinagar.
Ganâsh Dâs Ta'rikh-i-Râjgân-i-Jammû or Râjdarshâni.

(a) I.O. 507. (b) B.M. Or. 1634.
Ḥaider Malik, Ta'rikh-i-Kasmîr, (a) I.O. 510.

(b) Bib. Nationale, Blochet, i, 626.
(c) R.P.D. Srinagar.
Ḥasan b. 'Alî Kasmîrî, Ta'rikh-i-Kasmîr, Bodleian 315.
Khwâja Isḥâq Qârî, Hilyatu'l-'Ārifîn, B.M. Or. 1868.
Malfuzât-i-Timûrî, A.S.B. 85.
Muḥammad Aţâm, Waqî'ât-i-Kasmîr, A.S.B. 41.
Muḥammad Sharîf an-Najafî, Majâlisu'l-Sâli'în, B.M. Add. 30, 779.
Mullâ Aḥmad b. Šubûr Kasmîrî, Khawârîqu'l-Sâlikîn, R.P.D. Srinagar.
Mullâ 'Alî Raina, Tażkira'tu'l-'Ārifîn, R.P.D. Srinagar.
Nâṣîbu'd-Dîn Ghâzî, Nûr-nâmah, R.P.D. Srinagar.
Nūru’d-Dīn Ja’far Badakhshī, Khulāṣatū’l-Manāqib, Tubingen University Library, W. Germany.
—Manqabatū’l-Jawāhir. R.P.D. Srinagar.
Pandit Sāvēj Dar, Ahwāl-i-Mulk-i-Kishtwār, R.P.D. Srinagar.
Pīr Ḥasan Shāh, Ta’rikh-i-Hasan, 4 vols. R.P.D. Srinagar.
Sayyid ‘Alī, Ta’rikh-i-Kashmir, R.P.D. Srinagar.

II. Persian, Sanskrit and Arabic Printed Sources and Translations.
Barānī, Žiyā’u’d-Dīn, Ta’rikh-i-Firuz Shāhī, Bib. Ind. Calcutta 1862.
Briggs, j., History of the rise of the Mahomedan power in India, till the year 1612, being an Eng. tr. of the Ta’rikh-i-Firishta. 4 vols. Calcutta 1808-10.


Firishta, Muhammad Qasim, *Ta'rikh-i-Firishta*. Bo. ed. 1832.


### III. Travellers’ Accounts


Laet, De, see Hoyland.

Markham, R., (ed.) *Narratives of the Missions of George Bogle to Tibet and of the Journey of Thomas Manning to Lhasa*. London 1879.


Trebeck, G., see Moorcroft.


**IV. Secondary Works.**


*Archaeological Survey of India Report 1906-7*. See Nicholls, W. H.


--- *Indian Painting under the Mughals*. Oxford 1924.


Dozy, R.P.H., *Dictionnaire détaillé des noms de Vêtements chez les Arabes*. Amsterdam 1845.
BIBLIOGRAPHY

Encyclopaedia of Islam. Leyden 1913--
—Taʾrikh-i-Bud Shāh (Urdu). London 1944.
—*History of the Western Tibetan Regions*. London 1907. See also Sāḥnī.
308 KASHMĪR UNDER THE SULTĀNS

Hekmat, A.A., Az Hamadān tā Kashmir, Yaghmā, iv, No. 8, 337-43.
Hutchinson, J., & Vogel, J.P.H., History of the Kishtwār State J.P.H.S., iv, 30-8.
—History of the Pūnch State. J.P.H.S., ix, 106-27.
—History of the Rajaurī State. J.P.H.S., ix, 131-49.
—Handbook of the Archaeological and Numismatic Section of the Sri Partāp Museum. Srinagar 1923.
—Life Sketch of Laleshwarī, I.A., 1921, L, 302-12.
Lane-poole, S., The Coins of the Muhammadan States of India. London 1883.
—The Muhammadan Dynasties, Chronological and Genealogical Tables. Westminster 1894.
Maclagen, R., On Early Asiatic Weapons. J.A.S.B., 1876. xlv. 30-71

Majumdar, R.C., The Classical Age, Bombay 1954.

Majumdar, S.N., Cunningham’s Ancient Geography of India. Calcutta 1924.


Mīrzā Ẓafaru’llāh Khān, Taṣkira-i-Rājgān-i-Rajaur (Urdu). Julundhar 1907.


Qureshī, I.H., The Administration of the Sultanate of Dehli. Lahore 1944.


Sa‘ādat, Muftī Muḥammad Shāh, *Bulbul Shāh Šāheb* (Urdu), Lahore 1936/1941.
—Notes on the Ancient Topography of the Pīr Panjāl Route, *J.A.S.B.*, 1895, lxiv, 376-86.
—Memoir on Maps Illustrating the Ancient Geography of Kashmir. *J.A.S.B.*, lxviii, 1899 (extra No. 2), 1-232. This article is also included in Kalhana’s *Rajatarangini* tr. by Stein as Memoir of the Ancient Geography of Kashmir, ii, 345-494.
Vogel, see Hutchinson.
Weber, A., see Lokapraš.
Vol. ii, Oxford 1907.
INDEX

For typographical reasons, it has been found necessary to omit diacritical marks in the index. The correct transliteration of the Sanskrit, Arabic, and Persian names and words must therefore be sought in the text.

Aba Rafiud-Din Ahmad, author of *Nawadirul-Akhbar*, 13.

Abbasids, 27, 196, 197.

Abdal Bat, revolts against Yusuf Shah, 163; intrigues of, 165; 166, 167; defeated and killed, 168; 170.

Abdal Khan, brother of Ali Shah Chak, sent against Prince Yusuf, 159; sent to reduce Kishtwar, 160; claims throne but is killed, 162; burial of, 163; 179, 212; and the question of succession, 279.

Abdal Magre, 115; goes to Delhi, 121; becomes Wazir, 122; 124; fights against Mirza Haidar, 128; defeated by Kaji Chak, 130; and Mirza Haidar, 131-32; death of, 133; 280, 297.

Abdullah Samarqandi, see Mulla Abdullah.

Abdul-Qadir Badauni, 9.

Abdul-Qadir Khan, a u t h o r  of *Hushnznt-i-Kashnzir*, 13.

Abdul-Wahhab author of *Fatuhal-i-Knbri~viyn*, 14.

Abdur-Rahman, brother of Mirza Haidar, 140.

Abdur-Rahim Khan-i-Khanan, 9.

Abhimanyu, 100, 101.

Abu Dulaf Misar, on the food of Kashmiris, 229n.

Abu Hanifa, 100.

Abul-Fazl, review of works of, 10, 14; on Zulju, 33; on Kashmir temples, 66; on Kashmir parganas under Akbar, 207; on markets in Kashmir, 243; on export of shawls, 247; on Kashmir's population, 252; on Yaqub Sarfī, 258; on Kashmir's monetary system, 289; on chronology of Sultans, 295-96.

Abul-Maali. Mughal noble, 10, 14; invades Kashmir, 149; defeat and flight of, 150.

Abumulde IV, ruler of Ladakh, submits to Zainul-Abidin, 71.

Acat Raina, commander of Shihabud-Din, 53.

Achabal, spring, 21.

Adavín, pargana, 47, 85, 140.

Adham Khan, Prince, conquers Ladakh, 72, 74; defeats Haji, 75; made heir-apparent and governor of Kamraj, 76; revolt of, 77; and Haji, 78-80; mother of, 82n.; invades Kashmir, 96; death of, 97, 104, 108, 201, 206, 278.

Adhikari, 204n.

Adil Khan Sherwani, 133.

Afghan (s), 25, 133, 136, 145, 252.

Agha Sayyid Muhammad Yusuf, 12.

Agra, 5, 131; Qara Bahadur escapes to, 151; Mirza Muqim executed at, 156; Yusuf Shah taken to, 166; Baba Talib Isfahani goes to, 256.

Ahmad Aitu. see Malik Ahmad.

Ahmad Khan, son of Ghazi Khan, defeated by Ladakhis, 152; conspires against Husain Shah, 154; 155.

Ahmad Raina, commander of Zainul-Abidin, 71.

Ahwal-i-Kishtwar, 14.

Aiba Khan, son of Abdal Bat, revolts against Yusuf Shah, 170; pardoned, 171; 185.

Aiba Khan, son of Ghazi Shah, assassinated by Prince Yusuf, 159; 162, 186.

 Ain-i-Akbari, 10; on the date of Mirza Haidar's death, 140n.; on Kashmir's monetary system, 289, 296.

Aisha, wife of Prophet Muhammad, 58, 284.

Aish-Makan, 83n.

Akbar, Mughal Emperor, 8, 9, 10, 14, 15, 23n., 24; Sanskrit works translated for, 90; garden of, in Safapur, 85n.; and Abul-Maali, 149; sends Qara Bahadur to invade Kashmir, 150; 151, 154; and Husain Shah, 156-57; 159; and Ali Shah Chak, 161; summons Yusuf Shah to court, 171-73; on Prince Yaqub's character, 174n.; orders invasion of Kashmir, 175; and treaty with Yusuf Shah, 178; and Yusuf Shah, 179, 181; Kashmiri nobles proceed to, 183; agreement of, with them, 184; 189n.; sends Yusuf Khan Rizvi...
to Kashmir, 190; and Sayyid Mubarak, 191n.; Yaqub Shah and Kashmiri nobles submit to, 192; Kashmir parganas under, 207; 213; Jizya abolished in Kashmir by, 215; Rishis in the time of, 224; shawl industry under, 248; forced labour abolished by, 251; and Yaqub Sarfi, 256; Kashmiri calligraphists patronised by, 265-66; 278, 280, 281, 287.

Akbar-nama, review of, 10; on Kaji's relations with Sher Shah, 133n.; see also Abul-Fazl.

Akhkan, 244.

Akhnur, 23.

Akhurbek, Chief Master of Horse, 201.

Alam Sher Khan (Magre), 169, 176, 183.

Alaud-Din, Sultan, 46; revolt of, 47; character of, 48; 49; extent of kingdom under, 275-76; 278.

Alaud-Dinpur, founding of, 48; temple at, 56; khanqah-i-Mualla at, 64; 130.

Alavi Sayyids, 55, 56.


Aliabad Sarai, 24.

Ali Bat., 168.

Ali Chaman Kashmiri, calligraphist, 265.


Ali Hamadani, see Sayyid Ali Hamadani.

Ali Kadal, bridge, built by All Shah, III.

Ali Khan, son of Shihabud-Din, 53.

Ali Khan (Chak), see Ali Shah Chak.

Ali Khan Chak, son of Nauruz Chak, rebels against Ali Shah, 158-59; sent to reduce Kishtwar, 160; imprisoned, 165; 166n.; released, 167; again imprisoned; escapes, 168.


Ali Shah, Sultan, son of Sikandar, 11, 61, 62, 64; character of, 67; goes on pilgrimage, 68; and Zainul-Abidin, 69; death of, 70; 71-73, 80, 94.

All Shah Chak, Sultan, places crown on Ghazi's head. 151n.; Shankar Chak defeated by, 154; defeats Husain Shah and captures power, 157; and Husain Shah, 158; and revolt of Prince Yusuf and the nobles, 159; repels invasion of Hajji Haidar and Salim; and the conquest of Kishtwar, 160; character and death of, 161; 162, 164; titles of, 195-96; abolishes punishment by mutilation, 201; plays polo, 231; poets in court of, 256; and question of succession, 279; coins of, 291 sqq.

Ali Sher, see Alaud-Din.

Amburnath Peak, 20.

Amin Ahmad Razl, author of Haft Iqlim, 10.


Amir Khan, architect of Mirza Haidar, 142.

Anandpal, 28.

Ananta, Raja of Kashmir, 30.

Anantnag, town, 19, 21; district, 85n.; Daud Khaki's death at, 256.

Anchar Dal, lake, 21.

Andarkot, 35n.; capital of Kota Rani; besieged by Shah Mir,44; Shah Mir buried near, 47; capital of Alaud-Din, 48; 76, 85. 94, 134; Mirza Haidar's family in, 139; besieged, 141; Mirza Haidar's family brought from, 142; buildings of Mirza Haidar in, 143; 210.

Arab (s), invasions of Kashmir by, 27, 28; horses, 72; 247n., 272n., 281.

Arabia, 228.

Arabic. 256. 258, 260, 265.

Arapath, stream, 19.

Asaf Khan, 207.

Asia, 34, 243, 263.

Asia Minor, 254n.

Asoka, Zainul-Abidin compared with, 83; Buddhism in Kashmir under, 234.

Asrarul-Abrar (by Daud Mishkati), 15.

Astor, 26.

Athwajan, 123, 124.

Attock, 25, 175, 178.

Aumer, catalogue by, 6.

Aurangzeb, 15; Jami Masjid rebuilt by, 270.

Austrian Tyrol. Kashmiri wooden buildings similar to those of, 269.

Avantipur, town, Ali Sher revolts in, 47; besieged by Jamshed, 48; temples in, 66; 85n., 100, 189n.

Avantipur, canal 85.

Avantivarman, Raja of Kashmir, 20n. 47n.

ayoguda, gunpowder, use of, by the Sultans, 211.

Azam Humayun, see Halbat Khan Niyazi.

Baba Ali Najjar, mausoleum of, 147; 156; becomes a Nurbakhshiya, 285; 286n.

Baba Bamud-Din, disciple of Nurud-Din Rishi, 224.

Baba Daud Ganai, disciple of Hamza Makhdum, 161.
Baba Daud Khaki, 184, 235; life of, 256.
Baba Haji Adham, 62.
Baba Hasan, son of Baba Ali Najjar, 147, 222.
Baba Hasan, the logician, 62.
Baba Hasan, son of Baba Ali Najjar, 147, 222.
Baba Ismail Kobravi, hospice of, 261; appointed head of a college, 262; renounces Nurbakhshiya beliefs, 285; 286n.
Baba Jujak, 131
Baba Khalil, the Shiite divine, brings about peace between Daulat Chak and Idi Raina, 146; crown sent by Yusuf Shah to Sayyid Mubarak through, 157; attempts to reconcile Abdal Chak with Yusuf Shah, 162; and Sayyid Mubarak, 163; sent by Abdal Bat to Sayyid Mubarak, 165; message sent by Abdal Bat to Yusuf Shah through, 167; brings about a settlement between Shams Chak and Yusuf Shah, 183; sent to Lahore by Qasim Khan, 189; acts as guide to Yusuf Khan Rizvi's forces, 190; 191.
Baba Lutfud-Din, disciple of Nurud-Din, 224.
Baba Mehdi, 189.
Baba Nasib, author of Taskira-i-Mashaikh-i-Kash~jitir, 14.
Baba Nasibud-Din Ghazi, author of Nut-nanuz, 15.
Baba Nasifud-Din, disciple of Nurud-Din, 224.
Babs. Nasib, author of Taxkira-i-Mashaikh-i-Kash~jtir,
Bab~ Sharq Mirza, commander of Mirz~ Haidar, 127.
Babriattn-f-Hnnhi, review of, 7; 13, 14; on defeat of Fath Shah, 117n.; on death of Mirza Haidar, 140n.; on Ghazi Shah not being a fanatic, 154; on chronology of Sultans, 295.
Bahram Chak, 145, 149.
Bahram Dar, 113.
Babamgala, old Bhairavagala, 109.
Bahram Khan, son of Zainul-Abd~in, 74, 77; and Zainul-Abd~in, 78; 80, 82, 96; intrigues of, 97; escapes to India, 98; 99; death and character of, 100; 107.
Bahram Naysak, submits to Qasim Khan, 185; 191.
Balhaqi Sayyids, 5, 7, 8; massacre of, 107; defeated and exiled, 108; exploits of, exaggerated, 162n.; 220; and Kashmiris, 220; immigrate into Kashmir, 266n.
Baini Prasad, 9n.
Bairam Khan, 150, 159n.
Baj, imposed by Shihabud-Din, 52; abolished by Sikandar, 62; and by Mughals, 217.
Balabodhini (by Sita Kantha), 257.
Balkh, 13, 63.
Balits. 37, 71, 126, 247.
Baltistan, 12, 19; routes to, 25, 26, 37; conquered by Shihabud-Din, 49, 51;—by Zainul-Abd~in, 71; 80;—by Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi, 104; independence of, 105; 126; occupied by Mirza Haidar, 136; revolt in, 139; 209; tribute from, 217; marriages between Hindus and Muslims in, 233n.; Mir Shamsud-Din goes to, 230, 286; Kashmir's trade with, 244 sqq.; 276.
Banasuravadhn, a poem, 259.
Bandagan Koka, 135.
Bangl, parchana, 67, 117, 122n., 168.
Banihal, chief of, 59; parchana, 145.
Banihal Pass, 17, 18, 22, 36n.
Baramula, 18, 19, 20, 22, 24, 25, 50, 77, 115, 120n., 122n., 129, 136n., 140, 149n., 167n.; route of, 36, 49, 70, 138, 286; Shah Mir's jagir near, 43; palace pulled down at, 95; Muhammad Chak seized in, 168; Akbar's envoys received by Yusuf Shah at, 171; Yusuf Shah organizes armies against the Mughals at, 176; houses of rich merchants at, 226; a relief found near, 266.
Barbal, Mirza Haidar's followers take refuge in the fort of, 139; 164, 165, 183.
Barrett, L. D., 15.
Barzala, 177.
Bavan, 127n.; spring of, 64.
Beas, river, 132.
Behira, 193.
Behra, 132.
KASHMİR UNDER THE SULTANS

Benedict de Goes, 15.
Bengal, 8, 73, 191n.; Kashmir's trade with, 242; and Kashmiri merchants in, 245.
Berlin, 11.
Bernier, F., 15.
Bhadravah, 18, 276.
Bhairavagala, see Bahramgala.
Bhagwan Das, invades Kashmir, 175; makes peace overtures to Yaqub Shah, 177; attempts suicide, 178; 184, 212, 256.
Bhatta Bhiksana, chief minister of Kota Rani, 42, 44.
Bhattavatara, author of Jainavilasa, 89.
Bhauttas, see Ladakhis.
Bhiksacara, Raja of Kashmir, 31; Muslim soldiers employed by, 234.
Bhimbhar, 24, 75, 108, 109n., 136, 166, 171, 175, 185. 175, 185.
bhurja, birch-bark, 83, 205.
Bhutan, Kashmiri merchants in, 244.
Bibi Taj Khatun, wife of Muhammad Hamadani, 63.
Bibi Rabia, wife of Haibat Khan Niyazi, 145.
Bihar, 17811.; Yusuf Shah exiled to, by Akbar, 179; 193n.
Bijbehara, old Vijayeshvara, 64, 106, 189n.. 224, 257.
Birhama, 262.
Birna, 136.
Bistami, Bayazid, saint, 284.
Bo Lo-gros-mchog-ladan, ruler of Ladakh, 74.
Bodhabhatta, author of a Kashmiri play, 1.
Brahmudarsana (by Valmiki), 91.
Brahmans, and Suhadeva, 32, 34; and Rinchana, 39, 40n.; and Qutbud-Din, 56; and Saifud-Din, 65; and Zainul-Abidin, 86 sqq.; and Haidar Shah, 97; and Malik Ahmad, 103; and Shah Mir rulers, 208; and Jizya, 215n.; position of, in Kashmir, 218-19, 237; and Rishis, 225n.; dress of, 228; and wine, 230; and Islam, 233; and Sultans, 236; influence of Islam on, 238; oral tradition of, 252; and Sanskrit learning, 258.
Brathana, battle at, 168.
Bring, river, 19; pargana, 134n., 185; Yusuf Shah captured in pargana of, 170; Shams Chak retires to, 191.
Brinal, Zulju returns via, 36.
Brinal-Lamar Mts., 36n.
Brown, Percy, on Kashmir painting, 265.
Buddha, 52, 72.
Buddhism, position of, in Kashmir, 39, 234, 237.
Buddhists, and Husain Shah, 158; conversion of, by Shamsud-Din, 286.
Budil Pass, see Sidau Pass.
Buhler, 4.
Buhulpur, 166, 174n.
Bukhara, 62, 125, 229n.; Kashmir's trade with, 244 sqq.; Kashmiri scholars proceed to, 254.
Bulbul Shah, converts Rinchana, 39, 40; tomb of, 111; 199n.; missionary activities of, 235, 254.
Bulisa, 19, 176, 177n.
Bunji, 19n.
Burhanpur, 192n.
Burhanud-Din, 285.
Burji, Pass, 26.
Burzil, 26.
Cairo, 196.
Caitra, participation of Zainul-Abidin in festival of, 88; and other Sultans, 240.
Camars, functions of, 226-27.
Candalas, functions of, 208, 226.
Candra Damara, commander of Shihabud-Din, 198.
Candrapida, Raja of Kashmir, 28.
Central Asia, 58, 62, 222, 235; Kashmir's trade with, 244 sqq.; 254n., 263, 264, 266; musicians in Kashmir from, 271; see also Turkistan.
Chadura, given as jagir to Haidar Malik's family, 8, 53, 128, 130, 186.
Chaghatay, 33, 34, 125.
Chak (s), dynasty, 1, 4, 5, 7, 9, 10; period, 6; Sultans, 8; migration of, 46, 73; and Zainul-Abidin, 74; 96; and Muhammad Shah, 115; and Fath Shah, 116; 118, 119; defeated by Mirza Haidar, 134; and Mirza Haidar's body, 141; treatment of, by Idi Raina, 145; turn hostile to Idi Raina, 146; rise of, 147; foundation of dynasty of, 151; titles of the rulers of, 195-96; and the Shah Mirs, 198; Shaikhul-Islam and Qazi under, 200; parganas under, 207; reputation of, as soldiers, 210; use of gunpowder under, 211; taxation under, 214; and the Jizya, 215; and the grant of jagirs, 217; origin of, 219-20; agriculture under, 249; condition of peasants under, 250-51; poets and scholars under, 255-58; and
Dusturus-Salikin (by Yaqub Sarf), 256.
Dati Malik, 113, 114.
Daud, son of Jahangir Magre, 107.
Daud Khaki, see Baba Daud Khaki.
Daud Mir, 164.
Daud Mishkat, 15.
Daulat Chak, 4; defeats Gadai Malik, 119; escapes, 122; 124, 129; besieges Sopur, 130; escapes to India, 134; makes overtures to Haibat Khan Niyazi, 136; joins Idi Raina, 139; defeats Afghans, 145; defeats Idi and captures power, 146; liberal policy of, 147; and Ladakh, 147; fall of, 148; 149, 151, 153, 162n., 169, 201; and Jizya, 215; and foreign invasions, 281.
Deccan, 30, 192n., 271.
Delhi, 5; Sultans of, 11; Sultans of, 30; march of Shihabud-Din to, 50; 51, 53, 54; Timur in, 60; and Jasrat Khokar, 73; Abdal Magre goes to, 121; 275, 280, 297.
Deosai Plateau, 26.
Desideri, Father, 15.
Dharmadhikara, king's court of justice, 205.
Dharmasastras, 99.
Didamar, quarter of Srinagar, 105, 106.
Dimashqi, geographer, on the number of villages in Kashmir, 252.
Dipalpur, 60.
Divasar, pargana, 36, 47, 101, 145.
Divan-i-Kul, 198-99.
Dombas or Doms, 28n., as soldiers, 210; and the rulers Kashmir, 218; character of, 226.
Dongar Singh, Raja of Gwallor, his relations with Zainul-Abidin, 73.
Dorikun, 20.
Doruk Pass, 26.
Dras, 26n., 35n.
Drava, ancient Duranda, 74, 112.
Dubgam, 20.
Dudhakhat Pass, 26.
Dvarapala, Lord Chamberlain, 202.
Dvarapati, Lord of the Gate, 202.
Dugdanga, stream, 20.
Dughlat, tribe, 125.
Dulipur, 100.
Dungot, Haibat Khan Niyazi defeated at, 136.
Dura Hida, see Drava.

Egypt, 67, 73.
Egyptians, 196.
Europe, 34, 274n.

Fath Chak, rebels against Ghazi Shah, 149; joins Ghazi, 150; again rebels, 151; raids Ladakh, 152; 154; death of, 155.
Faizi, Tafsir, 256.
Fath Kadal, bridge built by Fath Shah, destroyed by floods, 271.
Fath Khan, Mughal commander, 184.
Fath Khan, see Fath Shah.
Fath Khwaja Baqqal, merchant, 154, 155, 226.
Fathpur Sikri, Prince Yaqub arrives at, 172; Akbar's departure from, 173; Yusuf Shah goes to, 281.
Fath Shah, 1, 3, 6; will of, 57; 91, 104; brought up by the Jammu Raja, 97n.; invades Kashmir, 108; escapes to Punjab, 109; character of, 110; and Shams Chak, 111, 112; second restoration of, 113; 114, 115; third restoration of, 116; flight and death of, 117; 119, 121; office of Diwan-i-Am introduced by, 198; and use of cannon, 211; and Jixya, 215; and Hindus, 236; 242n., 277-80; coins of, 291 sqq.; chronology of, 296-97.
Fathullah Haqqani, 262.
Fathyari, 159.
Fatima, daughter of the Prophet, 222, 284.
Feulad Bahadur, 60.
Fi ZmzcZ-Qiyafa (by Sayyid Ali Hamadani), 57.
Fizq-i-Ahwat (by Mir Shamsud-Din), 284.
Firdausi, 89.
Firishta, 9; on Zulju,, 33; on the conquests of Shihabud-Din, 50; on Bahram's death, 100n.; on Ghazi's relations with Haibat Khan Niyazi, 137n.
Firuz, chief of Ohind, 61, 67, 68, 115.
Firuz, son of Sikandar, 61; exile of, 62; invades Kashmir, 67; suffers defeat, 68.
Firuz, son of Ibrahim Magre, 115.
Firuz, fort, near Pakhli, 169.
Firuzabad, Sayyid Mubarak's death at, 191n.
Firuz Shah Tughlaq, relations of Shihabud-Din with, 50, 51.
Forster, George, on Kashmiri paper, 248.
Francke, A.H., 41, 72.
Fryre, Father, 15.
Futuha'i-Kubrawiya (by Abdul-Wahhab), review of, 14; 64n.

Gadai Malik, 114, 118, 119.
Gaddis, tribe, 35.
Gagangir, 35n., 37, 126n.
Gaisu, 129.
Gakkkars, submit to Prince Hasan, 97; help Kaj Chak, 129; Qara's followers escape to country of, 139; and Haibat Khan Niyazi, 145; Abul-Maali's escape to territory of, 149.
Ganacaakra, and Zainul-Abidin, 87-8; Sultans participate in festival of, 240.
Ganesa, 106.
Ganges, river, 131.
Ganjavara, treasurer, 203.
Gauhar-i-Alam (by Badiud-Din Abul-Qasim), 13.
Gaurabhatta, 68.
Gawaril, 111.
Gegivand, 29n.
Ghazi Shah (Chak), defeats the Turks, 120; made prisoner, 122; besieges Sopur, 130; makes proposals to Haibat Khan, 136; and Mirza Haidar, 137n.; receives jagir from Idi Raina, 145; 147; captures power and suppresses revolts, 148-49; defeats Abul-Maali, and later Qara Bahadur, 150-51; wears crown, 151n.; fails to reduce Ladakh, 152; character of, 153; religious policy of, 153-54; 159, 161; Akbar's views on, 172; title adopted by, 195; and the crown, 197; seizes royal horses, 212; and forced labour, 251; 256, 279, 281.
Ghazni, 27, 28, 29; and the conquest of, by Shihabud-Din, 49, 50; 281.
al-Ghazzali, 284.
Ghiyasud-Din, the Kurt ruler of Herat, 33.
Gilan, 73.
Gilgit, 19n.; Transport Road, 26; and Arabs, 27; reduced by Shihabud-Din, 49, 51: 111; trade of Kashmir with, 245-46.
Girdar, 134.
Govind, chief of the Khasas, 67.
Gramakayastha, village accountant, 208.
Greek Fire, employed by Zainul-Abidin, 211.
Grierson, 15.
Guge, invaded by Zainul-Abidin, 72.
Gujarat, 74.
Gul Khatun, queen of Haidar Shah, 105, 227; favoured Hindu customs, 240n.; schools established by, 261.
Gulmarg, 135, 168n., 180.
Gurez, 26.
Gusikoddara, 109n.; see also Gus Udar.
Gusu, battle between Yaqub Shah and Mughals at, 189.
Gus Udar, 109, 110.
Gwallor, 73.
Habba Kadal, bridge, 85.
Habba Khatun, queen of Yusuf Shah, 15; life of, 180; 227; and the use
of Persian words, 259n.; introduces love lyrics, 260; introduces melody of *Rust Kashmiri*, 271.

Habib, 93

Habib Chak, brother of Nusrat Chak, defeats Ladakhis, 147; rebels but killed, 148.

Habib Chak, son of Abdal Chak, defeated by Yusuf Shah, 162; 169; seized and blinded by Yusuf Shah, 170.

Habib Khan, son of Fath Shah, 116, 119.

Habib Shah, son of Ismail Shah, enthroned by Daulat Chak and deposed by Ghazi, 151; 197.

*Haft Iqlim* (by Amin Ahmad Razi), 10.

Habat Khan, son of Sikandar, 56, 58, 59.

Haibat Khan Niyazi, 11; and Mirza Haidar, 136; defeated and killed by Kashmiri nobles, 145.

Haidar, son of Rinchana, 41, 43, 44.

Haidar, Prince, son of Yusuf Shah, sent to Akbar, 171; sent back by Akbar, 172.

Haidar Chak, Ghazi Shah's son, 147; executed, 153.

Haidar Chak, and Lohar Shah, 167; escapes to Ladakh, 168-69; obtains jagir from Man Singh, 171; 174; acts as guide to Mughals, 175, 185; executed by Qasim Khan, 188.

Haidar Malik, historian, 1, 6, 7n.; estimate of, 8; 12-4, 51n.; on Ali Shah's death, 70; 92; on date of Mirza Haidar's death, 140n.; and on manner of his death, 141n.; on Ghazi's religious policy, 154; on character of Yusuf Shah, 163n.; on chronology of Sultans, 295.

Haidar Shah, Sultan, 6, 7; declared heir-apparent, 74; revolt and defeat of, 75, 76; defeats Adham, 77; and Adham, 78, 79; seizes throne, 80; Jammu princess, the mother of, 82; accession of, 96; and Hindus, 97; death and character of, 98-9; 100, 101; espionage system of, 203; gives Kamraj to Hasan as jagir, 206; 228; and wine, 231; 240n., 241n.; as poet, 255; as musician, 271; administration of, 277; 278; coins of, 292; chronology of, 296.

Haig, Wosleley, on chronology and genealogy of Sultans, 295 sqq.

Haji, see Haidar Shah.

Haji Haidar Khan, son of Nazuk Shah, invades Kashmir but defeated, 160.

Haji Padar, 113.

Haji Pir Pass, 25.

Hakim, governor of a province, 206.

Hanafite, sect, and Mirza Haidar, 147; law, 157, 200.

Hanjik, 127.

*hanjits*, boatmen, and Shihabud-Din, 51; and Yusuf Shah, 179.

Hanjivera, Ghazi Shah defeats Abul-Maali at, 150.

Hamadan, 55, 56.

Hamsabhatta, 68.

Hamza Makhduum, 161, 222n.; advices of, to people, 225; and proselytisation, 235.

Hariraja, Raja of Kashmir, 30.


Harshin, 117.

Harun ar-Rashid, Caliph, 82.

Hasan, son of Haidar Shah, see Hasan Shah.

Hasan b. Ali Kashmiri, historian, 1; estimate of, 7, 8.

Hasan Beg, 1n.

Hasan Chak, 168.

Hasan Kachhi, secures succession of Haidar Shah, 80; executed, 96.

Hasan Khan, son of Shihabud-Din, 53, 54.

Hasan Malik, father of Haidar Malik, 8; escapes and joins Yusuf Shah, 167; advises him to fight Lohar, 168; 176; and Shams Chak, 186; joins Yaqub Shah, 187; pursues Mughals, 190; and Yusuf Shah, 191.

Hasan Qari, see Mulla Hasan Qari.

Hasan Shah, Sultan, 3, 6, 7, 8; defeated by Adham, 78; 80, 90, 96; campaigns of, 97; declared king, 98; appointments by, 99; and Bahram, 100; and Malik Ahmad, 101; and Tazi Bat, 101n., 102; defeats and imprisons Malik Ahmad, 103; death and character of, 104, 105; buildings of the reign of, 105, 106; 135; coinage of, 290; chronology of, 296.


Hastivanj, route of, 24.

Hatu Pir, ridge, 26.

Hazara, district, 25.

Hazarat Rishi, follower of Mir Sham-sud-Din, executed by Mirza Haidar, 137.

Herat, 33, 89, 90, 125.

Hijaz, 272n.

Hilmat Chak, 111.

Hilmat Raina, 71.

Hilmatul-Arifin, (by Ishaq Qari), 12

Himalayas, 17, 18, 28.

Hira, 272n.

Hindal, see Qutbud-Din.

Hindal, brother of Humayun, 131.

Hinduisms, and Rinchana, 39, 40n.
Hindu Kush, 49, 50.
Hindustan, 30, 68, 142, 144, 173; cultural influence of, 254; 281.
Hisham, Caliph, 27, 28.
Hisham b. Amr at-Taghlibi, governor of Sindh, 28.
Huen Tsiang, 24, 25.
Hof-und Staatsbibliothek, K., 7.
Hulagu Khan, 34.
Humayun, 123; and invasion of Kashmir, 131, 132; and Mirza Haidar, 142; and Abul-Maali, 149; 150n., 172; coins of, 293-94.
Husain Quli Khan, Akbar's governor.
Husain, Prince, son of Hasan Shah, 101n., 104.
Husainabad, a quarter of Srinagar, 148.
Husain Chak, ancestor of Chak rulers, 74, 111.
Husain Khan Sherwani, 133.
Husain Quli Khan, Akbar's governor of Punjab, 159.
Husain Magre, and Mirza Haidar, 133-35, 138; besieges fort of Barbal, 139; and Mirza Haidar's body, 141; and Mirza Haidar's family, 142; and Haibat Khan Niyazi, 145; imprisoned, 146; released, 148.
Husain Mirza Balqara, ruler of Herat, employs Shamsud-Din, 285.
Husain Shah, Sultan, 8; 120; resents marriage of Daulat Chak, 148; suppresses rising against Ghazi, 151; captures power, 152; revolts and conspiracies against, 154-55; orders execution of Yusuf Aindar, 155; envoy sent to Akbar by, 156; character of, 157-58; Akbar sends proposals for the marriage of daughter of, 161; and Utama, 195; title adopted by, 195-96; 226; patronage of poets and artists by, 255-56; establishment of a college by, 262; and question of succession, 279; coins of, 291 sqq.
Husain Khan, grandson of Ghazi Shah, enthroned but deposed by Shams Chak, 186; supports Shams Chak, 187; submits to Qasim Khan, 189.
Ibrahim, son of Sayyid Mubarak, 171.
Ibrahim Chak, son of Husain Shah, 158.
Ibrahim Khan, son of Yusuf Shah, 164; joins Yaqub Shah, 187; killed by Mughals, 192.
Ibrahim Magre, and Shams Chak, 111-13; and Musa Raina, 114; invades Kashmir, 115; and Muhammad Shah, 116; death of, 117; 118.
Ibrahim Lodi, and Ibrahim Shah, 121n.
Ibrahim Shah, Sultan, enthroned, 121; deposed, 122; second restoration, 146; deposed, 151; tribute paid by Ladakhis to, 217n.; coins of, 292, 294; 297.
Idi Raina, 4, 107, 111, 112, 118; submits to Muhammad Shah, 119; 134; relations of, with Mirza Haidar, 135, 138; and Mughals, 139; in fort of Manar, 140; becomes prime minister and defeats Niyazis, 145; defeated and killed, 146; 148; and foreign invasions, 281.
Ikbila, 99.
Il-Khans, Mongol rulers of Persia, 33.
Imperial Road, across the Pir Panjal Pass, 24.
India, 6, 10, 11, 21, 30; Mongol invasions of, 34; Timur's invasion of, 59; Hindus escape to, 65; MSS. obtained by Zainul-Abidin from, 91; 100; Bhaiqayids recalled from, 102; 110; Dengres recalled from, 114; Kaji and the Afghans escape to, 134; 148, 149, 160, 183. 201; Kashmir society's comparison with that in, 218; 223n., 227, 235; Zainul-Abidin recalls Brahmans from, 236; 244. 246; shawls supplied to, 247; Kashmiri paper exported to, 248; 253, 254n., 260. 261, 263; musicians in Kashmir from, 271; 274, 275.
Indian, merchants in Srinagar, 247; ragas in Kashmiri music, 272.
Indus, river, 18, 24, 28, 59, 77, 132n., 276.
Iraq, 56, 91, 92, 272.
Ispahan, 62.
Islam, conversion of Rinchana to, 39; spread of, in Kashmir, 40, 63. 65. 66. 234 sqq.; and Mirza Haidar, 204.
Ismahabad, 19n., 90. 123n., 261; see also Anantnag.
Islampur, Patna District, 180n.
Islam Shah, 11, and Haibat Khan Niyazi, 136; and Mirza Haidar, 137; heads of the Niyazis sent to, 145; coins of, 293.
Ismail Ganai, commander of All Shah, 160.
Ismail Navak, guardian of passes, submits to Qasim Khan, 185.
Ismail Shah, Sultan, accession of, 130; escapes to India, 133; enthroned by Ghazi Shah, 151; 215.
Jabhan, 60.
Jadibal, a quarter of Srinagar, 223n., 286.
Jafar Badakhshi, see Nurud-Din Jafar Badakhshi.
Jagaddhar Bhat, author of Stuti-Kusumanjali, 257.
Jagadeva, Raja of Kashmir, 32.
Jahangir, Mughal Emperor, author of Tuzuk-i-Jahangiri, 8, 10; on Kashmir temples, 66; on Mirza Haidar’s court, 143; 176n., 177n. 224, 266; negotiations for the marriage of, 156, 161.
Jahangir Magre, made commander-in-chief, 99; 101; and Malik Ahmad, 103; defeated in Ladakh, 104; and Sayyids, 107; becomes Wazir, 108, defeats Fath Shah, 109; defeated, 110; 111, 124.
Jahangir Padar, conspires against Malik Usman, 114; made Wazir by Fath Shah and defeated by Ibrahim Magre, 115; supports Fath Shah, 116; again becomes Wazir, 117; and Kaji Chak, 118; defeated by Chaks, 119.
Jahan-nama (by Mirza Haidar), 143.
Jainacorita (by Notthosoma Pandit), 1, 89
Jainaparakasu (by Yodhabhatta) 89, 259.
Jaima-Rajatarangini, (by Srivara). 3.
Jainavilasa (by Bhattavatara), 89.
Jaipal, Raja of Waihand, 28.
Jai Singh, Raja of Rajauri, and Zainul-Abidin, 76; submits to Prince Hasan, 97.
Jalalabad, 171.
Jalalud-Din Khwarizm Shah, 59.
Jalalud-Din Malik Muhammad Naji, see Malik Muhammad Naji.
Jalandhar, 108.
Jami, Persian poet, 90, 257.
Jamil, painter, 93, 265.
Jami Masjid, built by Sikandar, 63; description of, 64; 84; completed by Zainul-Abidin, 94; 157; jali-screens in, 264; architecture of, 268 sqq.
Jammu, 14, 21; route from Kashmir to, 23; conquered by Shihabud-Din, 50, 51, 54, 60; rulers of, 61, 97, 106, 69; Hindus recalled from, 86; princesses of, married to Zainul-Abidin, 82, 96; conquered by Malik Ahmad, 102, 105; reduced by Fath Shah, 110; soldiers of, 107; 129-30, 136; rulers of, furnish troops to Sultans, 210; and enter into matrimonial alliances with them, 220; importance of, to Kashmir, 276.
Jammangar, town, founded by Jamsheed, 47.
Jamsheed, Sultan, 46; character of, 47; defeated by Ali Sher, 48; 284.
Jamyang Namgyal, ruler of Ladakh, 169.
Jarric, Du, on downfall of the Sultanate, 281.
Jasrat, son of Zainul-Abidin, 82.
Jasrat Khokar, 11; plunders Jammu, 61; Ali Shah defeated and put to death by, 69, 70; and Zainul-Abidin, 73, 80.
Jaunpur, 192.
Jayasimha, Raja of Kashmir, 32, 216n.
Jay Towachibashi, Mughal commander, defeated and captured by Kashmiris, 186.
Jehlam, Valley, 18, 19, 24.
Jhalu, 135.
Jizya, imposed by Sikandar, 65; and Zainul-Abidin, 87; abolished by Yusuf Shah, 179; 213; and Sultans, 215; abolished by Akbar, 215.
Jonaraja, 1; estimate of, 2, 3, 7; on the origin of Zulju, 33; on Rinchana and Hinduism, 39; on Kapakuri’s death, 44n.; on Kota Rani’s death, 45n.; on Shihabud-Din’s conquests, 50; on relations between Shihabud-Din and Firuz Shah, 51n.; on Rinchana’s conversion to Islam, 39n., 40n.; on Shihabud-Din’s views on iconoclasm, 52: 69, 89; on destruction of temples and jizya, 65: 202, 205; on Muslim influence in Kashmir, 238; on the number of villages in Kashmir, 252: 257; use of Arabic, Persian and Turkish words by, 258; on chronology of Sultans, 295-96.
Junaib, Arab governor of Sindh, 28.
Junaib of Baghdad (Sufl), 284.
Kabul, 6, 27, 49, 50, 51n., 125, 132, 142.
Kafiristan, 57.
Kaji Chak, 111, 112; plots against Malik Usman, 114; defeated by Ibrahim Magre, 115; 116, 117; becomes Wazir, 118; crushes his enemies, 119; and Muhammad Shah, 120-21; defeated by Turks, 122; and Mughals, 123-24; and Mirza Haidar, 128; and Magres, 129-30; and Mirza Haidar, 131, 133, 134; defeat and death of, 135, 148, 153, 280, 297.
Kajnag Peak, 18, 24; Range, 169n.
Kakapuri, canal, 84.
Kalamanyas, 37n.
Kalamur, old Kalyanpura, 109.
Kalanaur, 161, 173.
Kalasa, Raja of Kashmir, 31.
Kalhana, 2, 3, 14, 23, 30n., 32, 50, 90; on Muslim influence in Kashmir, 234; on social and political decline in Kashmir, 237; 258; and shawl industry, 263.
Kamal Dubi, and the death of Mirza Haidar, 141.
Kamal Khan Gakkhar, 149.
Kamraj, 47, 48, 68, 74, 76, 77, 85n., 96, 100, 111, 145, 159, 183, 186, 191, 205, 206.
Kamran, invasion of Kashmir by, 123; 131, 132.
Kamari Pass, 26.
Kangra, see Nagarkot.
Kapartal Pass, 132.
Kapatshewara, now Kother, 134n.
Karokoram, Mts., 25; pass, 244.
Kara, canal, 85.
karewa, 19, 22, 75n., 109.
Karmasena, 33.
Karnav, ancient Karnaha, 19, 169, 189.
Karpurabhatta, 88.
Kasher Khol, stream.
Kashghar, 10, 27, 49, 72, 124, 130; Mirza Haidar's family sent to, 142; envoys come to Srinagar from, 144; 153, 154; Kashmir's trade with, 244 sqq.
Kashmiri, language, Zainul-Abdin's life in, 1; and Zainul-Abdin, 89; and Hasan Shah, 105; poetry and Sultans, 258-60.
Katha-Kautaka, (by Srirava), 3, 90.
Kathmandu, Kashmiri merchants in, 244; Kashmir's trade with, 245.
Kaul, J. L., 15.
Kayasthas, 4.
Khalil Sultan, 10.
Khampur, 140n.
Khanabal, 19, 20.
Khan-e-Zaman, see Fath Khwaja Baqyal.
Khangah-i-Mualla, built by Sikandar, 64; damaged, 97; rebuilt, 106; architecture of, 268-9.
Kharaj, 213-14.
Khasa, tribe, 18, 19, 67; help Haji, 75; plunder Srinagar, 110.
Khatli, Ali Hamadani buried in, 57; Muhammad Hamadani died at, 63; 283.
Khwairigul-Salikin, 15.
Khwawara, pargana, 147.
Khzanchi or Khazanadar, 203.
Kheri, old Khur, 106n.
Khotan, Kashmir's trade with, 244 sqq.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Khubasatul-Manqab (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Kutahar, pargana, 134n.
Kuti, 245.
Lachhamkul, canal, 84.
Lad, 121, 122.
Ladakh, 19; route from Kashmir to, 22, 25; 37n., 38; Udayanadeva escapes to, 42; conquered by Shihabud-Din, 49 sqq.; Ali Hamadani returns to Turkestan via, 37n., 38; Udayanadeva escapes to, 42; conquered by Shihabud-Din, 49 sqq.; Ali Hamadani returns to Turkestan via, 55; occupied by Rai Magre, 59; and by Zainul-Abidin, 71; occupied by him, 136; revolt in, against him, 139; route of, followed by Mirza's family, 142; pays tribute to Kashmir, 147; Ghazi Shah fails to conquer, 152; Kashmiri nobles secure help of ruler of, 169; as a tributary to Kashmir, 209; 217. game of polo introduced in Kashmir from, 231; marriages between ruling families and Muslims in, 233n.; routes through and Kashmir's trade with, 244 sqq.; Ladakhis, and Baltis, 37; support Rinchana, 38; and Zainul-Abidin, 72; Jahangir Magre defeated by, 104; 126; slay Sabr Ali, 142; defeated and compelled to pay tribute, 147; defeat Kashmiris, 152; 170; tribute of, to Kashmir, 217; merchants, 246-47.
Laddaraja, attacks Rai Magre, 59; defeats Raja of Jammu, 61; assassinated, 68.
Laddi Magre, 67.
Lahara, see Lar.
Lahore, 6, 11; Imperial Road from Kashmir to, 24; Kamran returns to, from Naushahra, 123; departure of Mughals from Kashmir for, 124; 131, 132, 136, 149, 159; Yusuf Shah raises money from the merchants of, 166; Haidar Chak proceeds to, 171; Yusuf Shah placed in the custody of Todar Mal at, 178; Kashmir nobles go to, to seek help of Akbar, 183; Qasim Khan sets out from, 185; Kashmir nobles submit and sent to, 189; Yusuf Rizvi sets out from, 191; route from Kashmir to Persia through, 245; Yaqub Sarfi studies in, 258.
Laksman Bhatta, Jamshed's minister, 48.
Laksmanadeva, Raja of Kashmir, 32.
Laksni, queen of Shihabud-Din, 52, 53.
Laksminagar, 52.
Lalitaditya, Raja of Kashmir, and the Arabs, 28; and Kalhana, 50; 203n., 234; revenue policy of, 277.
Lalkul, canal, 85.
Lalla Ded, 15; influence of the songs of, 234; ideas of, 237; influence of Islam on, 238-39; significance of poetry of, 259-60.
Langarhatta, a quarter of Srinagar, 53n.
Lankan Chak, 46.
Laran and Ramacandra, 35; district of, 20, 37; occupied by Rinchana, 38; 70, 71, 85, 120; battle in defile of, 126; 127, 135; 144, 152, 170; fort, 210; pargana, 262.
Lasa, mistress of Shihabud-Din, 53.
Laula, Shihabud-Din's commander, 198.
Lawrence, 15; on paper workers of Kashmir, 92n.
Lavanyas, a tribal section, and Rinchana, 38-9; crushed by Alaud-Din, 48.
Leh, 26n., 125; depot of Kashmir's trade, 244; 245.
Lhachen Bhagen, ruler of Ladakh, 104.
Lhachen dNgos-grub, Rinchana's father, 37.
Lhasu, Kashmir merchants in, 242.
Lidar, river, 19, 85, 127; valley, 83n.
Lohara, 7; castle of, 29n.; dynasty of, 30-2, 195, 250, 277; revolt in, 54, 76; directly governed from Kashmir, 206; and Sultans, 209; 234, 276.
Lohar Chak (Shah), 5n., joins Ghazi against the Mughals, 150; rebels against Ghazi, 151; conspires against Husain Shah, 155; 160; and Yusuf Shah, 166-67; raised to throne, 165; defeated and blinded, 168; 169.
Loharin, valley and river, 29n.
Lohar Chak, son of Da'ulat Chak, surrenders to Yusuf Rizvi, 191.
Loharkot, Mahmud of Ghazni defeated at, 29, 54, 104, 107, 151.
Lohar Magre, defeated by Malik Usman, 115; revolt of, 118; pardoned by Muhammad Shah, 119; 120, 122, 124, 130.
Lohar Malik Oorchh, 169.
Lokaprakasa, 2, 4; on divisions of Kashmir, 207; on number of villages in Kashmir, 252; Persian and Turkish words in, 258.
Lolab Valley, 20.
Lolaka, see Sura Lolaka.
Lulipur, 119.
Maasir-i-Rahimi (by Abdul-Baqi Nihawandi), 9.
Maasirul-Umara (by Samsamud-Daula), 14.
Maclagen, on use of gunpowder and destruction of temples, 66n.
Madani, mosque of, 16, 93, 264, 268; tomb of, 270.
Maidina, 256, 267.
Magres, and Shamsud-Din 1, 46; and Habib Khan, 119; revolt against Muhammad Shah, 120-21; and Kaji Chak, 122, 129, 130; conflict of, with Chaks, 146, 208, 210; origin of, 219, 220; defeated by Chaks, 278; lose their importance, 281.
Mahabhandagara, 203n.
Mahabkarata, 4, 43; translation of, into Persian, 90.
Mahamaya prakasa (by Sita Kantha), 259.
Maharatvarapidu, Lord Chamberlain, 202n.
Mahasarat, canal, 20.
Mahasvasala, office of the Chief Master of Horse, 201.
Mahmud, son of Sikandar, 61, 74, 278.
Mahmud I, ruler of Malwa, relations of, with Zainul-Abidin, 73.
Mahmud of Ghazni, 24, 27; invasions of Kashmir by, 28, 29, 281.
Mahmur, ruler of Gujarat, relations of, with Zainul-Abidin, 73.
Mahram Beg, Kamran's commander, invades Kashmir, 123; withdraws, 124.
Majalisul-Mumhin (by Nurullah Shushtari), 12, 57.
Majalisul-Salatin, (by Muhammad Sharif an-Najafi), 10.
Majmua Dar Ansab Mashaikh-i-Kashmir, 14.
Majumdar, A. K., on chronology of Sultans, 285.
Maituzat-i-Timuri, 10.
Malik Abdal, son of Ibrahim Magre, 118, 120.
Malik Ahmad, declares Hasan ruler, 98; receives title of Malik, 99; and Bahram, 98, 100; and Tazi Bat, 101 sqq.; character of, 103, 105; buildings of, 106; 198n., 262.
Malik Candra, minister of Shihabuddin, 50, 53.
Malik Ali Chadura, rebels against Muhammad Shah, 120; and Kaji, 123; 124; death of, 128.
Malik Hasan see Hasan Malik.
Malik Lull, Wazir of Husain Shah, 155.
Malik Muhammad Nafi, 7, 8; submits to Mirza Haidar, 134; decides to overthrow Mirza Haidar, 138; besieges fort of Barbal, 139; 153; defeats Shankar Chak, 154; conspiracy against Husain Shah checked by, 155; 157, 160, 163; imprisoned by Haidar Chak, 170; 188.
Maliknag, spring, 21.
Malik Saifdar, and the Sayyids, 107; release of, 107; and Fath Shah, 110; defeat and death of, 111; and Shams Chak, 113.
Malik Usman, and Musa Raina, 114; and Ibrahim Magre, 115; executed, 116.
Malik Zada, courtier of Hasan Shah, 100; imprisonment and death of, 101.
Malwa, 73.
Mamosa, 168.
Mamun ar-Rashid, Abbasi Caliph, 27.
Manar, fort, 140, 210.
Mandalesa, 206n.
Mandel, stream, 138n.
Manik Dev, Raja of Jammu, sister of, married to Zainul-Abidin, 82n.; and the Turks, 97.
Mankot, 159.
Mangabatul-Jawahir (by Jafar Badakhshi), 11.
Mansabal, lake, 21, 85.
Man Singh, Raja, helps Yusuf Shah, 186; and Haidar Chak, 171; sends Timur Beg to Yusuf Shah, 172; secures release of Yusuf Shah, 178; Yusuf Shah sent to Kashmir with, 179; Yaqub Shah sent to, 192; transfers Yusuf Shah's jagir to Yaqub, 193.
Mansur, Abbasi Caliph, 28.
Mansur b. Muhammad, author, 89.
Maraj, old Madavara, 47, 85n., 127, 206.
Marbal Pass, 25, 160.
Mar, canal, 82, 84, 85, 87.
Marma, river, 135.
Martand, temple, 68n.; 267; canal, 85; plateau, 127n.; sugar-cane grown around, 249.
Maru-Wardwan Valley, 18, 19.
Marval, 125, 126.
Mathad, 190n., 256, 285.
Masud, foster-brother of Zainul-Abidin, 83.
Masud Chak, son of Kaji Chak, 118, 119.
Masud Nayak, 108.
Masudi, on the number of villages in Kashmir, 252.
Matan or Martand, see Martand.
Mazar-i-Salatin, 15, 80, 151n.
Maulana Jamal, 137.
Maulana Kabir, Shatkhul-Islam under Zainul-Abidin, 89; 90, 261.
Maulana Muhammad Balkhi, see Mir Haji Muhammad.
Maulana Muhammad Sad, 64.
Maulana Nurud-Din, envoy of Timur, 60.
Maulana Nurud-Din Badakhshi, disciple of Ali Hamadani, 63.
Maulana Sarai, 63.
Mecca, Ali Hamadani goes to, 55; Muhammad Hamadani goes to, 63; Ali Shah sets out for, 68-9; Sharif of, and Zainul-Abidin, 73; 221; Yaqub Sarfi studied at, 256.
Merv, 254.
Midpur, 85.
Mihrun-Nisa, see Nur Jahan.
Mir Adz, 200, 207.
Mira, queen of Sikandar, 61.
Mir Ali, poet, 255.
Mir Ali Bakhshi, 201-2.
Mir Haji Muhammad, disciple of Ali Hamadani, 57.
Mir Khen, see Ali Shah.
Mir Qasim Khan Mir Bahr, see Qasim Khan.
Mir Shah, favourite of Zainul-Abidin, executed, 83, 231n.
Mir Shamsud-Din, see Shamsud-Din.
Mirza Abu Said, the Timurid, relations of, with Zainul-Abidin, 72-3.
Mirza Abdullah, Mirza Haidar's governor of Pakhli, 136.
Mirza Ali Akbar Shahi, 177, 184, 188.
Mirza Ali Khan, poet, 256.
Mirza Ali Koka, follower of Mirza Haidar, 139.
Mirza Ali Taghai, and Mirza Haidar, 128.
Mirza Haidar Dughlat, sources for the history of, 4-6, 9-11, 13, 14; 25; on the temples of Kashmir, 66; on Zainul-Abidin's palace, 94; 124; early life of, 125; invasion of Kashmir by, 126 sqq.; and Mirza Ali Taghai, 128; withdraws from Kashmir, 129; and Rashid Sultan, 130; proposals of, to Humayun, 131-32; occupies the Valley, 133; and Kashmiri nobles, 134; conquers of, 135-36; and Haibat Khan Niyazi, 136; and the Nurbakhshiyas, 137; revolts against, 138 sqq.; versions of the death of, 140-41; character and policy of, 142-44: 145n., 146; religious policy of, 147; 172, 173; and council of jurists, 195; and Shaidkul-Islam, 199; appoints Muhthinb, 204; parganas under, 207; and Muhthinb, 208; 211, 212; on the division of land in Kashmir, 214; 226; on markets of Srinagar, 242-43; tea introduced in Kashmir by, 247n.; and men of learning, 255; 271, 279-81, 284n.; persecutes Nurbakhshiyas, 287; coins struck by, 293.
Mirza Muhammad Hakim, Akbar's half-brother, 173.
Mirza Muqim, Akbar's envoy to Kashmir, and execution of Yusuf Aindar; put to death by Akbar, 156; 157n.
Mirza Pir Muhammad, grandson of Timur, 89.
Mirza Qasim, 177n.; see Khwaaja Qasim.
Mirza Shah Rukh, sent by Akbar to invade Kashmir, 175, 184.
Mirza Tahir, Akbar's envoy to Yusuf Shah, 171.
Mirza Yusuf Khan, see Yusuf Khan Rizvi.
mlecchas, 34n., 72n., 234, 238.
Mongol (s), 10, 33; invasions of Kashmir by, 34 sqq.; 39; invasion by, under Mirza Haidar, 126 sqq.; 221.
Mongolian, 34.
Moorcroft, on produce of rice in Kashmir, 86.
Moravian Mission, 41.
Moro Polo, on Muslims in Kashmir, 234.
Mubarak Khan Gakkhar, 178.
Mubarak Shah, Sayyid ruler of Delhi, 73.
Mubariz Khan, Wazir of Husain Shah, 155.
Muenchen, 7.
Mufii, 200, 207, 221, 222.
Mugatu, Mongol commander sent to invade Kashmir, 34.
Mughal (s), conquest, 4, 5, 46; invasion, 8; empire, 9; histories, 2, 7, 10, 14; 75n.; Imperial Road constructed by, 24; invasion by Kuchak Beg and Shaikh Ali Beg, 120;—by Shaikh Ali Beg and Muhammad Khan, 121;—by Kamran, 123; withdrawal of, 124; invasions by Mirza Haidar, 127 sqq.; Abul-Maali's invasion, 149; captured and beheaded, 150; Qara Bahadur's invasion repelled, 151; invasion by Bhagwan Das, 175; Yusuf Shah decides to surrender to, 176; defeat of, 177; withdrawal of, 178; annexation of Kashmir by, 184; Qasim Khan's invasion, 185 sqq.; conquest of Kashmir by, 191-92; strength of Yusuf Shah's army, 212; abolition of taxes by, 216-17; and markets in Kashmir, 243; shawl and paper industry under, 248, 263; effects of the invasion by, 250; and Kashmir painters and calligraphists, 265-66; comparison of Kashmir tile-work with that of,
Mughalistan, 10, 125.

Mughal Maidan, Mirza Haidar's forces defeated at, 135.

Muhammad, son of Muhammad, the Prophet, imprisoned by Yusuf b. Qasim. conqueror of Muhammad Khan, Babar's commander.

Muhammad Husain, brother of Muhammad Khan, Babar's commander. 121.

Muhammad Khan, brother of Lohar Shah, seized and blinded by Yusuf Shah, 168.

Muhammad Magre, son of Laddi Magre, and Saifud-Din, 67; and Zainul-Abidin, 71.

Muhammad Magre, killed during Mirza Haidar's invasion of Kishwar, 135.

Muhammad Magre, rebels against Ghazi: suffers defeat, 148; conspires against Husain Shah; imprisoned, 154-55.

Muhammad Malik, 153.

Muhammad Maraj, 159.

Muhammad Mir, Mughal commander, 192.

Muhammad Nazar, Mirza Haidar's officer, placed in charge of Rajauri, 136; imprisoned by Kashmiris, 139.

Muhammad Nur Bakhsh, see Sayyid Muhammad Nur Bakhsh.

Muhammad Qasim, sent by Ali Shah to Akbar, 161.

Muhammad Qasim Hindu Shah Astrabadi, see Firishta.

Muhammad Qasim Khan Nayak, 187.

Muhammad Salim Kashgari, 177.

Muhammad Shah, 3, 5n., 7, 64, 101, 102, 104; ascends throne, 105; 108, 109; imprisoned, 110; and Shams Chak, 112; and Fath Shah, 113; and Magres and Chaks, 115; retires from Kashmir to Punjab, 116; invades Kashmir and seizes throne, 117-18; and Afghan troops, 118; revolts against, 119; and Kaji Chak, 120; imprisoned by Kaji, 121; enthroned, 122; 124; and the Mughals, 129; death of, 130; grand-daughter of, 133n.; 146, 147, 151, 160n.; title of Wazir in the time of, 198; number of parganas under, 207; and Lohara, 209n.; and the downfall of the Sultanate, 277, 280; coins of, 291 sqq.; chronology of, 295 sqq.

Muhammad Sharif en-Najafi, author of Majalis-ul-Salatin, 10.

Muhammad Yusuf, 166n.; see also Yusuf Dar.

Muhtasib, 204, 205, 207.

Mulun-Din Miskin, author of Tarikh-i-Kabir, 15.

Mulla Abdullah, goes to Akbar to complain against Husain Shah, 156.

Mulla Abdullah, Mirza Haidar's governor of Pakhti, 136; advises Mirza Haidar not to execute Daniyal, 138; defeated and killed by Kashmiris, 139.

Mulla Ahmad, historian, 1, 7; courtier of Zainul-Abidin, 89, 91; works of, 90.

Mulla Ahmad Allama, 199n.

Mulla Aini, 182.


Mulla Baqi, poet, 256.

Mulla Baqi, Mirza Haidar's follower, made governor of Ladakh, 136; killed in Ladakh, 139.

Mulla Darwesh, Akhound, 262.

Mulla Daud, 98.

Mulla Fathi, 89.

Mulla Firuz Ganai, decrees execution of Yusuf Aindar, 155; himself executed, 156; 195.

Mulla Ghazi Khan, 90, 261.

Mulla Haith Khatib, executed by Mirza Haidar, 137.

Mulla Hasan Aswad, All Shah's tutor, 164, 170, 184.

Mulla Hasan Qarl, historian, 1, 7, 13.

Mulla Ishqi, Akbar's envoy to All Shah, 161.
Mulla Mazhari, 178.
Mulla Mehri, poet, 256.
Mulla Nadiri, poet and historian, 1, 7; and Zainul-Abdin, 89.
Mulla Nami 1, poet, 256.
Mulla Nami 11, poet, 256.
Mulla Parsa Bukhari, 89.
Mulla Qasim, Mirza Haidar's governor of Baltistan, 136; escapes, 139.
Mulla Razi, and the execution of Yusuf Aindar, 156.
Mulla Talib Isfahani, see Baba Talib Isfahani.
Mulla Udi, musician, 93.
Mulla Yusuf Almas, decrees execution of Yusuf Aindar, 155; himself executed, 156; 195, 280.
Mulla Zada, musician, 93.

Muntakhb-Tawarikh, by Firishta, 9; by Hasan Beg, 1n.
Murre-Baramula Road, 25.

Musa Nadiri, poet, 256.
Musa Nadiri, poet and historian, 1, 7; and Zainul-Abdin, 89.

Nadir Shah, see Nazuk Shah.
Nagam, jagir of, 96, 99, 103; pargana, 109; fort, 119, 210; village, 261.
Nagardhipa, prefect, 204.
Nagarkot, conquered by Shihabud-Din, 50; Shihabud-Din's meeting with Raja of, 51n.; 219.
Najat, and Zainul-Abdin, 87.
Naji Malik, see Malik Muhammad Najii.

Nalla Mar, canal, 85.
Nandmarg, pass, Nandashaila of Joranaja, 84.
Naqshbandi Order, 223, 241, 284.
Narayan Kaul "Ajiz", 12, 33n.
Nasr b. Sayyar, Arab governor of Transoxiana, 27.
Nauhatta, old Sikandarpur, now a quarter of Srinagar, 164, 262.
Naukadal, bridge, 99, 164, 271.
Naurang Khan Chak, Yaqub Shah's commander, 185, 190.

Nauruz, festival, 133.

Nauruz Chak, 120, 158; invades Kishwar, 160; 165, 166n.
Naushahr, a quarter of Srinagar, 80; founded by Zainul-Abdin, 84, 93; 88; schools at, 90, 261; paper workers settled in, 92n; buildings at, 94; capital of Hasan Shah, 99; fort of, 107; nobles set fire to, 108; capital of Nazuk Shah, 122; Mirza Haidar's occupation of, 127.
Naushahra, Fath Shah retires to, 112; Muhammad Shah escapes to, 113; 118; battle in neighbourhood of, 120; Chak nobles gather at, 121; Kamran arrives at, 123; 132, 139; Abul-Maali escapes to, 149; Qara Bahadur marches via, 150; 154, 160; battle at, 166; Haidar Chak's jagir of, 171; 174.

Navadirul-Akbar (by Aba Raffud-Din Ahmad), review of, 13; on Shah Rukh's relations with Zainul-Abdin, 73; on Ghazi Shah's religious policy, 153-54.

Nayaks, 202, 203.

Nazuk Bat, son of Abdal Bat, 166, 167, 154.

Nazuk Shah, Sultan, 5; declared king by Magres, 121-22; enthroned by Mirza Haidar, 133, 135; and Mirza Haidar's overthrow, 138-42; a puppet, 145; dethroned, 146; 150n., 160, 256.

Nepal, Kashmir's trade with, 245; Kashmir architecture similar to that of, 269; see also Lhasa.

Nishat, garden, 249.
Nizami, Ganjavi, Persian poet, 257.

Nizamud-Din, author of Tabagat-i-Akbari, 9, 14; on Zulju's origin, 33; on chronology of Sultans, 295.

North-West Frontier province, 25.
Norway, Kashmir architecture similar to that of, 269.

Notthosoma Pandit, author of Jainacarita, 1, 89, 259.

Nubra, 125, 126, 244.

Numan, 49.

Nunahwani, 64.

Nurbakhshiya, sect, 11, 12; influence of, in Persia, 58; banned by Mirza Haidar, 137, 147, 195; 223, 236, 275; founded by Muhammad Nur Bakhsh, 283; ideas of, 283-84; introduced by Shamsud-Din in Kashmir, 285 sqq.; decline of, 287-88.

Nurbakhshiya, persecuted by Mirza Haidar, 137, 144, 195; in Baltistan, 286; in the time of Akbar, 287.

Nur Jahan, and Haidar Malik, 8.

Nur-nama (by Nasibud-Din Ghazi), 13, 15.

Nurud-Din Jafar Badakhshi, biogra-
Nurud-Din Rishi, biographies of, life of, songs of, and spread of Islam, influence on Lalla Ded of, and Kashmiri literature.

Nurullah Shushtari, see Sayyid Nurullah Shushtari.

Nusrat Chak, revolts against Ghazi Shah, and Zainul-Abidin, sent by Ghazi to Akbar, imprisoned by Husain Shah, released, and again against Mirza Haidar, goes to Kashmir, and Kashmiri merchants in Peshawar.

Persian, language, chronicles of, and into, words in Sanskrit works of, and Mirza Haidar's proficiency in, studied by Brahmins, dress, food, tile-work, and Kashmir silk, calligraphists from Persian, language, chronicles of, and Kashmiri poets, and inscriptions in.

Peshawar, Phag, Purna, Puranas.

Purna, barber, and Hasan Shah, imprisonment and death of, Pushkarana, Qadiriya Order.
INDEX

Qain, 283.
Qalandar Beg, Akbar's officer, 178.
Qanauj, 131.
Qandahar, 33; and Shihabud-Din, 49, 50; 142, 286.
Qara Bahadur, 10; sent to Outer Hills by Mirza Haidar, 138; imprisoned by Kashmiris, 139; 140; released, 142; 146; invades Kashmir, 150; defeated, 151; 153, 154, 172, 212.
Qasha, tūlak—a religious mark on forehead, 65.
Qasim Khan, Mughal commander, 24; invades Kashmir, 185; enters Srinagar, 187; defeats Yaqub Shah, 188; nobles submit to, 189; due to Mughal army's sad plight wants his recall, 190; 191, 192n., 218.
Qazi., office of, 200, 207, 221, 222, 228.
Qazi Abdul-Ghafur, and execution of Daniyal, 137; 156.
Qazi Ali, 207.
Qazi Ali Shirezi, see Mulla Firuz Ganai.
Qazi Habib, and execution of Daniyal, 137.
Qazi Ibrahim, and execution of Daniyal, 137.
Qazi Jamal, 88.
Qazi Mir Ali, exiled by Mirza Haidar, 137.
Qazi Musa, decrees execution of Yusuf Aindar, 155; flees from Srinagar, 156; buries Abdul, 163; 168; and Yaqub Shah, 182-83; executed, 184; effect of the execution of, 280.
Qazi Sadrud-Din, sent by Akbar to Ali Shah, 161.
Qazi Sayyid Ali Shirazi, 88.
Qazi Zainud-Din, 156.
Qazvin, 285.
Qiya'b-nama (by Ali Hamadani), 57.
Quran, 51, 221, 256, 257, 260, 265.
Qutb, nom de plume of Zainul-Abidin, 91.
Qutb-Dinpur, founded by Qutb-Din, 53, 77 sqq., 260.
Qutb-Din Mughal Faujdar, 8.
Qutb-Din, Sultan, 6, 7, 50; character of, 53; revolts against, 54; 55; and Ali Hamadani, 56-7; sons of, 58-9; 209, 228; and Hindu practices, 240; colleges established by, 260-61; 278.
Qutb-Din Nishapuri, teacher of Ali Hamadani, 55.
Rinchana, 2, 7, 10, 14, 25; ancestry and early career of, 36, 37; captures power, 38; becomes Muslim, 39, 40; death and character of, 41; 42; and Shah Mir, 43; 44, 46, 235, 237.

Risaku-i-Sikandari (by Sayyid Muhammad Hamadani), 63.

Rishi(s), order, ideas and character of, 224-25.

Rohtas, 245.

Rogers, C. J., on coinage of Sultans, 290 sqq.

Romuh, 85.

Rupri, 23.

Rupyabhatta, Zainul-Abidin's court astrologer, 88.

Ruyter, Father de, relief found by, 266.

Raja ur, 136; killed by Ladakhis, 142.

Sabu, 244.

Sadruz-Din, see Rinchana.

Sadruz-Din Khurasi, architect, 64.

Sadullah, punished by Zainul-Abidin, 83.

Safapur, canal, 85; village, 85n.

Sahaka, minister of Sikandar, killed by Rai Magre, 59.

al-Sahih (by Bukhari), 256.

Sahra-i-Babel, another name of Martand plateau, 127n.

Saisuf-Din, prime minister of Sikandar, and Jonaraja, 2; plunders Jammu, 61; becomes Muslim, 63; and non-Muslims, 65; and Laddi Magre, 67; death of, 68.

Saulism, and Rinchana, 40n.; and Buddhism and Islam, 234; degeneration of, 237; influence of Islam on, 238-39; Rishis influenced by, 241.

Sall. Mongol chief, conquers Kashmir, 34.

Saliq Maji, wife of Muhammad Shah, 122.

Salih Aqil, Akbar's envoy to Yusuf Shah, 171, 173n.

Salim, Prince, see Jahangir.

Salim Khan, son of Nazuk Shah, invades Kashmir but killed, 160.

Salt Range, 29, 122, 123, 132.

Samajdars, of Bukhara, 229n.

Samargand, Timur starts from, to invade India, 59; and returns to, 60: 73; Kashmiri craftsmen sent to, 92; Ulama go for study to, 221; Kashmir's trade relations with, 244; visited by Kashmiri scholars, 254; 255, 256.

Sambal, lake, 35n.

Sambhal, 136.

Samgramadeva, Raja of Kashmir, 32.

Samgramaraja, Raja of Kashmir, 29, 30.


Samsamud-Daula, author of Maasirul-Umar, 14.

Sandran, stream, 19.

Sankar, physician, 67.

Sankar, see Sikandar.


Sanskrit, chronicles of, 1 sqq., 35n., 81; Zainul-Abidin's patronage of, 89-91; patronised by Sultans, 257; Persian and Arabic words in, 258; chronicles and chronology of Sultans, 295 sqq.

Sarada, characters, 258, 266.

Sarang hills, Sikandar Tupchi escapes to, 132; Haibat Khan Niyyazi takes refuge in, 136.

Sarhang Raina, 110, 111.

Sirhah Zada, police officer, 208.

Sarvadhikara, chief minister, 197.

Sasanian, influence on Kashmir, 253, 258; army and Kashmiri woollen cloth, 248n., 262.

Sasaram, 287.

Sastrus, 91.

Satti, prohibited by Sikandar, 65.

Satipusha, 106.

Sawatiul-Itham (by Yaqub Sarfi), 256.

Sayyabhandapatii, built a vihara at Bijbehara, 106.

Sayyid Abdullah Khan, Mughal commander, 189.

Sayyid Abul-Maali, son of Sayyid Mubarak, Ali Shah's daughter married to, 158; 162n.; rewarded by Yaqub, 171; 176, 187; captured by Mughals, 192; Yusuf Shah buried by, 193.

Sayyid Ahmad Isfahani, 62.

Sayyid Ahmad Rumi, 88.

Sayyid Alauz-Din, teacher and uncle of Ali Hamadani, 55.

Sayyid Ali, historian, 5; on Jizya under Zainul-Abidin, 87n.; on death of Mirza Haidar, 140.


Sayyid Ali Hamadani, 2, 6; biographies of, 11, 12, 14; life of, 55-8; and Qutb-Din, 56-7; religious views of, 57-8; will of, 63; 64; ideas of, 223; compared with Nurud-Din Rissh, 224; dress introduced by, 228; converts made by, 235; influence on Lalla Ded of, 239; and monotheism, 241n.; and Persian culture, 254; 261; and shawl industry, 262; 283.

Sayyid Bahaud-Din, Mughal commander, 191-92.
Sayyid Habib, Qazi of Srinagar, 157.
Sayyid Hasan, son of Sayyid Tajud-Din, 5, 50n., 53n.
Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi, Zainul-Abidin's daughter married to, 81; made Wazir by Hasan Shah, 103; conquers Baltistan, 104; Kashmiri nobles opposed to, 106; assassination of, 107, 278.
Sayyid Hasan Shirazi, made Qazi by Sikandar, 62, 200.
Sayyid Hashim, son of Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi, 107.
Sayyid Husain Baihaqi, 63.
Sayyid Husain Khan, son of Sayyid Mubarak, 162n., 189.
Sayyid Ibrahim Baihaqi, son of Sayyid Muhammad, and Muhammad Shah, 118; joins Kaji against Magres, 119; imprisoned by Mughals, 122; jagir of, 124, 130; defeated by Mirza Haidar and escapes to India, 134; imprisoned by Daulat Chak, 146; released, 148; 149.
Sayyid Jalal, son of Sayyid Mubarak, 162.
Sayyid Jalalud-Din, 62.
Sayyid Jalalud-Din Bukhari, saint, 235.
Sayyid Mubarak, saint, and Habba Khatun, 260.
Sayyid Mubarak, Wazir of Ali Shah. 5n., 157 sqq., Abdal defeated and killed by, 162; joins rebels against Yusuf Shah, 163; captures power and character of, 164, and Abdal Bat. 165; deposed, 165; joins Yaqub Shah, 185; death of, 191n.; 197; coins of, 294.
Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, father of Sayyid Ali, the historian, 5, 141.
Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, daughter of, married to Zainul-Abidin, 81.
Sayyid Muhammad Baihaqi, son of Sayyid Hasan Baihaqi, seizes fort of Naushahar, 107; and Ibrahim Magre, 110; and Shams Chak, 111-12; death of, 113; and Mir Shemsud-Din, 236, 286.
Sayyid Muhammad Hamadani, 6, 15; life of, 63; and Sikandar, 63, 65, 225; and spread of Islam, 235, 254.
Sayyid Muhammad Hisari, 63.
Sayyid Muhammad Khwarizmi, 62.
Sayyid Muhammad Luristan, 88.
Sayyid Muhammad Madain, Zainul-Abidin's courtier, 89.
Sayyid Muhammad Madani, tomb of, 267.
Sayyid Muhammad Nur Bakhsh, founder of the Nurbakhshiya Order, 12, 58; life of, 283; ideas of, 284; 285.
Sayyid Muhammad Rumi, 88.
Sayyid Muhammad Sistani, 88.
Sayyid Nurullah Shushtari, author of Majalisul-Muminin, 12; on Ali Hamadani's religion, 57.
Sayyid Sharafud-Din, see Bulbul Shah.
Sayyid Shihabud-Din, father of Ali Hamadani, 55.
Sayyid Tajud-Din, cousin of Ali Hamadani, 5, 50n., 53n.
Shadipur, see Shihabud-Dinpur.
Shafiite, school, Ali Hamadani's conversion to, 58; banned by Mirza Haidar, 143, 147; law, 200.
Shahabad, pargana, 134n.
Shahbaz Khan, Niyazi chief, killed, 145.
Shahbaz Khan Kambu, 191n.
Shah Begum, wife of Malik Ahmad.
builds khwanqah, 106; establishes schools, 262.
Shahi Khan, see Zainul-Abidin.
Shah Ismail, Shah of Persia, 182n., 287.
Shahjahan, Mughal Emperor, 4, 180n., 266.
Shahjahanabad, 13.
Shahkulu, canal, 85.
Shah Mir, 2; made guardian of Prince Haidar, 41; helps Kota Rani against Turks, 42; ancestry and early life of, 43; and Kota Rani, 44-5; accession of, 45; character of, 46-7; 49n., 147; Shaikhul-Islam under, 199n.; cause of success of, 273; and question of succession, 278; coins of, 290.
Shah Mir dynasty, 1, 5, 7, 9, 96, 105; titles adopted by rulers of, 195; Wazirs under, 197-98; and Khamanchi, 203; 206, 211, 214; and Jizya, 215; and assignments, 217; 220; and agriculture, 249; and peasants, 250; and forced labour, 251; and Persian language, 255; influence of Persian on Sanskrit under, 258; and calligraphy, 265; achievements of, 273; causes of fall of, 276 sqq.; monetary system under, 289 sqq.
Shah Muhammad Shahabadi, 90.
Shah-nama (by Firdausi), 89.
Shah Nazar, and death of Mirza Haidar, 141.
Shah Nimatullah Farsi, teacher of Bulbul Shah, 39.
Shah Quil Mahram, Mughal commander, 175.
Shah Rukh, son of Timur, and Zainul-Abidin, 73; imprisons Muhammad Nur Bakhsh, 283.
Shabani Khan, Uzbek ruler, 125.
Shaikh Abdun-Nabi, and execution of Mirza Muqim, 156.
Shaikh Ahmad Alaud-Daula Samnani, 58.
Shaikha Khokar, 61n.
Shaikh Ali Beg, Mughal commander, invasion of Kashmir by, 120 sqq.
Shaikh Daniyal, son of Mir Shamsud-Din, executed by Mirza Haidar, 137; effect of the execution of, 138; mausoleum of, 147.
Shaikh Daulet Bakhtiyar, Mughal commander, 189.
Shaikh Hasan, 183.
Shaikh Hasan Ganai, a noted scribe, 256.
Shaikh Hamza Makhdum, 12, 161, 222n.; preachings of, 225; and proselytisation, 235, 256; bi-lingual will of, 258.
Shaikh Ismail Kubravi, 90.
Shaikh Ruknud-Din Alaud-Daula, teacher of Ali Hamadani, 55.
Shaikh Salarud-Din, father of Nurud-Din, 224.
Shaikh Sharafud-Din Mahmud, teacher of Ali Hamadani, 55.
Shaikh Shamasud-Din, Mir, appointed by Sikandar 65; and Zainul-Abidin, 81, 83; 99; and Sultans, 195; and coronation ceremony, 240; 261.
Shaikh Umar, and Nurbakhshiya, 137.
Shaikh Yaqub Sarfi, and Ali Shah, 161; returns to Yusuf Shah with Prince Haidar, 172; as guide to Bhagwan Das, 173; and Mughals, 184; 185; taken prisoner, 186; life and works of, 256-57.
Shalimar, garden, 249.
Shams Chak, son of Daulat Chak, 162; imprisoned, 169; escapes and joins Habib Khan, 170; surrenders and pardoned, 181; revolts against Yaqub Shah, defeated and imprisoned, 183; escapes and declares himself Sultan, 186; defeated by Mughals, 187, 189; reconciled to Yaqub Shah and defeats Mughals, 190; defeated by Mughals; surrenders and sent to Akbar, 191-92.
Shams Chak, 110; origin and career of, 111; and Muhammad Shah, 112; assassination of, 113; 287.
Shams Chak Kopwara, captured and blinded by Yusuf Shah, 169.
Shams Duni, conspires to overthrow Husain Shah, 154; rebels against Ali Shah, 159; 167; and Muhammad Bat, 170; defeated by Mughals, 189.
Shams Ganai, Yaqub Shah's commander, 186.
Shams Raina, revolts against Ghazi Shah, 148; joins Abul-Maali, 149; executed by Ghazi Shah, 150.
Shamsud-Din I, see Shah Mir.
Shamsud-Din II, accession of, 129; death of, 130; coins of, 286 sqq.
Shamsud-Din, Mir, 11, 12; arrives in Kashmir, 112; retires to Skardu, 113; but returns, 114; and fall of Fath Shah, 117n.; tomb of, destroyed by Mirza Haidar, 137; 138; and Jizya, 215; compared with Nurud-Din, 224; and proselytisation, 235; and Hindus, 236; life and work of, 285 sqq.
Shanka Chak, Ghazi Shah's brother, revolts, 149, 154; 165.
Shanka Raina, and Magres, 115-16; 117; imprisoned, 118.
Shanki Chadura, submits to Qasim Khan, 185.
Sharafud-Din Ali Yazdi, author of Zafar-nama, 10; on conveyance in Kashmir, 243; on number of villages, 252.
Sharia, and Qutbud-Din, 57; enforced by Sikandar, 64; and Sultans, 194-95; and Shaihkul-Islam, 199; and punishments, 201; and taxation, 213, 215-16; and Ulama, 221; 232; ignored by Sultans, 274; and Nurbakhshivas, 284.
Shaura, 64.
Shel, gold image of Buddha at, 72.
Sher, foster-brother of Zainul-Abidin, 83.
Sher Afgan, 8.
Sher Ali Bat, 170.
Sher Khan Magre, 189.
Sher Shah, 11, 131, 132; and Kail Chak, 133; tiles on tomb of, 267; 280.
Shihabnur, now Shihampur, founded by Shihabud-Din, 52.
Shihabud-Din, Sultan, 5, 20n.; campaigns of, 49-50; and Firuz Shah, 50, 51; character of, 51-2; religious policy of, 52; and his sons, 53; 54; 71. 72. 80. 97; administration under, 198; extent of kingdom of, 276; Lohara conquered by, 209; hunts lions, 231; exacts corvée, 251; 254; and Persian language, 255; education under, 260; conquests of, 275-76; and question of succession, 278.
Shihabud-Din Ghuri, Sultan, 30.
Shihabud-Dinnur, founded by Shihabud-Din, now Shadipur, 52.
Shihampur, a quarter of Srinagar, see Shihabpur.
Shilim, banned by Mirza Haldar, 143.
Shikayut Shiqtar, Shirashamak, Shiites, persecuted by Mirza Sikandar, son of Fath Shah. invades Siddhadesa, Shurapura, Shupiyan, Shiraz, Sidau, village, Sidau Pass, Sikandar Lodi, aids Muhammad Shah, Siraj, Sultan, Sinning, Sintlh, Sikandar Simhadeva, ~imha, 284; 286; 275; also Kashmir but defeated, Abidin's contribution to school at, Muhammad Hamadani, imprisonment and death of, 69; 72; 64, 65, 66n.; Yaqub Sarfi studied at, 256; Zainul-Abidin's contribution to school at, 261.

Sidau Pass, 23.
Sidau village, 167.
Siddahesa, 23.
Siddhapattha, see Siddahaseta.
Sikandar Lodi, aids Muhammad Shah, 117; 280, 297.
Sikandar, son of Fath Shah, invades Kashmir but defeated, 119; imprisonment and death of, 120.
Sikandar, Sultan, 2, 6, 10, 56; birth and name of, 58; suppresses Rai Magre's rebellion, 59; and Timur, 59, 60; character of, 61-2; and Muhammad Hamadani, 63, 64n.; buildings of, 64; and non-Muslims, 64-5; and temples, 65, 66n.; 67, 71; 72; depreciation of gold and silver under, 83; 87. 91 sqq.; administrative of, 194, 198; and Shaikhul-Islam, 199; and Qazi, 200; and Muhtasib, 204; and Zakat, 215; abolishes Raja and Tungha, 216; Baihaqi Sayvds come in time of, 220; bans intoxicants, 225; 226, 228; and proselytisation, 235; and education, 261; 267, 269, 275, 286n., 290.
Sikandar Mirza, son of Sultan Said, goes with Mirza Haidar to conquer Ladakh, 125; Muhammad Shah's daughter married to, 129; 130.
Sikandarpur, founded by Sikandar, now Nauhatta, 63, 96, 99, 114.
Sikandar Tupchil, Humayun's officer, 132.
Simha, court astrologer of Zainul-Abidin, 88.
Simhadeva, Raja of Kashmir, 32.
Sindh, 27, 28, 220.
Sindh, river, 20.
Singpur, 160.
Sinning, Kashmir merchants at, 244-45.
Sir, madrasa at, 90.
Siraj, 48.
Sirdar, head of pargana, 207.
Shirhamak, see Shihabud-Din.
Shiraz, town, 69; 72; 64, 59; 60; 117; 280, 297.
Shivadhava, Raj of Kashmir, 32.
Shurapura, see Hirapur.
Skardu, route from Kashmir to, 26; Mir Shamsud-Din retires to, 112; but returns to Srinagar from, 113; Shaikh Daniyal in, 137.
Smitb, Vincent, on surrender of Yaqub and on Bhagwan Das's attempt at suicide, 178n.
Sobha Devi, queen of Sikandar, 61.
Solghan, Mir Shamsud-Din born near, 285.
Sonamarg, 35n., 180.
Sonawar, a quarter of Srinagar, 170.
Sopur, old Suyyapura, 20, 22; destroyed by Adham, 77; 94; Zainul-Abidin's palace at, 95; 100; buildings at, 64, 105; bridges at, 47, 95; 112, 115, 130, 149, 157, 159. 167; bridge of, destroyed, 183; Shams Chak at, 187; 189; record office at, 205; as headquarter of Kamraj, 206.
Sosanwar, hill, 21.
Sovereignty, symbols of, 195-97.
Sribhatta, merchant, 226.
Sri Jain, monastery, 87.
Srinagar, 5, 9, 19-21; distance of Jammu from, 23; 35n.; plundered by Tukka, 40; Kota Rani transfers her capital from, 44; Udayanadeva returns to, 42, 48, 50, 51n.; flood in, 52, 53, 54; Ali Hamadani arrives at, 56; 59; Timur's envoys proceed to, 60; Id-Gah built by Sikandar at, 64; 67, 69, 74 sqq.; bridge built at, 82; 85n., 86; free supply of food at, 87; 92; and Zainul-Abidin, 94; Brahmins harass Muslims of, 97; 98; bridge built by Haidar Shah at, 99; 102, 104; khangah built by Malik Ahmad at, 105; Parasarum escapes to, 107; 109, 114, 118; Habib Khan's body brought to, 119; 120; Mughal conquest of, 123; 130. 139. 140; Mirza Haidar's family brought to, 142; Mirza Haidar's building's at, 143; 145, 146, 149, 150n.; minaret of skulls built at, 151; Mirza Muqm arrives at, 156; 157, 159, 160, 167; occupied by Yusuf Shah, 168; 170; Akbar's envoys in, 171 sqq.; 176, 182, 183, 185n.; occupied by Qasim Khan,
Sripancami, festival. Husain Shah
Srivara, W~ti-Kusuncani, Stein. M.A., on Jonaraja and Srivara, Bubhasitavali
Sufis
Sufi
Suhabhatta.
Suhadeva,
Suhrawnrdlya
Suka, author of Rn
Sulaiman, in the museum of, 258; university of, 226; beef market in, 230; 232; markets and streets of, 242-43; 244; a great entrepot, 247; and floods, 251; called Shahr-i-Kashmir, 252; 253; bi-lingual inscriptions on the graves at, 257; bi-lingual will in the museum of, 258; university at, 260; buildings at, 266 sqq.; tiles in museum of, 267n.; 276, 281, 286, 287.
Sripancami, festival. Husain Shah participates in, 158; and Sultans, 240.
Srivara, 1; estimate of work of, 3: 7, 23; and Zainul-Abidin, 79, 80, 91; on Ali Shah's death, 70; and tax on Hindus. 87; translates Yusuf u Zulaikha into Sanskrit, 90; on Zainul-Abidin's physical appearance and character, 80; on Zainul-Abidin's inventiveness 93; on Haidar Shah, 98; on guardians of Hasan Shah's sons, 102n.; on use of cannon and gunpowder, 211; on Muslim influence, 238; on level of culture in Kashmir, 253; works of, 257; Persian and Arabic words used by, 258; on shawls, 263; as head of music department, 271; on chronology of Sultans, 295-96.
Stein, M.A., on Jonaraja and Srivara, 2, 3; on destruction of temples, 60; on Navaks, 202n.; on spread of Islam, 235; on a bi-lingual deed of sale, 258.
Suli-Kusumanjali, (by Jagaddhar Bhat), 257.
Subhasitavali (by Srivara), 257.
Sufi Daud, executed by Mirza Haidar, 157.
Sufis and Sikandar, 62; and Zainul-Abidin, 81; and Mirza Haidar, 144, 147; and Ali Shah 161; 222 sqq.; and spread of Islam, 235 sqq.; Influence of, on Lalla Ded, 239; 241.
Suhabhatta, see Saifud-Din.
Suhadeva, Raja of Kashmir, 8, 30; character of, 32-3; and Zulfiu. 34; defeated and escapes to Kishwar, 35; defeated by Rinchana, 38; 39. 40n., 41; and Shah Mir, 43; 46, 147, 220.
Suhrawardiya Order. 39, 223, 241.
Suka, author of Rajatarangini, review of the work of, 3. 4; on death of Shankar Raina, 118n.; on death of Haidar Chak, 188n.; 257; foreign words used by, 258; 296.
Sulaiman, Umayyad Caliph, 28.

Sultan Ahmad Khan, Khan of Mughalistan, 125.
Sultan Said Khan, and Mirza Haidar, 125-26; and Muhammad Shah, 129; death of, 130.
Sumbal, Shah Mir buried in, 47.
Sunder Devi, Rajauri princess, sent to Zainul-Abidin, 82.
Sundermaji, see Sunder Devi.
Sunder Sena, Raja of Rajauri, and Zainul-Abidin, 82.
Sunnis, and Ghazi Shah, 153-54; alienated from Yaqub Shah. 183-84; 275; relations of, with Shiites, 279; persecution of, 280; and Nur-bakhshiyas, 284, 287, 288.
Sura Lolaka, minister of Shihabad-Din, 53; defeated and killed, 54.
Sura Rani, queen of Qutbud-Din, 7, 54, 56; character of, 59; 234.
Suryamati, queen of Samgramaraja, 31.
Sussala, Raja of Kashmir, 31, 234.
Sutlej, river, 50, 275.
Suyya, Avantivarman's minister, 20n. Suvvapura, see Sophur.
Swat, Udayanadeva escapes to, 41; Shah Mir descended from rulers of, 43; occupied by Shihabad-Din, 49.
Tabaqat-i-Akbari (by Nizamud-Din), 9, 10; on Ghazi Chak's relations with Mirza Haidar, 137n.; on date of Mirza Haidar's death, 140n.; on manner of his death, 141; on Akbar's treaty with Yusuf Shah, 178n.; 295, 297.
Tahir, father of Shah Mir, 43.
Tair, Mongol chief, invades Kashmir, 34.
Tajiks, 34.
Taji Magre, 67.
Taj Khutun, queen of Zainul-Abidin, 79, 81, 261.
Takht-i-Sulaiman, 34.
Takhhti-Sulaiman, 123n., 124; battle at the foot of, 190.
Tamgha, abolished by Sikandar, 62; abolished by Mughals, 217.
Tapar, old Pratapapura, battle at, 122.
Taqlud-Din Dustl, teacher of Ali Hamadani, 55.
Tarikhi-Daudi, 11; on Ghazi Chak's relations with Mirza Haidar, 137n.
Tarikhi-Firishta (by Muhammad Qasim "Firishta"), 9, 295.
Tarikhi-Hadi, see Khawariqul-Sali-kin.
Tarikhi-Hasan, (by Pir Hasan Shah), 13; on desecration of Shamsud-Din's tomb, 137n.; on death of Musa Raina, 114.
Tarikhi-Kabir, (by Muhnud-Din
Miskin), 14; on appointment of Shiakul-Islam, 199n.
Tarikh-i-Khan-Jahani (by Khwaja Nigmatullah Harawi), 11.
Tarikh-i-Mubarak Shahi (by Yahya Sirhindhi), 11; on date of Zainul-Abidin's accession, 296.
Tarikh-i-Qazi Hamid, 11n.
Tarikh-i-Rajgan-i-Jammu, see Rajdarshani.
Tarikh-i-Rajgan-i-Rajaur, (by Mirza Zafarullah Khan), 14; on Zainul-Abidin's marriage with Rajauri princess, 82n.
Tarikh-a-Qazi Hamid, In.
Tarakh-i-Rajgm-i-Jajmmu, see Rajdarshani.
Tarikh-i-Rajgan-i-Rajaur, (by Mirza Zafarullah Khan), 14; on Zainul-Abidin's marriage with Rajauri princess, 82n.
Talikh-i-Rashadi (by Mirza Haidar), review of, 10-11; 140n., 143.
Tashgam, 26n.
Tashqand, 123.
Tashrzh bit-Taswir, (by Mansur b. Muhammad), 89.
Tatakuti Peak, 18.
Tatar Khan, Buhlul Lodi's governor of Punjab, attempts to invade Kashmir, 102; 106; aids Bhaiq Sayyids, 108.
Tazi Bat, defeats Bahram Khan, 100; and Malik Ahmad, 101; plunders Sialkot, 102; fall of, 103.
Tawa, Ali Shah defeated at, 69; Kaji's death at, 135; 151; 160; Yusuf Shah retires to, 164-65; 167; 175n.
Tibet, 13; route from Kashmir to, 22, 25, 27; Zulju from, 33; Bulbul Shah from, 39; Ali Hamadani returns to, 55-6; MSS. purchased from, 91, 92, 199n.; horses imported from, 210; influence of, 218, 254; Sufi orders introduced from, 223; 227-28, 235; Kashmir's trade with, 244 sqq.; 253, 260; weavers in Kashmir from, 262-63; calligraphists from, 265; contribution to Kashmir's music by, 271.
Turks, 32 sqq., 97, 120; invade Kashmir, 41-2; influence of, 194, 238; enter Kashmir, 62, 254; 255.
Tutta, merchant, 226.
Uccala, Raja of Kashmir, 31.
Udakpati, Raja of Nagarlot, cleaved by Shihabud-Din, 50; meets Shihabud-Din, 51.
Udayasri, minister of Shihabud-Din, 52, 53; executed by Qutbud-Din, 54; 198.
Ujjalv, C. I. E., on Kashmir art, 264.
Ulfat, and Zainul-Abidin, and Shah Mir, 43-4; and Jamshed, 47.
Udayasri, minister of Shihabud-Din, 52, 53; executed by Qutbud-Din, 54; 198.
Ujfalvy, CH.-E. De, on Kashmir art, 264.
Ujah Timur Tufuqdar, sent by Timur to Sikandar, 60.
Ulama, and Zainul-Abidin, 81; 221; and Husain Shah, 158; dress of, 228; 279.
Umayyads, 27.
Urdil, Turkish invader, 41n.
Uji, route from Kashmir to, 25; battle at, 70.
Ushkur, 266.
Utpalapura, see Kakapur.
Uzbek, 125, 173.
Vachi, 64.
Vahator; battle at, 134; 140.
Vakatanyas, Jonaraja’s name for Ladakhis, 37.
Vajraditya, Raja of Kashmir, introduces Muslim practices, 234.
Vakhari, 245.
Vakhan.
Valmiki, 91.
Varadaraja, author of Sivasutra-Varttika, 257.
Vakhan.
Vernag, spring, 21.
Vethnar, lake, 154.
Vihi, pargana, 145, 180.
Vijay, Raja of Kashmir, 106n.
Vijayeshvara, now Bijbehara, 106n.
Visctyrrs, parganas, 207.
Viehoka, 106n.
Vith-trawah, festival, Sultans participate in, 240.
Volur, lake, and Jehlam, 20-1; characteristics of, 21; 82; Zainul-Abidin and island in, 94; 115n., 127.
Vular, pargana, 188, 189, 192.
Vyalaraja, prime minister of Rinchana, 40.
Yasun, 19n.
Yasin Afghan, sent by Islam Shah to Mirza Haidar, 137.
Yasur, Prince, 33.
Yavanas, 238.
Yech, pargana, see Ikshika.
Yemen, 224n.
Yezdigird, Sassanian ruler of Persia, 248n.
Yodhabatta, author of Jainaparakasa, 89; musician, 93; 259.
Yusuf, Prince, son of Hasan Shah, 101n., 102n.
Yusuf Aindar, 6; and Qazi Habib; executed, 155; execution of, and Ulama, 156; 158, 195, 280.
Yusuf Chak, son of Regi Chak, Kamraj given by Idi Raina to, 145; attacks Daulat Chak but defeated, 146; conspires against Ghazi Shah, 148; and Abul-Maali, 149; 153.
Yusuf Dar, 166.
Yusuf Khan, son of Ali Khan Chak, defeated and imprisoned, but escapes, 168-69; seized and limbs cut off, 170.
Yadgar Husain, Mughal officer, occupies Srinagar, 187.
Yahya b. Ahmad Sirhindhi, author of Tarikh-i-Mubarak Shahi, 11.
Yaqub Mirza, sent by Husain Shah to Akbar, 156.
Yaqub Sarfi, see Shaikh Yaqub Sarfi.
Yaqub Shah, 7, 8, 13, 23n.; Sankar Devi married to, 161; 164; rebels but reconciled to his father, 170; defeats Haidar Chak, 171; sent to Akbar, 172; 173; escapes from Mughal camp to Srinagar, 174; 175-76; enthroned, 177; 178; tomb of, 180n.; 181n.; character of, 182; suppresses Shams Chak, 183; executes Qazi Musa, 184; and Mughal invasion; withdraws to Kishtwar, 185; 186; returns and attacks Srinagar, but repulsed, 187-88; again retires to Kishtwar, but returns, and harasses Mughals, 189-90; goes to Kishtwar but returns, 191; surrenders and sent to Akbar, 192; death of, 193; title adopted by, 196; imposes Jizya, 215; decline of cultivation under, 250; 256, 275; causes of failure of, 277, 279, 281; intolerance of, 280. 
Yarqand, Kashmir’s trade with, 244 sqq.
against Mughals, 176; escapes to Mughal camp, 177; treaty with, 178; character of, 179; death of, 180; tomb of, 180n., 181n.; 182, 184, 188, 192; jagir of, given to Yaqub, 193; title adopted by, 196; and crown and throne, 197; use of muskets by, 212; Jizya and taxes abolished by, 215-16; 227; poets in court of, 256; 260; and music, 271; 277, 279-81; coins of, 291 sqq.

Yusuf Khan Rizvi, deputed by Akbar to help Yusuf Shah, 166; sent to invade Kashmir, 190; defeats Kashmiris, 191; Yaqub Shah surrenders to, 192.

Yusuf u Zulaikha (by Jami), translated into Sanskrit, 3, 90.

Zafar-name (by Sharafud-Din Ali Yazdi), 10; on bridges in Kashmir, 243; on fruits in Kashmir, 250n.; on population and number of villages, 252.

Zainadab, village, founded by Zainul-Abidin, 94n.

Zaina Danaib, village, founded by Zainul-Abidin, 94n.

Zainagir, founded by Zainul-Abidin, 77, 85; palace at, 94; Bahram escapes to, 100; rent of land in pargana of, 214; college at, 261.

Zaina Kadal, bridge, built by Zainul-Abidin, 94.

Zainakot, founded by Zainul-Abidin, 94; battle at, 113.

Zainalank, island, reclaimed by Zainul-Abidin, 94-5.

Zainapur, founded by Zainul-Abidin, 85; land reclaimed at, 86; 94, 100; Husain Shah's death at, 158; college at, 262.

Zainatilak, town, founded by Zainul-Abidin, 76

Zaln Khan, 177, 178n.

Zainud-Din, Mutamad, sent by Timur to Sikandar, 60.

Zainul-Abidin. Sultan, 1, 2, 3, 6, 7, 46; and Timur, 60n.; 61; and Hamsabhatta, 68; and Ali Shah, 69-70; conquests of, 71-2; foreign relations of, 72-3; revolts against, 74 sqq.; and Bahram, 78, 100; last days of, 79; character of, 80 sqq.; canals made by, 84-5; agriculture under, 86; and non-Muslims, 86-8, 236; and learned men, 88-90; education under, 90, 261; library of, 91; arts and crafts under, 91-3, 263-64; and music, 93, 232, 271-72; buildings and towns of, 94-5; and Shah Mir dynasty, 96, 97, 105, 117, 127, 142, and Mirza Haidar, 143; titles of, 195; and Wazir, 197; and Shams, 201; espionage system under, 203; record offices under, 205; 206, 207; Lohara occupied by, 209; and use of gunpowder and cannon, 83, 211; rent and taxes under, 214, 216-17; and Jizya, 215, 226; and wine, 231; industries under, 92, 247-48; and Persian language, 255; Kashmiri works under, 259; and silk and shawl industry, 93, 262-63 minor arts introduced by, 263-64; painting and calligraphy under, 265; tomb of mother of, 266; 276, 277; and question of succession, 278; 290; coins of, 291 sqq.; chronology of, 295-96.

Zakat, and Yusuf Shah, 179; 213; and Sultans, 215-16.

Zakhira'ul-Muluk (by Ali Hammadani), 57, 58.

Zulja, see Zulju.

Zamakhshari, 285.

Zaldakar, 111, 114, 118, 148, 163, 164, 183, 190.

Zirak Bat, 109.

Zoji-La Pass, 18, 22; importance of, 25; Rinchana enters Kashmir through, 37; Zainul-Abidin crosses the, 71; Mirza Haidar enters through, 126: 244.

Zulju, origin of, 33; and Suhadeva, 34; ravages of Kashmir by, 35; death of, 36; and Rinchana, 37; 41-3, 48, 49, 92, 248.

Zulqadar Khan, see Zulju.
ERRATA AND ADDENDA

Page 10, line 34. For Kāshgar read Kāshghar, and thus elsewhere.

" 11, note 1. For 313 sqq. read 53.

" 33, note 8. For Ghiyāṣu’l-Dīn read Khwāndamīr.

" 61, line 21. For Bahrām read Māhūd.

" 67, line 12. For Māhūd read Muḥammad.

" 67, note 1. For Trebeck read Moorcroft.

" 84, note 10. For south-east of Kōtlī read south-east extremity of the Shāhābād Valley.

" 87, line 13. For Šīriyabhaṭṭa read Šīriyabhaṭṭa, and thus elsewhere.

" 111, line 9. Add: Kopwārā is situated 55 miles north-west of Srinagar.


" 120, line 14. For Tājī read Tāzī, and thus elsewhere.

" 122, line 16. For Naushahra read Naushahr.

" 125, note 3. For Zū’l-Hiḍja read Zū’l-Ḥiḍja.

" 160, line 16. For Singapur read Singapur.

" 168, line 28. For Ḥusain Chak read Ḥasan Chak.

" 189, line 5. For Ḥasan read Ḥusain.

" 189, line 26. For Mīrzā read Mīrzāda, and thus elsewhere.

" 213, line 17. Add: There was one fort in Naushahr (Srinagar), but it was not strong.

" 220, line 20. For Zainu’l-Ābidin read Sikandar.

" 224, line 14. For Charār read Chrār.

" 225, line 15. For Sayyid ʻAlī read Sayyid Muḥammad.

" 228, note 11. For les Arabs read les Arabes.

" 229, note 8. For Ferraud read Ferrand.

" 244, note 7. For Bernir read Bernier.

" 284, note 5. Transfer note 5 to page 285 as note 7.

" 285, note 7. Transfer note 7 to page 284 as note 5.

" 292, line 17. For Ibrāhīm Shāh I and Ibrāhīm Shāh II read Ibrāhīm Shāh (i) and Ibrāhīm Shāh (ii).

" 295, title For Genealogy read Genealogy.